

GUIDE TO THE SOUTH SLAVONIC LANGUAGES

(Guide To The Slavonic Languages,
Third Edition, Revised And Expanded, Part 1)

by

R. G. A. de Bray

Emeritus Professor of Russian,
The Australian National
University, Canberra

1980

Slavica Publishers, Inc.

For a list of some other books from Slavica, see the last pages of this book. For a complete catalog with prices and ordering information, write to:

Slavica Publishers, Inc.
P.O. Box 14388
Columbus, Ohio 43214

Published with the financial assistance of the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization (UNESCO). The opinions expressed in this book are those of the author, and not necessarily those of either the publisher or UNESCO.

ISBN: 0-89357-060-5.

Copyright © 1951 by J. M. Dent & Sons Ltd., London; revisions copyright © 1969 and 1980 by R. G. A. de Bray. All rights reserved.

426
gk

Printed in the United States of America.

To the memory of
Robert Auty
Colleague, counsellor,
and friend

CONTENTS

PUBLISHER'S NOTE.....	7
PREFACE.....	9
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS USED.....	13

INTRODUCTION

THE PURPOSE OF THIS BOOK.....	15
THE PLAN AND ARRANGEMENT OF THIS BOOK.....	16
THE METHOD OF USING THIS BOOK.....	18
THE DISTRIBUTION OF THE SLAVONIC LANGUAGES.....	20
CHARACTERISTICS OF THE SLAVONIC LANGUAGES.....	22
THE IMPORTANCE OF OLD SLAVONIC.....	23

BIBLIOGRAPHY

OLD SLAVONIC.....	25
BULGARIAN.....	27
MACEDONIAN.....	28
SERBOCROATIAN.....	29
SLOVENIAN.....	31
THE SLAVONIC GROUP.....	33

Section I. OLD SLAVONIC (OLD BULGARIAN)

INTRODUCTION.....	35
ALPHABET.....	36
INDO-EUROPEAN RELATIONSHIP.....	39
FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF OLD SLAVONIC.....	40
MORPHOLOGY.....	44

Declensions of—

nouns.....	44
indefinite adjectives and participles.....	47
active participles.....	49
comparative adjectives and their formation.....	50
numerals.....	52
pronouns.....	53
definite adjectives.....	56
definite comparative adjectives.....	57
the definite form of participles.....	58
personal pronouns.....	59
Adverbs.....	60
Conjunctions.....	60
Prepositions.....	61
Conjugation of Verbs.....	61
Voices and tenses.....	61
Classification.....	62
Personal endings.....	63
Participles, Verbal Nouns.....	64
Simple tenses, examples.....	65

Section 3.
MACEDONIAN

INTRODUCTION.....	137
ALPHABET.....	143
PRONUNCIATION.....	144
DIALECTS.....	153
VOWEL GRADATION AND VOWEL LENGTHENING.....	155
SLAVONIC CHARACTERISTICS.....	155
FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF MACEDONIAN.....	160
FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF MACEDONIAN AND BULGARIAN.....	162
FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF MACEDONIAN AND SERBOCROATIAN.....	163
FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF ALL SOUTH SLAV LANGUAGES.....	163
OTHER FEATURES.....	164
MORPHOLOGY.....	164
Treatment of Nouns.....	164
The Articles.....	171
Adjectives.....	174
Adjectives (Comparison).....	175
Numerals.....	176
Pronouns.....	180
Adverbs.....	186
Conjunctions.....	192
Prepositions.....	194
Conjugation of Verbs.....	197
Voices and tenses.....	197
Present tense.....	199
Classification.....	200
Aorist.....	201
Imperfect.....	203
Imperative.....	204
Present Gerund.....	205
Participles.....	206
Verbal nouns.....	208
Compound tenses:	
Future.....	209
Reported Future.....	209
Compound Past.....	210
Past Definite (Perfect).....	212
Pluperfect.....	212
Conditional.....	213
Past Conditional.....	214
Conjugation, examples: See separate tenses	
Irregular and noteworthy verbs.....	216
Verbs of going and conveying.....	218
Aspects.....	220
WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS.....	221
TEXTS.....	223

CONTENTS

Section 2.
BULGARIAN

Irregular verbs.....	70
Compound tenses.....	71
Aspects.....	72
TEXTS.....	73
INTRODUCTION.....	77
NOTE ON THE LATEST SPELLING REFORMS.....	80
ALPHABET.....	81
PRONUNCIATION.....	82
DIALECTS.....	87
VOWEL GRADATION AND VOWEL LENGTHENING.....	89
SLAVONIC CHARACTERISTICS.....	89
FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF BULGARIAN.....	92
MORPHOLOGY.....	95
Treatment of Nouns.....	96
Definite Article.....	101
Adjectives.....	102
Numerals.....	104
Pronouns.....	106
Adverbs.....	109
Conjunctions.....	110
Prepositions.....	110
Conjugation of Verbs.....	113
Voices and tenses.....	113
Classification.....	115
Present tense.....	116
Aorist.....	116
Imperfect.....	117
Imperative.....	118
Infinitive.....	119
Gerund and Participles.....	119
Compound tenses:	
Future.....	122
Future of Renarration.....	122
Future Perfect.....	122
Compound Past (Perfect).....	123
Compound Past in Renarration.....	124
Pluperfects.....	124
Pluperfects of Renarration.....	124
Conditional.....	124
Past Conditional.....	124
Past Conditional of Renarration.....	125
Conjugation, examples: See separate tenses	
Irregular verbs.....	125
Verbs of going and conveying.....	127
Aspects.....	128
WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS.....	129
TEXTS.....	132

CONTENTS Section 4. SERBOCROATIAN

INTRODUCTION.....	233
ALPHABETS (CYRILLIC AND LATIN).....	237
ACCENTUATION.....	238
ACCENTS.....	240
ACCENTS.....	242
ACCENTS.....	243
ACCENTS.....	244
ACCENTS.....	246
ACCENTS.....	250
Declensions of—	
nouns.....	253
numerals.....	260
pronouns.....	263
personal pronouns.....	269
adjectives.....	269
Adjectives (Comparison).....	273
Adverbs.....	276
Conjunctions.....	279
Prepositions.....	280
Conjugation of Verbs.....	282
Voices and tenses.....	282
Classification.....	283
Tense and mood endings and formation.....	284
Conjugation, examples of the simple tenses.....	289
Irregular verbs.....	290
Verbs of going and conveying.....	294
Aspects.....	296
WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS.....	296
TEXTS.....	299

Section 5. SLOVENIAN

INTRODUCTION.....	309
ALPHABET.....	316
STEM OF ACCENTUATION.....	318
ACCENTUATION.....	319
ACCENTS.....	326
COMPARISON OF SLOVENIAN AND SERBOCROATIAN ACCENTS.....	328
ACCENTS.....	330
ACCENTS.....	331
ACCENTS.....	331
ACCENTS.....	334
ACCENTS.....	338
Declensions of—	
nouns.....	339
indefinite adjectives (note on).....	348

CONTENTS

5

numerals.....	349
pronouns.....	352
adjectives.....	359
Adjectives (Comparison).....	362
Adverbs.....	365
Conjunctions.....	369
Prepositions.....	370
Conjugation of Verbs.....	373
Voices and tenses.....	373
Classification.....	376
Tense and mood endings and formation.....	378
Infinitive, Supine.....	380
Gerunds and Participles.....	380
Verbal Nouns.....	382
Conjugation, examples.....	382
Irregular verbs.....	387
Verbs of going and conveying.....	390
Aspects.....	391
WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS.....	392
TEXTS.....	395

PUBLISHER'S NOTE

Slavica is very pleased to be able to make available this Third, revised and expanded edition of Professor de Bray's work, which has been a standard reference for nearly thirty years. Eight of the twelve sections have been substantially revised for this edition, and considerable new material has been included.

In order to make the work even more useful, the author has recorded native speakers reading the texts at the end of each section. These recordings are available on cassettes or open-reel tapes from the publisher. For information and prices, please write directly to Slavica at P.O. Box 14388, Columbus, Ohio 43214.

Another innovation in the Third Edition is that the book has been split into three more manageable parts, each of which can be used individually, instead of a single book of over 1100 pages. One part is devoted to the South Slavic languages, a second to the West Slavic languages, and the third to the East Slavic languages. Since the parts are sold separately, students taking such commonly-taught courses as "Introduction to the South (West, East) Slavic Languages" will be able to use the appropriate volume, without having to buy and carry around the entire work.

Because the academic recession of the 1970's has so strongly depressed the market for scholarly books, it has been necessary to set this edition in more economical cold type, instead of the more elegant hot type with justified right margins which was used in the previous two editions. Slavica is grateful to UNESCO for a subvention which has met part of the costs of resetting the book. We are even more grateful to the typists who have done such a good job of coping with very difficult material. Eleanor B. Sapp typed the sections on Czech, Lusatian, Polish, and Slovenian. Karen L. Black typed the sections on Belorussian, Serbo-Croatian, Ukrainian, and much of the section on Old Church Slavonic. Debra E. Barco typed Bulgarian and Macedonian; Marcia Gauntt typed Slovak; David Birnbaum and Patricia Hansen typed Russian, and Joel and Monica Wilkinson typed part of the section on Old Church Slavonic. Dr. Black took overall responsibility for paginating, cross-referencing, checking corrections, and typing the Introduction and

PUBLISHER'S NOTE

ibliography. I wish to thank her here for a complex job well done. Don D. Smith was in charge of checking the corrections from the second proofs and of making various other small but important corrections and improvements in the final camera-ready copy. I am grateful to him for careful attention to tedious and time-consuming work.

We have tried hard, by a system of double and even triple checking, to eliminate misprints, but some are bound to creep into a work of this complexity. Readers who find misprints are asked to send a list of them to the publisher at P.O. Box 14388, Columbus, Ohio 43214. A year or two after the publication of this work, we will publish a list of misprints in our journal, *Folia Slavica*, so that both individuals and libraries may correct their copies.

Columbus, Ohio
May 17, 1980

Charles E. Gribble
President and Editor

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

It is my pleasant duty to acknowledge with gratitude here the many useful suggestions and the generous encouragement of Professor N. B. Jopson, M.A., Professor of Comparative Philology in the University of Cambridge, Professor W. J. Rose, M.A., Ph.D., former Professor of Polish Literature and History and Director of the School of Slavonic and East European Studies, University of London, and Dr. W. A. Morison, B.A., Ph.D., formerly Lecturer in Comparative Slavonic Philology in the same institution. My sincere thanks are also due to Professor Sir Ellis Minns, Litt.D., F.B.A., of Cambridge, for looking through the first part of this text and making many valuable suggestions, especially as regards presentation, and also for his initial encouragement, without which this book might never have been offered for publication.

I also here express my sincere thanks to my numerous colleagues and friends for their invaluable help and advice with regard to the separate sections of this book: Professor G. Nandriš, Ph.D., Mr. A. Oleyňk, Professor S. Świaniewicz, Professor F. Ramovš, Miss Boža Anžič, Mr. Krum Tošev, Mr. Kiro Petrovski, Mr. D. M. Pavlović, Mr. A. Poberaj, Miss V. Jukova, Mr. K. Naumov, Mr. V. de S. Pinto, Mr. M. Kusseff, Dr. J. Pietrkiewicz, Dr. O. Kolman, Dr. V. Polák, Mrs. E. V. de Bray, Miss T. Ruppeldtová, Dr. E. M. Cyžowa, Dr. J. Rjenč, Rev. Dr. Č. Sipovič, and many others.

It gives me pleasure also specially to mention the tireless help, encouragement, and expert criticism of my wife, who also performed the stupendous feat of typing the entire work in preparation for printing. Her knowledge of several Slavonic languages and her understanding and sympathy with the aims of my work enabled her to make many valuable suggestions in shaping the book.

I would also like to thank my publishers, Messrs. J. M. Dent and Sons, Ltd., for their endless patience and unfailing encouragement in the writing of this work over a period of seven years and under various difficult circumstances.

Finally I warmly thank my printers, Messrs. Stephen Austin and Sons, Ltd., for their untiring perseverance and unfailing courtesy during the printing of my technically extremely difficult text and for the production of such excellent work.

The brief bibliography also serves the purpose of expressing my acknowledgments of indebtedness to the authors of the many valuable works which I have consulted. The list is not intended to be an exhaustive bibliography, but rather a guide to the student who wishes to start delving deeper for treasures which I have only indicate. (The purpose, plan, and method of writing this book are explained in the following Introduction.)

Malfont St. Giles

. . iv. 1950

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION

In this edition the sections on Bulgarian, Czech and Polish have been corrected, revised and slightly expanded, where necessary. The section on Byelorussian has been fully revised and brought up to date accordance with the new authoritative grammar of Byelorussian published by the Institute of Linguistics of the Byelorussian Academy of Sciences in Minsk. Some misprints have also been corrected in the section on Slovak.

A selection of the most important new practical works published since 1951 have been added to the bibliography.

I would like to express my warmest thanks to Dr. Slav Polák, Professor Ivan Duridanov, and Professor R. Sudník and his colleagues in the Institute of Linguistics of the Byelorussian Academy of Sciences, Minsk, and to all my reviewers for their many helpful suggestions and criticisms.

W. Barnet

. . x. 1968

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION

For this edition the author has attempted to revise and bring up to date all the chapters that had been thoroughly revised for the second edition, namely the chapters on Old Slavonic, Russian, Ukrainian, Macedonian, Serbo-Croatian, Slovenian, Slovak and Lusatian (Sorbian). A number of new grammatical tables have been added, especially in the chapters on Old Slavonic and Serbo-Croatian, and the introduction of the chapter on Russian has been considerably expanded. In the chapter on Ukrainian a more modern ap-

proach to the subdivision of the dialects has been adopted on lines suggested by Professor F. T. Zhylykó of the Institute of Dialectology in Kiev. The chapters on Macedonian, Slovak and Lusatian in particular have been revised so as to comply with modern orthographical and grammatical norms. The chapters on Byelorussian, Bulgarian, Czech and Polish, which were revised for the second edition, have only been lightly revised, where necessary.

It is my pleasant duty to thank all my colleagues and friends who have helped me with advice, opinions and information in connection with my work for this edition, and in particular Professor R. I. Avanesov, Professor V. A. Artemov, Professor O. S. Akhmanova, Dr. E. A. Bryzgunova, Mr. B. K. Yoonidin, Dr. I. Miloslavsky, Professor A. M. Babkin, Professor L. R. Zinder, Mr. V. Swoboda, Professor F. T. Zhylykó (mentioned above), Professor M. Zhovtobriuch and other colleagues at the Institute of Linguistics of the Ukrainian Academy of Sciences in Kiev, Academic B. Koneski, Academic H. Polenakovič, the late Professor Krum Toshev, Professor T. Stamatovski, Professor T. Dimitrovski, Professor B. Korubin and other colleagues at the Krste Misirkov Institute of the Macedonian Language, Skopje, Professor B. Vidoeski, Miss Olga Spirkoska, Professor M. Stevanović, the late Dr. B. Nikolić, Professor P. Ivić, Professor M. Ivić, Dr. I. Grickat-Radulović, Dr. O. Banković-Todorović and other colleagues of the Serbo-Croatian Language Institute of the Serbian Academy of Sciences, Academic L. Jonke, Dr. B. Finka, Dr. V. Putanec, Dr. D. Alerić and other colleagues of the Language Institute of the Yugoslav Academy of Sciences and Arts, Zagreb, Professor J. Jurančič, Dr. J. Rigler, Professor A. Bajec, Professor M. Tomšič, Dr. I. Legiša, and other colleagues of the Slovenian Language Institute of the Slovenian Academy of Sciences and Arts, Ljubljana, Professor J. Toporišič, Professor J. Zor, Professor J. Ružička, Professor L. Dvornič, and Professor V. Blanár of the L'udevit štúr Institute of the Slovak Language of the Slovak Academy of Sciences, Miss Eva Ružičková, Dr. R. Pynsent, Dr. M. Corbridge-Patkaniovska, Professor H. Schuster-Šewc, Dr. L. Hajnec, Professor P. Nowotny, and Mr. J. Rjenč.

It is my pleasure also to acknowledge with sincere thanks the material help proffered by the Central Research Fund of the University of London and also by the Australian National University. Both generously helped me to make numerous visits to the Slavonic-speaking countries of Eastern Europe in pursuit of my research. I also express my gratitude to the then

rector of the School of Slavonic and East European studies, University of London, Dr. G. Bolsover, to the ce-Chancellor of the Australian National University Canberra, Professor D. A. Low, and to the Dean of the Faculty of Arts, Dr. W. S. Ramson, for granting me study leave for research purposes between 1968 and 1976, without which I would not have had the opportunity to collect the necessary material for the completion of this work. To all the abovementioned, to secretary of the Department of Slavonic Languages, the Australian National University, Ms. K. North, and my publishers for their interest and continual support, I offer my most heartfelt thanks.

Finally, I wish to express my deep gratitude to the Slav Studies project of UNESCO, under the able guidance of Professor V. Tiourine, for their subsidy which enabled the project of the publication of this work to be realized.

If this work will in any way help its readers the better to understand the Slavonic languages, literatures and culture, and the peoples who have created them, it will have achieved its modest purpose.

МОЛЮ ЖЕ ВСЕХЪ ПОЧИТАЮЩИХЪ. НЕ
МОЖЕТЕ КЛАТИ, НЪ ИСПРАВИТЕ ПОУЧИТЕ.
ТАКО БО И СЪЗДАНА ПАУЛА ГЛЕТЬ.
БЛАГО, А НЕ КЛАНЕТЕ. АМИНЪ.

Canberra
July 1977

ABBREVIATIONS

A., Acc.	Accusative	g., gend.	genders
Act.	Active	G., Gen.	Genitive
adj.	adjective	Germ.	German
adv.	adverb	Gk.	Greek
an.	animate		
Aor.	Aorist	I., Instr.	Instrumental
approx.	approximate	I.E.	Indo-European
arch.	archaic	Imper.,	Imperative
art.	article	Imperf.	Imperfect
aux.	auxiliary	impers.	impersonal
		Impfve.	Imperfective
b.	born	inan.	inanimate
B-r.,	Byelorussian	Ind.	Indicative
Bulg.	Bulgarian	indef.	indefinite
		Infin.	Infinitive
Card.	Cardinal	interrog.	interrogative
cf.	compare	intrans.	intransitive
Cl.	class	irreg.	irregular
coll.	collective	irr. vb.	irregular verb
colloq.	colloquial	Iter.	Iterative
Comp.	Comparative		
Comp. Past	Compound Past	L., Loc.	Locative
Cond.	Conditional	(= Prepositional)	
conj.	conjunction	Lat.	Latin
cons.	consonant	L.L.,	Lower Lusatian
Cr.	Croatian	Lower L.	literally
C.S.	Common Slav	lit.	literary language
Cyr.	Cyrillic	lit. lang.	
Cz.	Czech	Lus.	Lusatian
d.	died	m., masc.	masculine
D., Dat.	Dative	Mac.	Macedonian
Demonstr.	Demonstrative	m. impers.	masculine impersonal
def.	definite	m. pers.	masculine personal
dial.	dialect	Mod. Gk.	Modern Greek
Distrib.	Distributive		
du.	dual	n., neut.	neuter
		N., Nom.	Nominative
ed.	edition	neg.	negative
encl.	enclitic	num.	numeral
Eng.	English		
fam.	familiar	Obl.	Oblique (case)
f., fem.	feminine	Opt.	Optative
Fr.	French	Ord.	Ordinal
Freq.	Frequentative	O.S.	Old (Church) Slavonic
Fut.	Future	p.	page

person, personal palatal	vol.	volume
part., pers. part., partic.	Zogr.	Codex Zographensis
pass.	=	equals (translation)
past Ger.	>	into, becomes
perf.	<	from, derived from
pers. Pron.	><	as opposed to
five.	*	indicates a sup-
phon.		posed, deduced
phonetic script		form
pl.		
pl., plur.		
plup.		
poet.		
pol.		
pos.		
poss. Pron.		
p.p.A.		
p.p.P.		
prep.		
pres.		
pres. Ger.		
pron.		
R., Russ.		
reflex.		
reg.		
rel. Pron.		
sg., sg.		
sing.		
sb.		
ebcr.,		
Serbocr.		
Slk.		
Slv.		
Span.		
stem.		
subst.		
sup.		
trans.		
Ukr.		
J.L., Upper		
L.		
V., Voc.		
vb.		
V.N.		
person, personal palatal		
participle		
passive		
past Gerund		
perfect		
personal Pronoun		
perfective		
phonetic script		
plural		
pluperfect		
poetical		
Polish		
Positive		
Possessive Pronoun		
Past Participle		
Active		
Past Participle		
Passive		
preposition		
Present		
Present Gerund		
pronounce(d)		
Russian		
Reflexive		
regular		
Relative Pronoun		
singular		
Serbian		
Serbo-croatian		
Slovak		
Slovenian		
Spanish		
stem		
substantive		
Superlative		
transitive		
Ukrainian		
Upper Lusatian		
Vocative		
verb		
Verbal Noun		

INTRODUCTION

The Purpose of this Book

This book is an attempt to simplify the task of learning the Slav languages as a group for those who know one of them already. It was originally conceived during the 1939-1945 war with a more limited programme.¹ It has a scientific, philological basis. But as it is not intended exclusively for philologists and university students it is written on as nearly "popular" lines as such a subject permits, with a minimum of specialized terminology. It is intentionally an effort at popularization, as the writer believes that all those knowing any one Slavonic language can with profit widen their linguistic horizon by the relatively easy method of learning other Slavonic languages. Those knowing Russian should interest themselves in the Balkans and/or Central Europe, and *vice versa*. A consciousness would thus grow up of the unity of Europe and the continuity, both geographical and cultural, of Russia with Western Europe by way of the intervening central region of Eastern Europe.

It has been the writer's experience that many officials and workers in various fields and even teachers and examiners are given the task of dealing with material in the Slav languages as a group on the strength of their knowledge of only one of them. It is to help this class of language worker, among others, that this work aims. It should be equally useful to the student (whether academic or not) of any of the Slav languages (even if he is a beginner), when his curiosity drives him to "look over the fence" and find out something about the other Slavonic languages beyond.

It is thus also an introduction to the comparative study of the modern Slavonic languages. In these three volumes we give a summary of every language of the group, including Old Slavonic—a synthesis of a very extensive field of knowledge, difficult to master just because of the closeness of one Slav language to another. For every language we try to give a list of its most characteristic phonetic and morphological features, thus showing where the main differences and similarities should be expected and observed.

¹ See p. 18.

The Plan and Arrangement of this Book

For the sake of clarity and simplicity each language is treated in a separate section, giving the student a complete conspectus of a clearly defined subject—a single language. This is a new method of approach in dealing with comparative Slavonic grammar, calculated to suit the English beginner with only a modest experience in the Slavonic field. Many a student has found learned works from the Continent for-
bidding and confusing as an introduction to the comparative philology of the Slavonic languages, for these give as examples of the points they are illustrating rare and archaic words by the side of words, words from obscure dialects by the side of words from the modern literary and conversational languages. From such works it is impossible to get a clear, working knowledge of any separate modern Slavonic literary or spoken language, for that is not what such books intend to impart. But the English student is often of a practical turn of mind and his needs may rightly be satisfied.

This book starts with a brief summary of the phonetics and grammar of Old Slavonic (also called Old Bulgarian). A knowledge of this dead language casts a great deal of light on the kinship of the modern Slavonic languages, just as a knowledge of Latin helps one to understand the Romance group of languages as a whole. But it must be borne in mind that Old Slavonic is not a "parent language," but rather an "elder sister" language of the *South* Slav group, preserved exclusively in Orthodox ecclesiastical texts. (The South Slav group also includes modern Bulgarian, Macedonian, Serbo-Croatian, and Slovenian.) Old Slavonic is the nearest we have today to "Common Slav," the reconstructed and supposed parent language of all three groups. The East Slav group consists of Russian, Ukrainian, and Byelorussian, while the Western group comprises Czech, Slovak, Polish, and Lusatian or Wendish. Old Slavonic differs from "Common Slav" in a number of important features, e.g. in the combinations of vowels and liquids. But on the whole it is sufficiently close to Common Slav to be used by the student as the essential pivot for passing from one Slavonic language to another.

Each section is built on the same plan:—

1. a brief history of the development of the language together with references to its main writers;

INTRODUCTION

2. a more detailed section on its script and sounds (orthography and descriptive phonetics);
3. a summary of its characteristic features, presented in historical perspective, i.e. compared with Old Slavonic or Common Slav and/or the closely related modern Slav languages—perhaps the most important part of each section. This is either preceded or followed by:
4. a brief summary of the main dialects. These are dealt with mainly from the point of view of their contributions to the formation of the literary language. They are not regarded as "languages" in their own right and of equal status to the generally recognized literary languages. The existence of a literature in a given language and the acceptance and use of the language in a cultured society have been taken as the criteria for dividing off languages from dialects;
5. a concise summary of the "grammar" of the language (its morphology).
6. a special section, where necessary, on word order with enclitics. This subject is always a stumbling block in the mastery of an *active* knowledge of those languages which have enclitics (i.e. South and West Slav here);
7. a few pages of selected texts (without any commentary) as samples of the language as it is printed for the native (i.e. without stress accents) to serve as illustration and reading practice for the student.

Each section also adheres as rigidly as possible to the same scheme and order of explaining the details in the above parts, so as to render the comparison of these details between any two or more of these languages as easy as possible. A minimum of directly comparative tables is included, thereby leaving the student to compare *any* language he likes of the group with any other. This overcomes the difficulty of different people starting out from a knowledge of different single languages.

For Old Slavonic, Byelorussian, Slovenian, and Macedonian till late there have been no text-books at all in English, while for Ukrainian, Bulgarian, and Slovak until recently aids have been only inadequate. For these languages, therefore, fresh material is presented to the English reader; but at the same time it is put *in perspective* and connected with knowledge previously available. The section on the recently recognized Macedonian language is an entirely new

contribution to Slavonic studies in any West European language.

It will be seen, therefore, that this work also attempts to fill gaps in the knowledge of the English student, rather than cover familiar ground over again. For this reason less space is given to Russian (as for already extensively treated and studied) and Serbo-Croatian for which grammars, similar to those for Russian, have been available. But Czech and Polish, owing to their complex morphology and the different arrangement of their grammars in the better works, have been rather more fully dealt with here to show their close connection with the other Slavonic languages. Relatively more space, therefore, is devoted to them and the languages named above for which material has so far been unavailable or only inadequate in English.

Any other disparities of length under the separate headings in each section are due to (a) the not sufficiently known lack of adequate material in this country, especially on the more obscure languages of this group; (b) the fact that the original wartime conception of the book covered only Old Slavonic, Russian, Serbo-Croatian, and Bulgarian, and that the greatest possible brevity for these was required.¹ The sections on these last-named languages have subsequently been revised and brought up to date, but not expanded to the length of the other sections, for the reasons given above.

As this book is mainly concerned with showing the general principles of phonetic and grammatical structure of each language rather than with the study of individual words, a word index has been deliberately omitted. In compensation, the contents have been tabulated as fully as possible to facilitate prompt comparison between the sections. Thus, for example, it is very easy to compare the behaviour of the adjectives in all the languages given by simply looking under the heading "The (Declension of the) Adjectives" under "Morphology" in the Contents List for each language.

The Method of Using this Book

The student should be warned that, as this book attempts a synthesis of a very vast field, the material given is necessarily very condensed. The student, therefore, and especially the beginner, should not attempt to absorb too much at a time. If he bites off

¹ See also p. 15.

a little at a time, he will more easily avoid mental indigestion.

As a general word of advice one may say that a person knowing one Slavonic language and approaching another for the first time is well advised to assume in the first place that he *knows* the new language in *outline*; and then—far more important and difficult—carefully and continuously to note and study all differences of phonetics, form, grammar, syntax, and meaning. He must always bear in mind that he is dealing with a really different language with different sounds, intonations, rhythms, and a different historical and sociological background, and different neighbouring influences. In the Slavonic field these languages are different and yet very similar and closely interlinked by linguistic, social and spiritual ties. Their literary vocabularies differ more than those in the Romance languages, and the "speech habits" in the conversational languages of the various Slavs are also very distinct. But the basic vocabulary for the ordinary things of everyday life is strikingly similar—a phenomenon which reminds one of the broad similarities of outlook and attitude to life which undoubtedly exist among the Slavs.

For the Englishman each Slavonic language presents its own difficulties and it would be fruitless to discuss which is the most difficult for him to master. But the difficulties to be met with can all be mastered in time by interest and enthusiasm, because the Slavs are, after all, distant cousins of the British, and often large passages of their languages can be translated literally and in almost the same word order and still make sense! This is impossible with more remote languages.

The importance also of using the brief section on Old Slavonic as a basis for learning another Slavonic language or for studying the whole group cannot be over-emphasized. The trouble of doing this will certainly be repaid and the task greatly facilitated. The student who takes this trouble will see in true perspective the relationship of one Slavonic language to another and gain a real mastery of several languages with an ease that will surprise him or her and give deep satisfaction.

Finally, the student is advised to make a careful study of the sound laws that can be inferred from the sections dealing with the characteristics of each language. Besides bringing out the salient differences of each tongue, these will explain many apparent irregularities and changes in the declensions and conjugations, etc. The importance of a patient study of the

phonology (Lautlehre, or historical phonetics) can hardly be overstressed.

For a more detailed description of the languages and for adequate exercises the student is referred to the special grammars of the languages concerned, a list of which is appended in the brief bibliography which precedes each of the three main language groups. Complete lists, e.g. of exceptions, details of syntax, etc., have purposely been often omitted for the sake of brevity, as has all such information as, e.g., the names of the days and months, which can be found in dictionaries.

Each section is furnished with a short appendix of texts on which the student is urged to try his skill with the knowledge he acquires from the study of the preceding pages. He will find he has embarked on a journey of endless fascination.

* * *

The ultimate aim of this work is to enable a direct and reliable approach to be made to the wider issues reflected in the Slavonic literatures and their background, through an accurate knowledge of the Slavonic languages, and so help to create true understanding and friendship between the Slav peoples, great and small, and the English-speaking world. The student is urged always to have these "wider issues" in view and to remember that even an *accurate* translation, if it is torn from its context and background, can be totally misleading and distort the truth. To know the reality, truth, and beauty of the Slavonic world is an unforgettable experience. It enriches and brings hope.

δύναρ ἀντ' ὀνειράτων
πολλῶν τε καὶ καλῶν

The Distribution of the Slavonic Languages

The greater part of Eastern Europe between Germany and the Urals is inhabited by Slavs. In the western part of this area Polish, Czech, and Slovak are spoken, as well as Lusatian, or Wendish, in a small linguistic island south-east of Berlin round the towns of Cottbus and Bautzen. Together these four languages form the West Slav group.

Adjoining these areas, to the east, Byelorussian—or White Russian—and Ukrainian are spoken, which

together with Great Russian form the East Slav group. These linguistic areas are now in the U.S.S.R., but prior to 1939 they extended in the west to inside the frontiers of Poland for both languages, and into Czechoslovakia for Ukrainian only.

The Ukrainian language is essentially a unity, though in the west, in Galicia, it is naturally more influenced by Polish. The name Ruthenian came into English via German from non-classical Latin, being a corruption of the word "Rusin," meaning vaguely a Russian, more specifically a Ukrainian or "Little Russian," as they used to be called. This curious corruption of their name was a convenient cloak under the Austro-Hungarian Empire for disguising the essentially East Slav, or "Russian," character of their Ukrainian subjects (the name Russian really covers all three branches of the East Slav group, the people whom we know popularly as Russians being more precisely Great Russians). All Ukrainians now prefer the fairly modern name, Ukrainian. In more recent times "Ruthenian" came specifically to refer to Subcarpathian Russia, later called Transcarpathian Ukraine, at the extreme eastern end of pre-1939 Czechoslovakia and now incorporated into the Ukrainian S.S.R.—a convenient, but illogical, restriction of its meaning.

Byelorussian, a language even more akin to Great Russian than Ukrainian is to Great Russian, and with a very phonetic spelling, is even younger as a literary language and has also been called in some books White Ruthenian. In Polish the word "ruski" now means only Ruthenian or Ukrainian, whereas in Russian it means (Great) Russian. Owing to the political associations of the name "White Russian;" Soviet authorities have also called it "Byelorussian," preserving the Russian word for "white".

North-east and east of the Byelorussian and Ukrainian speaking areas we find the Great Russian area, the language generally known loosely in English as Russian, the language of such great writers as Pushkin, Tolstoy, Dostoyevsky, etc. Geographically one might say that, whereas the Dniepr is the great river of the Ukraine, the Volga with its tributaries forms the chief artery of the Great Russian speaking area, but in its lower reaches it flows through territory peopled by many other nationalities besides the Great Russians. The Great Russian language spread across a sparsely populated Siberia from the seventeenth century onwards with the comparatively peaceful expansion of the Russian Empire across Northern Asia. South of Austria, Hungary, and Romania, we have the area of the third, Southern, group of Slav tongues.

In the very north-west corner of it, Slovenian, or Slovene, is spoken by not quite two million people, still not all included in Yugoslavia. East and south of this area we have the Serbocroatian speaking region, corresponding roughly with Yugoslavia's northern, eastern, and south-western frontiers. By the Catholics of Croatia, Dalmatia, etc., and the Moslems of Bosnia, Serbocroatian is generally written in the Latin alphabet, whereas in Serbia the Cyrillic alphabet is prevalent; but as explained later, these and dialectical differences cannot be regarded as forming either racial or linguistic boundaries (the different alphabets are only an indication of a difference of religion), as the language is essentially one, i.e. mutually intelligible without previous study. This cannot truthfully be said of any other two Slav languages considered together except "Serbian" and "Croatian". In Southern Yugoslavia, Northern Greece and South-Western Bulgaria, the Macedonian dialects are prevalent. Linguistically they are somewhat more than a transitional stage to Bulgarian. Since 1944 the Macedonian literary language has been officially recognized for all purposes in the territory of the federative Macedonian People's Republic in Yugoslavia. Bulgarian is the fourth separate literary language of this (South Slav) group, spoken over an area pretty well corresponding to Bulgaria's political frontiers; and, owing to its greater divergence from Serbocroatian, it is classed by some (with Macedonian) as East South Slav as opposed to West South Slav.

Characteristics of the Slavonic languages

Apart from the Cyrillic and the adapted Latin scripts which are purely superficial characteristics, the main features of the Slavonic languages are:—

Pronunciation:—

1. Varying degrees of "palatalization," i.e. variants of the consonants obtained by using the palate to alter their quality.
2. Few true diphthongs.
3. Agglomerations of consonants (but no aspirated consonants).

Grammar:—

4. A high degree of inflection in nouns, pronouns, adjectives, and verbs, comparable to Latin in their complexity.

5. "Aspects" in verbs, a duality of forms pre-senting an action regarded as either completed or not, or else as single or habitual.

Sentence construction:—

6. Frequent inversion of sentence order, i.e. verb first and subject later, as in Spanish. In Slavonic, owing to the inflections, the word order is much more elastic and variable than in English, French, or German.

The Importance of Old Slavonic

The necessity of knowing Old Slavonic for acquiring a knowledge of the Slavonic group of languages is comparable to the need for knowing Latin for learning the Romance group. Old Slavonic is now a dead and purely ecclesiastical language, but its knowledge gives one an immense insight into, and understanding of, the reasons for the differences between the Slavonic languages. Hence it is very much worth while getting familiar with it, if one wishes to learn more than one language of the Slavonic group, or to study any of these languages at all seriously in its historical aspect, or again to study the group as a whole—by no means impossible, even if exacting, task.

BIBLIOGRAPHY
(Aids to further study)

The following list is not intended to be an exhaustive bibliography of all the books written on every aspect of the Slavonic languages. In conformity with the introductory and descriptive character of this work, we give below under the headings for the separate languages a selected list of some of the best and most modern grammars, books on their orthography and phonetics, the easier historical grammars, and the most useful dictionaries for each language (in this order). Precedence is given to works in English, after which works in French and German follow—with works in the Slavonic languages themselves given last. This is done purely on the assumption that the English student will be, to start with, more at home in the West European languages, as is usually the case.

The author and title are given as in the original work except in the case of dictionaries, where the title is translated into English. The script of the author's name helps to indicate the origin of dictionaries published in the Slav countries and aiming primarily at assisting natives of those countries. Such works naturally do not contain all the information an English student needs, but can be very useful to him nevertheless.

For the sake of brevity we give preference to latest editions where advisable. We have excluded most works not completed at the time of our writing, and also very large works such as the average student would find inaccessible or beyond his means.

We conclude with a very brief list of the main works on the Slavonic languages as a group.

It will be seen that the student has at his command a very rich variety of aids, if works in the Slavonic languages are included.

OLD SLAVONIC

- G. NANDRIȘ, R. AUTY. Handbook of Old Church Slavonic. 2 vols. London, 1959, 1960.
H. G. LUNT. Old Church Slavonic Grammar. 6th edition, The Hague-Paris, 1974.
W. R. SCHMALSTIEG. An Introduction to Old Church Slavonic. Cambridge, Mass., 1976.
A. VAILLANT. Manuel du vieux slave (2 vols.). Paris, 1948.

- ST. KUL'BAKIN. *Le vieux slave*. Paris, 1929.
- A. LESKIEN. *Handbuch der altbulgarischen Sprache*. Heidelberg, 1922.
- W. VONDRÁK. *Altkirchenslavische Grammatik*. Berlin, 1912.
- P. DIELS. *Altkirchenslavische Grammatik*. Heidelberg, 1932.
- N. VAN WIJK. *Geschichte der altkirchenslavischen Sprache*, I. Berlin-Leipzig, 1931.
- J. J. MIKKOLA. *Urslavische Grammatik*, I. Heidelberg, 1913; II, 1942; III, 1950.
- P. ARUMAA. *Urslawische Grammatik*, I. Heidelberg, 1964.
- H. N. BIELEFELDT. *Altslawische Grammatik*. Halle, 1961.
- B. ROSENKRANZ. *Historische Laut- und Formenlehre des Altbulgarischen*. Hague-Heidelberg, 1955.
- Г. А. ХАБУРГАЕВ. *Старославянский язык*. Москва, 1974.
- В. П. БЕСЕДИНА-НЕВЗОРОВА. *Старославянский язык*. Харьков, 1962.
- Н. М. ЕЛКИНА. *Старославянский язык*. Москва, 1960.
- Л. В. МАТВЕЕВА-ИСАЕВА. *Лекции по старославянскому языку*. Ленинград, 1958.
- С. Д. НИКИФОРОВ. *Старославянский язык*. Москва, 1952.
- А. М. СЕЛИЩЕВ. *Старославянский язык*, I, II. Москва, 1951, 1952.
- А. И. СОВОПЕВСКИЙ. *Древний церковно-славянский языкъ*. Фонетика. Москва, 1891.
- К. МИРЧЕВ. *Старобългарски език*. София, 1956.
- J. HAMM. *Staroslavenska Gramatika*. Zagreb, 1958.
- J. BOŚ. *Gramatyka starosłowiańska*. Lwów-Warszawa-Kraków, 1922.
- J. KURZ. *Učebnice jazyka staroslověnského*. Praha, 1966.
- P. OLTEANU, G. MINAILĂ, L. DJAMO-DIACONIȚĂ, E. VRABIE, E. LINȚA, O. STOICOVICI, M. MITU. *Slava veche și slava românească*. București, 1975.
- M. WEINGART. *Rukovět jazyka staroslověnského*. Praha, 1937-1938.
- W. VONDRÁK. *Kirchenslavische Chrestomathie*. Göttingen, 1910.
- V. VONDRÁK. *Církevněslovanská chrestomatie*. Brno, 1925.

Dictionaries

- T. A. LYSAGHT. *Material towards the Compilation of a Concise Old Church Slavonic-English Dictionary*. Wellington, 1978.
- L. SADNIK, R. AITZETMÜLLER. *Handwörterbuch zu den altkirchenslavischen Texten*. The Hague, 1955.
- FRANZ VON MIKLOSICH: *Lexicon palaeoslovenico-graecolatinum* (reprint of 1862-1865 Vienna edition). Aalen, 1963.

- (Второе отделение Императорской Академии наук). *Словарь церковно-славянского и русского языка*, I-III. С.-Петербург, 1867.
- ВУРО ДАНИЧИЋ. *Рјечник из књижевних старина српских*. Graz, 1962.
- ed. J. KURZ et al. *Slovník jazyka staroslověnského (A-P)*. Československá Akademie věd, Praha, 1966-1977.
- BULGARIAN
- A. B. LORD. *Beginning Bulgarian*. The Hague, 1962.
- S. CHININA, Ts. NIKOLOVA, L. SAKASOVA. *A Bulgarian textbook for foreigners*. Sofia, 1965.
- М. МАРИНОВА, М. ХУБЕНОВА, А. ДЖУМАДАНОВА. *Български език, I (in English)*. Sofia, 1964.
- J. BEAULIEUX. *Grammaire de la langue bulgare*. Paris, 1933.
- Н. МАРКОВИЋ. *Бугарска граматика*. Београд, 1937.
- П. С. КАЛКАНДЖИЕВЪ. *Българска граматика*. Пловдив-София, 1938.
- Л. Д. АНДРЕЙЧИНЪ. *Основна българска граматика*. София, 1942.
- Л. АНДРЕЙЧИН, Н. КОСТОВ, Е. НИКОЛОВ. *Българска граматика*. София, 1947.
- Л. АНДРЕЙЧИН, Н. КОСТОВ, Е. НИКОЛОВ. *Български език*. София, 1960.
- С. СТОЙКОВ. *Граматика на българския книжовен език*. София, 1964.
- Л. АНДРЕЙЧИН, К. ПОПОВ, С. СТОЯНОВ. *Граматика на българския език*. София, 1977.
- Правописен и правоговорен наръчник, edited by И. ХАДЖОВ, С. СТОЙКОВ, Л. АНДРЕЙЧИН. София, 1945.
- С. СТОЙКОВ. *Увод в българската фонетика*. София, 1966.
- Д. ТИЛКОВ, Т. БОЯДЖИЕВ. *Българската фонетика*. София, 1977.
- S. MLADENOV. *Geschichte der bulgarischen Sprache*. Berlin-Leipzig, 1929.
- Е. ЦОНЕВЪ. *История на български езикъ*. 3 vols. 1937-1940.
- ХРИСТО ПЪРВЕВ. *Очерк по история на българската граматика*. София, 1975.
- Dictionaries
- М. МИНКОВ, and others. *Bulgarian-English Dictionary*. Sofia, 1958.
- ed. М. МИНКОВ. *English-Bulgarian Dictionary*, vol. I. Sofia, 1973.
- К. СТЕФАНОВЪ. *Bulgarian-English Dictionary*. Sofia, 1914.
- К. СТЕФАНОВЪ. *English-Bulgarian Dictionary*. Sofia, 1929.

- Г. ЧАКАЛОВ, И. ЛЯКОВ, З. СТАНКОВ. English-Bulgarian Dictionary. Sofia, 1961.
- Н. MARCOFF. Bulgarian-French Dictionary. Leipzig, 1912.
- Н. MARCOFF. French-Bulgarian Dictionary. Leipzig.
- Г. WEIGAND und A. DORITSCH. Bulgarian-German Dictionary. 6th edition. Leipzig, 1943.
- С. Б. БЕРНШТЕИН. Bulgarian-Russian Dictionary. Moscow, 1966.
- С. МЛАДЕНОВЪ. Етимологически и правописен речникъ на българския книжовен езикъ. Sofia, 1941.
- С. ЧУКАЛОВ. Russian-Bulgarian Dictionary. Sofia, 1951, or Moscow, 1962.
- М. МЛАДЕНОВ. Bulgarian-Serbo-Croatian Dictionary. Belgrade, 1967.
- М. МЛАДЕНОВ, Д. ЦРВЕНКОСКИ, Б. БЛАГОЕСКИ. Bulgarian-Macedonian Dictionary. Skopje-Belgrade, 1968.
- Л. АНДРЕЙЧИН, and others. Български тълковен речник. Sofia, 1955.
- Л. АНДРЕЙЧИН, and others. Правописен речник на българския книжовен език. Sofia, 1960.
- П. ПАШОВ, Хр. ПЪРВЕВ. Правоговорен речник на българския език. София, 1975.
- С. РОМАНСКИ, and others. Речник на съвременния български книжовен език. 3 vols. Sofia, 1955-1959.

MACEDONIAN

- КРУМЕ КЕПЕСКИ. Македонска граматика. Скопје, 1946; 2nd edition. Скопје, 1950.
- . Македонски правопис. Скопје, 1945.
- Б. КОНЕСКИ и К. ТОШЕВ. Македонски правопис со правописен речник. Скопје, 1950.
- ед. К. ТОШЕВ et al. Правопис на македонскиот литературен јазик со правописен речник.* Скопје, 1970.
- А. М. СЕЛИЩЕВ. Очерки по македонской диалектологии. 1918.
- Н. Г. LUNT. Grammar of the Macedonian Literary Language. Skopje, 1952.
- Б. КОНЕСКИ. Граматика на македонскиот литературен јазик. Скопје, vol. I, 1952, 1957; vol. II, 1954. 2nd edn. Parts I and II (1 vol.). Скопје, 1967.
- Б. КОНЕСКИ. Историја на македонскиот јазик. Скопје-Београд, 1965.
- К. ТОШЕВ, Д. STEFANIJA. A Textbook of the Macedonian Language. Skopje, 1965.
- Р. PANOSKA, A. DŽUKESKI. A Handbook for the Study of the Macedonian Language (Beginner's Course). 2nd edition. Skopje, 1971.
- *Accented dictionary.

Dictionaries

- Д. ЦРВЕНКОВСКИ, Б. ГРУИЌ. Macedonian-English Dictionary. Skopje-Cetinje, 1965.
- Б. ГРУИЌ, Д. ЦРВЕНКОВСКИ. English-Macedonian Dictionary. Skopje, 1975.
- Г. МИЛОШЕВ, Б. ГРУИЌ et al. Serbo-Croatian-Macedonian Dictionary. Skopje-Cetinje, 1964.
- Б. КОНЕСКИ, and others. Речник на македонскиот јазик со српскохрватски толкувања. 3 vols. Skopje, 1961, 1965, 1966.
- Д. ТОЛОСКИ, В. М. ИЛИЧ-СВИТЫЧ, Н. И. ТОЛСТОЙ. Macedonian-Russian Dictionary. Moscow, 1963.
- Х. ГАВРИШ. Macedonian-Russian Dictionary. Skopje, 1969.
- Б. ГРУИЌ, К. ГАВРИШ. Russian-Macedonian Dictionary. Skopje-Cetinje, 1966.
- SERBOCROATIAN
- Г. JAVAREK, M. SUDJIĆ. Serbo-Croat. London, 1963.
- Б. F. MAGNER. Introduction to the Serbo-Croatian Language. Minneapolis, 1956.
- Б. LORD. Beginning Serbo-Croatian. The Hague, 1958.
- М. PARTRIDGE. Serbo-Croat Practical Grammar and Reader. Beograd, 1972.
- Б. BABIĆ. Serbo-Croat for foreigners. Beograd, 1973.
- Б. SUBOTIĆ and N. FORBES. Serbian Grammar. Oxford, 1926.
- Д. PRINCE. Practical Grammar of the Serbo-Croatian Language. New York, 1928.
- Б. FRY and Ф. KOSTIĆ. A Serbo-Croat Phonetic Reader. London, 1939.
- А. MEILLET and A. VAILLANT. Grammaire de la langue serbo-croate. Paris, 1933.
- М. REŠETAR. Elementar-Grammatik der kroatischen serbischen Sprache. 2nd edition. Zagreb, 1922.
- Н. В. АРБУЗОВА, П. А. ДМИТРИЕВ, Н. И. СОКАЛЬ. Српскохрватски јазик. Ленинград, 1965.
- А. БЕЛИЌ. Граматика српскохрватског језика за I-III разред средњих и стручних школа, Vols. I-III. Beograd, 1933-4.
- А. БЕЛИЌ. Савремени српскохрватски књижевни језик. 2 vols. Beograd, 1951, 1949.
- Т. MARETIĆ. Gramatika i stilistika hrvatskoga ili srpskoga jezika. 2nd edition. Zagreb, 1931.
- Р. ALEKSIĆ i M. STEVANOVIC. Gramatika srpskoga ili hrvatskoga jezika za srednje škole. Sarajevo, 1947.
- М. СТЕВАНОВИЋ. Граматика српскохрватског језика за више разреде гимназије. Beograd, 1951.

- S. TEŽAK, S. BABIĆ. Pregled gramatike hrvatskosrpskog jezika. Zagreb, 1972.
- I. BRABEC, M. HRASTE, S. ŽIVKOVIĆ. Gramatika hrvatskosrpskog jezika. Zagreb, 1968.
- J. NAMM. Kratka gramatika hrvatskosrpskog književnog jezika za strance. Zagreb, 1967.
- A. BELIĆ. Pravopis srpskohrvatskog književnog jezika. 3rd edition. Beograd, 1934.
- B. MILETIĆ. Основи фонетике српског језика. Београд, 1952.
- . Правопис српскохрватскога књижевног језика. Нови Сад. 1960.
- . Правопис српскохрватскога književnog jezika. Zagreb, 1960.
- И. ЛАЛЕВИЋ. Синтакса српскохрватског језика за средње школе. Београд, 1936.
- F. POLIANEC. Istorija srpskohrvatskog književnog jezika s pregledom naših dialekata i istorijskom citankom. Beograd, 1931.
- A. LESKIEN. Grammatik der serbokroatischen Sprache, I. Heidelberg, 1914.
- P. IVIĆ. Die serbokroatische Dialekte, I. The Hague, 1958.

Dictionaries

- *MORTON BENSON. Serbo-Croatian-English Dictionary. Belgrade, 1974.
- B. GRUJIĆ. English-Serbocroatian Serbokroatian-English Dictionary. Belgrade-Cetinje, 1966.
- S. RISTIĆ, Z. SIMIĆ, V. POPOVIĆ. English-Serbocroatian Dictionary. 2 vols. Belgrade, 1956.
- И. М. ПЕТРОВИЋ. English-Serbian Dictionary. Belgrade, 1933.
- R. FILIPOVIĆ et al. English-Croatian Dictionary. Zagreb, 1971.
- ed. R. FILIPOVIĆ. English-Serbo-Croatian Dictionary. (Langenscheidt pocket dictionary. Pt. I.) Berlin-Zagreb, 1970.
- Š. LOCHMER. English-Croatian Dictionary. Senj, 1906.
- F. A. BOGADEK. English-Croatian, Croatian-English Dictionary. Pittsburgh, 1926; London, 1950.
- M. DRVODELIĆ. Croatian-English Dictionary. Zagreb, 1953.
- J. H. СТЕВОВИЋ. Serbian-French, French-Serbian Dictionary. Belgrade, 1930.
- *C. РИСТИЋ и J. КАМРГА. Serbian-German and German-Serbian Dictionary. 2 vols. Belgrade, 1928 (also in small edition).

*Accented dictionaries.

- *D. DAJIČIĆ a F. ŠOBRA. Serbian-Czech Dictionary. Prague.
- *J. JURANČIĆ. Serbo-Croatian—Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1972.
- *Л. А. МИЧАТЭКЪ. Дифференциальный сербско-русский словарь. (Differential Serbian-Russian Dictionary.) St. Petersburg, 1903.
- D. ĐUROVIĆ. Russian-Serbocroatian Dictionary. Belgrade, 1936.
- *И. И. ТОЛСТОЙ. Serbo-Croatian-Russian Dictionary. Moscow, 1976.
- *С. ИВАНОВИЧ, И. ПЕТРАНОВИЧ. Russian-Serbo-Croatian Dictionary. Moscow, 1976.
- Л. БАКОТИЋ. Речник српскохрватског књижевног језика. Belgrade, 1936.
- *F. IVEKOVIĆ i I. BROZ. Rječnik hrvatskoga jezika. Zagreb, 1901.
- *ВУК СТЕФ. КАРАЦИЋ. Српски речник. (Serbian-German-Latin Dictionary.) 4th edition, Belgrade, 1935.
- SLOVENIAN
- M. GOBETZ, B. LONČAR. Slovenian Language Manual. Willoughby Hills, Ohio, 1976.
- J. TOPORIŠIĆ. Slovenski knjižni jezik. Maribor, vol. 1, 1968; vol. 2, 1966; vol. 3, 1967; vol. 4, 1970.
- J. JURANČIĆ. Slovenski jezik. Ljubljana, 1965.
- A. BAJEC, R. KOLARIČ, M. RUPEL. Slovenska slovnica. Ljubljana, 1956.
- (Uredniški Odbor). Slovenska gramatika. Državna založba Slovenije. Ljubljana, 1947.
- A. BREZNIK. Slovenska slovnica za srednje šole. Celje, 1934.
- C. PEČNIK. Praktisches Lehrbuch der slovenischen Sprache. 6th edition. Hartleben, Vienna-Leipzig. Very out of date.
- M. RUPEL. Slovensko pravorečje. Ljubljana, 1946.
- F. BEZLAJ. Oris slovenskega knjižnega izgovora. Ljubljana, 1939.
- A. BREZNIK in F. RAMOVŠ. Slovenski pravopis (accented). Ljubljana, 1935.
- A. BREZNIK in F. RAMOVŠ. Slovenski pravopis—mala izdaja (not accented). Ljubljana, 1937.
- *F. RAMOVŠ, O. ZUPANČIČ (and others). Slovenski pravopis. Slovenska akademija znanosti in umetnosti. Ljubljana, 1950. A full orthographical dictionary as well as a treatise on orthography.

*Accented dictionaries.

- F. RAMOVŠ. Kratka zgodovina slovenskega jezika, I. Ljubljana, 1936.
 F. RAMOVŠ. Historična gramatika slovenskega jezika. Vol. II. Ljubljana, 1924; Vol. VII, Ljubljana, 1936.
 *———. Slovenski pravopis. Ljubljana, 1962.
 T. LOGAR. Slovenska narečja. Besedila (texts). Ljubljana, 1975.

Dictionaries

- *J. KOTNIK. Slovenian-English Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1967.
 R. ŠKERLJ. English-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1965.
 A. GRAD, R. ŠKERLJ, N. VITOROVIČ. English-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1967.
 *A. GRAD, R. ŠKERLJ, N. VITOROVIČ. Slovenian-English Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1967.
 *F. BRADAČ. Slovenian-German Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1930.
 F. TOMŠIČ. German-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1938.
 *M. PLETERŠNIK. Slovenian-German Dictionary. 2 vols. Ljubljana, 1894. The only complete dictionary with full (tone) accentuation to date.
 J. KOTNIK. Slovenian-French Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1937.
 J. PRETNAR. French-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1932.
 J. KOTNIK. Slovenian-Russian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1967.
 J. PRETNAR. Russian-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1947.
 J. VESKIČ. Slovenian-Serbocroatian (differential) Dictionary. Belgrade, 1932.
 A. VILHAR. Slovenian-Serbocroatian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1927.
 *S. ŠKERLJ, R. ALEKSIČ, V. LATKOVIČ. Slovenian-Serbo-Croatian Dictionary. Belgrade-Ljubljana, 1974.
 A. VILHAR. Serbocroatian-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1927.
 A. ZAVADIL. Slovenian-Czech Dictionary. Prague.
 *R. ŠKERLJ. Slovenian-Czech Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1967.
 F. BRADAČ. Czech-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1967.

*Accented dictionaries.

- V. SMOLEJ. Slovak-Slovenian Dictionary. Ljubljana, 1976.
 J. GLONAR. Slovar slovenskega jezika. 1936.
 *(Institut za slovenski jezik SAZU.) Slovar slovenskega knjižnega jezika. I, II. Ljubljana, 1970, 1975.

THE SLAVONIC GROUP

- W. J. ENTWISTLE and W. A. MORISON. Russian and the Slavonic Languages. London, 1964.
 A. MEILLET. Le slave commun. 2nd edition. Paris, 1934.
 A. VAILLANT. Grammaire comparée des langues slaves, I. Lyon, vol. I, 1950; vol. II, 1958; vol. III, 1966.
 W. VONDRÁK. Vergleichende slavische Grammatik. 2 vols. Göttingen, 1924, 1928.
 V. HRUBÝ. Vergleichende Grammatik der slavischen Sprachen. Hartleben, Vienna-Leipzig. Sketchy and out of date.
 A. М. СЕЛИЩЕВ. Славянское языкознание, I: Западнo-славянские языки. Москва, 1941.
 Н. КОНДРАШОВ. Славянские языки. Москва, 1956.
 С. Б. БЕРНШТЕЙН. Очерк сравнительной грамматики славянских языков. Москва, 1961.
 K. HORÁLEK. Úvod do studia slovanských jazyků. Praha, 1962.
 T. LEHR-SPEŁWIŃSKI, W. KURASZKIEWICZ, F. SŁAWSKI. Przegląd i charakterystyka języków słowiańskich. Warszawa, 1954.
 ed. W. WEINGART. Slovanské spisovné jazyky v době přítomné. Praha, 1937.
 R. NAHTIGAL. Slovanskí jeziki, I. Ljubljana, 1952.
 O. BROCH. Slavische Phonetik. Heidelberg, 1911.
 ed. T. LEHR-SPEŁWIŃSKI. Chrestomatia slowiańska. I (South Slav). Kraków, 1949; II (West Slav). Kraków, 1950.
 E. BERNEKER. Slavische Chrestomathie. Trübner, Strassburg, 1902.
 E. BERNEKER. Slavisches etymologisches Wörterbuch (to "morü" only). Heidelberg, 1908-1914.
 F. MIKLOSICH. Dictionnaire abrégé de six langues slaves. 1885. Reprinted.

The attention of students is also drawn to the articles on the Slavonic languages in the various encyclopedias and, for samples of the spoken language, to the various series of records available in Great Britain and elsewhere.

*Accented dictionaries.

SECTION 1. OLD SLAVONIC (OLD BULGARIAN)

INTRODUCTION

The first writings in Old Slavonic are now generally considered by philologists to have been in the language of the Slavs of Macedonia of the second half of the ninth century. The Czech scholar, Abbé Josef Dobrovský (1753-1829), was the first to make a serious study of this language in his *Institutiones linguæ slavicae dialecti veteris*, published in 1822. Franc Miklošič, the Slovene scholar, towards the middle of the nineteenth century advanced the theory that the language of these ancient manuscripts was the language of the Slavs of Pannonia (modern Hungary) and therefore maintained that the language was old Slovenian. Some later scholars, such as A. Leskien, a German, came to the conclusion on philological grounds that the language was really old Bulgarian; and one can agree that on the whole it is more similar to modern Bulgarian than to other modern Slavonic languages, though Bulgarian has developed striking characteristics peculiar to itself.

The Old Slavonic MSS. at present extant, however, probably do not date from earlier than the eleventh century. They therefore represent the language of a later period with an admixture of local dialectical characteristics and later developments. They are all ecclesiastical in content. The MSS. generally considered to be the two most complete, linguistically purest and oldest are the Slavonic versions of the four Gospels called Codex Zographensis and Codex Marianus, which the Croatian scholar Jagić transcribed into Cyrillic characters from the original Glagolitic. (The Glagolitic alphabet was an ancient Slavonic script, probably also invented by St. Cyril, which was gradually superseded by the clearer Cyrillic.) The majority of the ancient Slavonic MSS. are in the Glagolitic script, only the Sava Gospels and the Codex Suprasliensis being originally in Cyrillic.

It should be pointed out that the Slavonic language of the services, etc., of the Orthodox Church is not identical with the language of the most ancient Slavonic MSS. Owing to historical causes it is in fact a much Russianized version of Old Slavonic most conveniently called Church Slavonic. This applies to the Orthodox Church in Serbia and Bulgaria as well as Russia, where the word for "holy", for instance, is throughout in its later Russian form—svjätъ—and not in its original form, which is svętъ (with nasal

vowel).

Nor yet can the language of these MSS. be regarded as Common (or proto-) Slav, i.e. the original Slavonic language from which the modern Slavonic languages directly derive. It possesses throughout certain *South* Slav features, as exemplified in the forms of the words for "castle, town" and "night": *gradъ*, *noštъ*.

The Codex Zographensis (see texts) in most respects preserves the original form of the language the most accurately; for example, the nasal vowels *ę* (*ѧ*) and *ǫ* (*Ѩ*) are consistently differentiated. But even here the letters *ѡ* and *Ѣ* are sometimes confused, as also are original *ѧ* and *Ѣ* by reason of the original script; *ѧ* is also not indicated.

THE OLD SLAVONIC ALPHABET

<i>Cyrillic</i>	<i>Latin Transcription</i>	<i>Approximate English Equivalent</i>
-----------------	----------------------------	---------------------------------------

Ѧ	a	
Ѣ	b	
Ѧ	v	
Ѧ	g	
Ѧ	d	
Ѧ	e	
Ѧ	ž	
Ѧ	dz	
Ѧ	z	
Ѧ, Ѧ, Ѧ	i	
Ѧ	ǵ	
Ѧ	k	
Ѧ	l	
Ѧ	m	
Ѧ	n	
Ѧ	o	
Ѧ	p	
Ѧ	r	
Ѧ	s	
Ѧ	t	
Ѧ	u	
Ѧ	f	
Ѧ	ch or x	
Ѧ	o	
Ѧ	st	
Ѧ	c	
Ѧ	č	
Ѧ	š	

1 *zh*, Fr. *j*, *s* in "pleasure"

* 1

2

Shard *g+y*

Ѧ

ch in "loch"

† (= ordinary Sl. *o*)

Ѧ *sh*

Ѧ *ts* (pronounced together)

Ѧ *ch*

Ѧ *sh*

THE OLD SLAVONIC ALPHABET

<i>Cyrillic</i>	<i>Latin Transcription</i>	<i>Approximate English Equivalent</i>
Ѧ	b	(neutral vowel, = <i>a</i> in "about")
Ѧ	y	similar to Russian <i>Ѧ</i> sign of palatalization, not wholly mute in earliest times, approx. = <i>i</i> in "bit"
Ѧ	ě	<i>ye</i> in "yet", or vulg. Eng. "yeah" = "you"
Ѧ	ju	Ѧ = "yah"
Ѧ	ja	Ѧ = "yes" without the <i>s</i>
Ѧ	je	Ѧ Fr. <i>in</i>
Ѧ	ę	Ѧ Fr. <i>on</i>
Ѧ	q	Ѧ Fr. <i>y + in</i>
Ѧ	ję	Ѧ Fr. <i>y + on</i>
Ѧ	jō	Ѧ Fr. <i>y + on</i>
Ѧ	ks	† x
Ѧ	ps	†
Ѧ	f	†
Ѧ	i (ü)	†

1 Palatal consonants.

2 In the O.S. texts the *ъ* (short mark) over *n* is not generally put in; but in grammars when *n* represents the semi-vowel "j" (<*jъ*) after a vowel, *ъ* may be put in to assist the student.

3 Usually written *Ѧ*.

* or † = palatalization, "soft" consonants or yotation,

e.g. *Meŕę Tъ = Meŕę Tъ*.

* *s* changes to *ъ* in most MSS.; so Zogr.

† = Greek letters, mainly used in words directly borrowed from the Greek.

Ѧ = letter peculiar to O.S.

Ѧ = letter peculiar to O.S. in this form.

Ѧ = letter peculiar to O.S. with this sound; occurs only in words of foreign origin.

Russian scholars will notice the absence of *Ѧ*, (*Ѧ*²), *Ѧ*, as well as the different order after *Ѧ* (= *o*).

Serbian scholars will notice the absence of the letters introduced by Obradović and Vuk Karadžić (*Ѧ* is put to a different use): *Ѧ*, *Ѧ*, *Ѧ*, *Ѧ*, *Ѧ*.

Bulgarian scholars will note that *Ѧ* in O.S.

i.e. other than in the "1st, 2nd and 3rd Palatalizations of Velars" and with $\dot{a}$.

e	—	ф	oppress
o	—	а	pierce
p	—	и	collect
h	—	н	breathe

Slavonic examples of vowel gradation or Ablaut:

ь	—	и	—	ѣ	(e)	die	мѣрѣти
						count, read	чѣтѣти, чѣсти
						take	берѣти, братьи
ь	—	оу				breathe; spirit	дѣхнѣти; дѣхъ
е	—	о				flow; course	тѣкѣти; токъ
ѣ	—	а				go out	излѣсти; излѣзѣти
ѣ	—	ѣ				call	зѣватѣти, зѣвъ
ѣ	—	и				carland; weave	вѣнѣць, вѣсти

¹и after a vowel = ии.

снѣ	from *sikh	=such, cf. <i>такъ</i> = such, <i>какъ</i> = of what kind?
сѣ	" *stęga	=path, cf. Socr. <i>сѣзѣ</i> , Russian dialect <i>сѣра</i>
полѣ	" *polęga	=profit, advantage, cf. R. dial. <i>полѣра</i>
ависати	" *dvigati	=to move (Impfve.) cf.

кѣнась from Old Germanic **kuningaz* = prince
 расѣрѣзати (Impfve.) =to tear apart, also
 расѣрѣзати, Pfve.:
 расѣрѣзати, Russ.
 вѣсь from **věxъ* =all (Nom. sing. masc.)

As will be seen from these examples, the third palatalization of velars does not affect the morphological flexions of Old Slavonic, but is of importance mainly in word formation, a subject outside the scope of this work.

4. The "second palatalization" from the formative period of Slavonic. Here before *i* and *ъ* (when derived from *ai* or *oi*) the velars *k*, *g*, *x* changed to *ц*, *с*(*з*) and *ч* respectively:

к/ц	course, current	тока, тоуѣ	Nominative, Locative sing.
	hand	рѣка, рѣуѣ	Nominative, Dative/Locative sing.
	say	рече, рѣчи	Present 1st pers. sing., Imperative 2nd pers. sing., pers. sing., plural
x/c	breath, spirit	роуѣмъ, доуѣхъ, доуѣхъ, доуѣхъ	1st pers. plural Nom., Loc.
g/s	God	богъ, боже	Nom. pl. Loc. sing.

while in this case *ck*, *cg* change to *ct*, *zd*: *азѣка* board, Dat. Loc. sing. *азѣтъ*; *аразѣга* a wood, Dat. Loc. sing. *аразѣтъ*.

5. The influence of the *j* element. When consonantal word stems had endings beginning with *j* added, certain consonantal changes similar to the above palatalizations took place. Roots ending in vowels with the same endings added afford clear proof of the presence of the *j*. This appears in the terminations of the Past Participle Passive and of the Present tense, and also of some Comparative adjectives. This feature is called *notation*.

Before *j*:
 к, г, х changed to weep
 ч, ж, ш
 лѣжати, плачу
 tell lies лѣгати, лѣжа

Infinitive/Present 1st pers. sg.

т, д	changed to шт, жд	breathe азѣжати throw метати, мешѣти thirst жаждати, жажѣти write писати, пишѣти bind вѣзати, вѣжѣти drive гонити, гонѣти order велѣти, велѣжѣти plough орати, орѣти drown потопити, потопѣти love лѣбити, лѣбѣти put ставити, ставѣти feed кормити, кормѣти announce вѣзвѣстити, вѣзвѣщѣти nail to пригвоздити, пригвозжѣти seek искати, ищѣти withy розѣга collective: розѣжѣти
с, з	changed to ш, ж	
н, л, р, ѣ, ѣ, ѣ, ѣ	changed to ѣ, ѣ, ѣ, ѣ	
п, б, insert ѣ		
в, м		
ст, зд	changed to шт (=ш)	
ск, зг	changed to шт, жд	

6. Disappearance of consonants in roots before consonantal terminations and in word composition:—

sleep	спати, сѣ(п)нѣ	verb, noun
weave	плести, плести	Pres. 1st p. sing., Past Participle Active II

7. Epenthetic *n*, i.e. the insertion of *n* between two components:—

go into	вѣ-н-ити	Infinitive
---------	----------	------------

8. The semivowels. It will be observed that in O.S. nearly all words end in a vowel or in the semivowels *ъ* or *ь*. These latter are "reduced vowels", i.e. shortened from original normal vowels in Indo-European. (Most final consonants of I.E. words are dropped.)

9. Common Slav vocalic *ъ* and *ь* (hard) and *ѣ* and *ѣ* (soft) are rendered in O.S. indiscriminately: *лъ*, *пъ*, *рь*, *пь*, e.g. *лъзъ* = long, *рьзъ* = worm. In a few words these same combinations represent true *лѣ*, *пѣ*, *рѣ*, etc., e.g. *мръзъ* = blood, *кръсъ* = cross, *плѣтъ* = flesh, *слѣза* = tear.

A BRIEF SUMMARY OF OLD SLAVONIC MORPHOLOGY

THE DECLENSIONS OF NOUNS

The declension of nouns in O.S. had seven cases—Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accusative, Instrumental, Locative, and Vocative, for all three numbers, i.e. singular and plural and also dual (for two persons or things), and three genders—masculine, feminine, and neuter. For neuter nouns the Vocative singular is the same as the Nominative and Accusative singular.

There were six declensions, subdivided according to the basic feature of their stem:—

1. *i*-stems; 2. consonantal stems; 3. *ŭ*-stems; 4. *ŷ*-stems; 5. *a*-stems; 6. *o*-stems.

1. Examples of the declension of *i*-stem nouns. Masculines were few in number, feminines more numerous. (Cf. Latin *ovis*.)

		пѣтъ = way (Masc.)	
		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Dual</i>
Nom.	пѣтъ	пѣтъѣ	пѣти
Gen.	пѣти	пѣтъѣ	пѣтъю
Dat.	пѣти	пѣтъѣмъ	пѣтъѣма
Acc.	пѣтъ	пѣти	
Instr.	пѣтъмъ	пѣтъми	
Loc.	пѣти	пѣтъхъ	
Voc.	пѣти		

= N., A., V.
= G., L.
= D., I.

кость = bone (Fem.)

Nom.	кость	кости	кости
Gen.	кости	костѣи	костѣю
Dat.	кости	костѣмъ	костѣма
Acc.	кость	кости	
Instr.	костѣѣ	костѣми	
Loc.	кости	костѣхъ	
Voc.	кости		

= N., A., V.
= G., L.
= D., I.

2. Consonantal stems in *-n-*, *-s-*, and *-t-* (masc. and neut.), and in *-r-* (two fem. nouns only). (Cf. Latin *nomen nominis*, *opus operis*, *caput capitis*, *mater matris*.)

		камѣ = stone (Masc.)	
		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Dual</i>
Nom.	камѣ	камѣи	камѣни
Gen.	камѣне	камѣнѣ	камѣноу
Dat.	камѣни	камѣнѣмъ	камѣнѣма
Acc.	камѣнѣ	камѣни	
Instr.	камѣнѣмъ	камѣнѣми	
Loc.	камѣне	камѣнѣхъ	

= N., A., V.
= G., L.
= D., I.

има = name (Neut.)

		Plur.	
		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Dual</i>
Nom.	има	имѣна	имѣнѣ
Gen.	имѣне	имѣнѣ	имѣноу
Dat.	имѣни	имѣнѣмъ	имѣнѣма
Acc.	има	имѣна	
Instr.	имѣнѣмъ	имѣнѣи	
Loc.	имѣне	имѣнѣхъ	

= N., A., V.
= G., L.
= D., I.

мати = mother (Fem.)

Nom.	мати	матери	матери
Gen.	матере	матерѣ	матерѣю
Dat.	матери	матерѣмъ	матерѣма
Acc.	матерь	матери	
Instr.	матерѣѣ	матерѣми	
Loc.	матери	матерѣхъ	
Voc.	мати		

= N., A., V.
= G., L.
= D., I.

(So also the neuters: тѣло, тѣлесе = body, отроуѣ, отроуѣте = child, Acc.=Nom.)

Like камѣ except in Nom. sing. ань = day, Inst. pl. also аньѣ, Gen. Loc. dual also аньѣю.

3. *ŷ*-stems, similar to consonantal stems, No. 2. Feminine only.

црѣкѣ = church

		Pl.	
		<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Dual (wanting)</i>
Nom.	црѣкѣ	црѣкѣи	--
Gen.	црѣкѣе	црѣкѣѣ	--
Dat.	црѣкѣи	црѣкѣѣма	--
Acc.	црѣкѣѣ	црѣкѣѣи	--
Instr.	црѣкѣѣѣ	црѣкѣѣѣми	--
Loc.	црѣкѣе	црѣкѣѣѣхъ	--

So also: свѣркѣ = mother-in-law, свѣркѣѣ = letter, character, люба = love, смокѣ = fig, хрѣркѣѣ = flag, жрѣкѣ = millstone. Also крѣкѣѣ = blood (originally Acc. sing. < Nom. sing. *krŷ).

4. *ŷ*-stems. I.E. *ŷ* changes to *z* in Slavonic. Masculines only. (Cf. Latin: *domus*)

czinъ = son

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Dual</i>	
Nom.	<i>czinъ</i>	<i>czinove</i>	<i>czinъi</i>	N., A., V.
Gen.	<i>czinou</i>	<i>czinobъ</i>	<i>czinoboy</i>	G., L.
Dat.	<i>czinovi</i>	<i>czinъmbъ</i>	<i>czinъma</i>	D., I.
Acc.	<i>czinъ</i>	<i>czinъi</i>		
Instr.	<i>czinъmbъ</i>	<i>czinъmi</i>		
Loc.	<i>czinou</i>	<i>czinъxbъ</i>		
Voc.	<i>czinou</i>			

So also: *domъ* = house, *vorъzъ* = top, summit, *mezъ* = honey, *kolъ* = ox, *lezъ* = ice.

5. *a*-stems. These are actually subdivided into *a*- (hard) stems and *ja*- (soft) stems. The influence of the *j* has created what is apparently a different declension, but the changes are regular. To the *ja*-stems also belong the fem. nouns in -и and -ыи: *lady* = boat, *gorъni* = goddess. This entire group consists mostly of fem. nouns.

A-STEM *JA-STEM*
zhenъ = woman, wife; *zemlъa* = earth, land

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Pl.</i>	<i>Dual</i>
Nom.	<i>zhenъ</i>	<i>zemplъa</i>	<i>zembъ</i>
Gen.	<i>zembъi</i>	<i>zemplъa</i>	<i>zembъ</i>
Dat.	<i>zembъi</i>	<i>zembъ</i>	<i>zembъ</i>
Acc.	<i>zembъ</i>	<i>zembъmbъ</i>	<i>zembъma</i>
Instr.	<i>zembъ</i>	<i>zembъmi</i>	<i>zembъma</i>
Loc.	<i>zembъ</i>	<i>zembъxbъ</i>	
Voc.	<i>zembъ</i>		

6. *o*-stems. As in declension 5, these are subdivided into *o*-stems and *jo*-stems, hard and soft, with corresponding regular variations. There are both masculine and neuter versions of this declension.

O-STEMS *JO-STEMS*
pasъ = slave; *lъto* = year; *konъ* = horse; *polъ* = field

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
Nom.	<i>pasъ</i>	<i>konъ</i>	<i>polъ</i>
Gen.	<i>pasъ</i>	<i>konъbъ</i>	<i>polъbъ</i>
Dat.	<i>pasou</i>	<i>konъbъ</i>	<i>polъbъ</i>
Acc.	<i>pasъ</i>	<i>konъbъ</i>	<i>polъbъ</i>
Instr.	<i>pasombъ</i>	<i>konъbъmbъ</i>	<i>polъbъmbъ</i>
Loc.	<i>pasъ</i>	<i>konъbъ</i>	<i>polъbъ</i>
Voc.	<i>pasъ</i>	<i>konъ</i>	<i>polъ</i>

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>				
Nom.	<i>pasъi</i>	<i>lъta</i>	<i>konъi</i>	<i>polъa</i>
Gen.	<i>pasъbъ</i>	<i>lъtbъ</i>	<i>konъbъ</i>	<i>polъbъ</i>
Dat.	<i>pasombъ</i>	<i>lъtomъbъ</i>	<i>konъbъmbъ</i>	<i>polъbъmbъ</i>
Acc.	<i>pasъi</i>	<i>lъta</i>	<i>konъa</i>	<i>polъa</i>
Instr.	<i>pasъi</i>	<i>lъtbъi</i>	<i>konъi</i>	<i>polъi</i>
Loc.	<i>pasъxbъ</i>	<i>lъtbъxbъ</i>	<i>konъixъbъ</i>	<i>polъixъbъ</i>

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
<i>Dual</i>		
Nom.	<i>pasъ</i>	<i>lъtbъ</i>
Gen.	<i>pasou</i>	<i>lъtou</i>
Dat.	<i>pasoma</i>	<i>lъtoma</i>

Mixed declensions:—

Already in Zogr. and other early MSS. we find a confusion of the *o*-stems with the *ŷ*-stems, e.g. *vorъ* in (Dat. sing.), *mezъ* in (Dat. sing.), *lъto* in (Dat. sing.), and *gorъzъ* (Gen. plur.) (Codex Marianus).

Some *jo*-stems in -tenъ and -apъ have Nom. and Gen. plur. according to the consonantal stem declension, e.g. *мътаpe* = publicans, *дѣлатель* = workers.

Nouns in -инъ decline like *pasъ* in the sing. and dual, but throughout the plural lose this final -инъ and have irregular Nom., Dat., Loc.: *гражаане*, -нема, -нема (Gen. -на, Acc., Inst. -на) = townsmen.

Words declined like *o*-stem and *a*-stem nouns:—

INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PARTICIPLES

Into this category fall the "indefinite" adjectives, e.g. *новъ* "new", *добръ* "brave" (e.g. *новъ богъ* = a new god, as opposed to *новъи богъ* = the new god), also the following participles:—

Present Participle Passive: *несомъ* being carried
 Past Participle Active II: *несла* carried, used only in Nom.

with Perfect tense

Past Participle Passive: *несенъ* (having been) carried

taken

THE DECLENSION OF INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES

Hard stems:—

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
Nom.	<i>новъ</i>	<i>новъ</i>	<i>новъ</i>
Gen.	<i>новъ</i>	<i>новъ</i>	<i>новъ</i>

новъ = (a) new

новъ

новъ

новъ

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Dat.	НОВУ	НОВО	НОВѢ
Acc.	НОВА, НОВА	НОВО	НОВА
Voc.	НОВЕ	НОВО	—
Instr.	НОВОМЪ	НОВО	НОВОМЪ
Loc.	НОВѢ	НОВО	НОВѢ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	НОВИ	НОВА	НОВѢ
Gen.	НОВА	НОВА	НОВА
Dat.	НОВАМЪ	НОВА	НОВАМЪ
Acc.	НОВѢ	НОВА	НОВѢ
Voc.	НОВИ	НОВА	НОВАМЪ
Instr.	НОВѢ	НОВА	НОВАМЪ
Loc.	НОВАХЪ	НОВА	НОВАХЪ
<i>Dual</i>			
N.A.V.	НОВА	НОВА	НОВѢ
G.L.	НОВА	НОВА	НОВА
D.I.	НОВА	НОВА	НОВА

Soft stems: — *boyn* = (a) mad

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Sing.			
Nom.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Gen.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Dat.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Acc.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Voc.	—	БОУ	—
Instr.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Loc.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Gen.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Dat.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Acc.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Voc.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Instr.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
Loc.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
<i>Dual</i>			
N.A.V.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
G.L.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ
D.I.	БОУ	БОУ	БОУ

The spelling *boyn* in the Nom. and Acc. sing. masc. and in the Gen. plur. of all genders represents a form *buji*. But in the Dat. sing. fem., the Loc. sing. of all genders, the Nom. and Voc. plur. masc., the Instr. plur. masc. and neut., and in the Nom., Acc. and Voc. dual neut. and fem. the same spelling represents a form *buji*.

ACTIVE PARTICIPLES

The Pres. Part. Act. is also thus declined except in the Nom. sing., masc., fem., and neut., and in the Nom. plur. masc., where it has the endings of the consonantal declension, viz.:—

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
<i>Sing.</i>			
Nom.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Gen.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Dat.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Acc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Instr.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Loc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Gen.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Dat.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Acc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Instr.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Loc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
<i>Dual</i>			
Nom.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Gen.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Dat.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Acc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Instr.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Loc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ

So also:—

знаѣ, Gen. sing. masc.: знаѣ
(for *j* verbs) = knowing
хваѣ, Gen. sing. masc.: хваѣ
(for *i* verbs) = praising

The declension of the Past Participle Active I is similar:—

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
<i>Sing.</i>			
Nom.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Gen.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Dat.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Acc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Instr.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Loc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Gen.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Dat.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Acc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Instr.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ
Loc.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣ

Loc. <i>Dual</i>	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
	несѣшихъ	несѣши	несѣшахъ
Nom.	несѣша	несѣши	несѣши
Gen.	несѣшоу	несѣшоу	несѣшоу
Dat.	несѣшема	несѣшема	несѣшема

So also:—

амѣб Gen. sing. masc.: амѣбѣ = having given; and хвалѣб Gen. sing. masc.: хвалѣбѣ = having praised.

THE COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

There are two sets of endings used for forming comparative adjectives:—

Nom. sing. masc. -*jъi*, neut. -*je*, fem. -*jъŕi*, written respectively -и, -е or -ѣ, -ѣши, with yotation of the preceding consonant of the stem of the adjective, and more frequently the extended form with the ending enlarged by an initial -ѣ-, which causes the first palatalization of preceding velars:—

Nom. sing. masc. -*ѣjъi*, neut. -*ѣje*, fem. -*ѣjъŕi*, written respectively -ѣи, -ѣѣ, -ѣши.

The first set of endings is used for a small number of adjectives with consonantal stems, e.g.:—

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
грѣзъ = rough	грѣзѣи	грѣзѣѣ	грѣзѣши
арагъ = dear	аражи	араже	аражѣши
лихъ = exceeding, excessive	лиши	лише	лишѣши
люгъ = violent	люшти	люште	люштѣши
хочъ = bad, small, poor	хочжани	хочжае	хочжаѣши

The same endings are used for most adjectives ending in -ѣзъ, -ѣкъ and -онъ, which lose this suffix in the comparative:—

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
вѣсокъ = high	вѣшиши	вѣше	вѣшѣши
глагокъ = deep	глагожи	глагоже	глагожѣши
слаахъ = sweet	слажани	слажае	слажаѣши
крѣпкъ = strong	крѣпѣи	крѣпѣѣ	крѣпѣши

Most other adjectives use the second, extended set of endings, in which the characteristic -ѣ- changes to -а- or -ѣ- after palatalized consonants:—

	M. новѣи	N. новѣѣ	F. новѣши
новъ = new	новѣи	новѣѣ	новѣши
старъ = old	старѣи	старѣѣ	старѣши
чистъ = clean	чистѣи	чистѣѣ	чистѣши
многоъ = many	многожани	многожае	многожаѣши
сухъ = dry	сушани	сушае	сушаѣши
доблѣ = valiant	доблѣани	доблѣѣѣ	доблѣѣши

A few adjectives ending in -ѣзъ, -ѣкъ retain this ending in forming the comparative; the -ѣ- then undergoes the first palatalization, e.g.:—

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
горькъ = bitter	горьчани	*горьчаѣѣ	горьчаѣши
тънъкъ = fine, tender	*тънчани	тънчаѣѣ	*тънчаѣши

Notice the irregular comparisons of the following common adjectives which have suppletive forms for the comparative degree formed from different roots from those of the positive degree:—

велѣи } = big	M. велѣи	N. велѣѣ	F. велѣши = bigger
велѣкъ } = big	велѣти	велѣѣѣ	велѣѣши = more, bigger
малъ = small	мѣни	мѣѣѣ	мѣѣши = smaller, lesser
благъ } = good	лоучѣи	лоучѣѣ	лоучѣши = better
добръ } = good	оучѣи	оучѣѣ	оучѣши = better
	соулѣи	соулѣѣ	соулѣши = better
	соулѣи	соулѣѣѣ	соулѣѣши = better
зълъ = bad	рауни	рауѣѣ	рауѣши = worse
	горѣи	горѣѣѣ	горѣѣши = worse

Comparative adjectives have an indefinite

(simple) and a definite (compound) declension like positive adjectives and all follow the soft-stem models. (See below). In the Nom. sing. masc. the indefinite and definite forms are identical.

Than = неже. The Genitive of comparison is also frequently used, e.g.: многожана (Acc. pl. masc.) pronounced = more numerous than the first.

The Superlative degree of adjectives is expressed by the comparative degree with вѣтъкъ = of all, e.g.: мѣни вѣтъкъ = the smallest (of all). Absolute Superlatives can be expressed with the adverb стѣло = very, e.g. стѣло глагокъ = extremely deep, the deepest; or with the prefix прѣ-, e.g.: прѣсвѣтъ = most holy.

The prefix нан- in Old Slavonic is only used with superlative adverbs: нанѣше = highest, нанѣше = most, the most. (See p. 60.)

ORDINAL NUMERALS

Ordinal numerals can follow the *o-* and *a-*stem nouns but are more often declined like the definite adjectives (see below):—

1	ПРЪВЪ (-ВЪИИ)	8	ОСМЪ
2	ВЪТОРЪ (-РЪИИ), etc.	9	ДЕВЪТЪ
3	ТРЕТЬИ	10	ДЕСЪТЪ
4	ЧЕТВЪРЪТЪ	12	ВЪТОРЪ НА ДЕСАТЕ
5	ПЪТЪ	20	ДВЪНАДЕСЪТЪНЪ
6	ШЕСТЪ	100	СЪТЪНЪ
7	СЕДМЪ		

Also: *кѣтеръ* = a certain...

CARDINAL NUMERALS

1-4 are adjectival numerals, i.e. their case agrees with the noun they qualify. 5 onwards in O.S. govern the Gen. plur.:—

	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
1	ѢДИНЪ	ѢДИНЪ	ѢДИНЪ
2	ДВЪ	ДВѢ	ДВѢ
3	ТРИ	ТРИ	ТРИ
4	ЧЕТВѢ	ЧЕТВѢ	ЧЕТВѢ
5	ПЯТЬ	ПЯТЬ	ПЯТЬ
6	ШЕСТЬ	ШЕСТЬ	ШЕСТЬ
7	СЕДМЬ	СЕДМЬ	СЕДМЬ
8	ОСМЬ	ОСМЬ	ОСМЬ
9	ДЕВЪТЪ	ДЕВЪТЪ	ДЕВЪТЪ
10	ДЕСЪТЪ	ДЕСЪТЪ	ДЕСЪТЪ
11-19	ѢДИНЪ НА ДЕСАТЕ, etc.	ѢДИНЪ НА ДЕСАТЕ, etc.	ѢДИНЪ НА ДЕСАТЕ, etc.
20	ДВѢ ДЕСАТИ	ДВѢ ДЕСАТИ	ДВѢ ДЕСАТИ
30	ТРИ ДЕСАТИ	ТРИ ДЕСАТИ	ТРИ ДЕСАТИ
40	ЧЕТВѢ ДЕСАТИ	ЧЕТВѢ ДЕСАТИ	ЧЕТВѢ ДЕСАТИ
50-90	ПЯТЬ ДЕСАТИ etc.	ПЯТЬ ДЕСАТИ etc.	ПЯТЬ ДЕСАТИ etc.
100	СЪТЪ	СЪТЪ	СЪТЪ
200	ДВѢ СЪТЪ	ДВѢ СЪТЪ	ДВѢ СЪТЪ
300	ТРИ СЪТЪ	ТРИ СЪТЪ	ТРИ СЪТЪ
400	ЧЕТВѢ СЪТЪ	ЧЕТВѢ СЪТЪ	ЧЕТВѢ СЪТЪ
500	ПЯТЬ СЪТЪ etc.	ПЯТЬ СЪТЪ etc.	ПЯТЬ СЪТЪ etc.
1,000	ТЪСЯЩИ	ТЪСЯЩИ	ТЪСЯЩИ

* So also: *оба*, *оба* = both

ja-stem fem.

COLLECTIVE NUMERALS

	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
2	ДВѢ	ДВѢ	ДВѢ
	ДВѢ	ДВѢ	ДВѢ

	Masculine	Feminine	Neuter
3	ТРИ	ТРИ	ТРИ
4	ЧЕТВѢ	ЧЕТВѢ	ЧЕТВѢ
5	ПЯТЬ	ПЯТЬ	ПЯТЬ
6	ШЕСТЬ	ШЕСТЬ	ШЕСТЬ
7	СЕДМЬ	СЕДМЬ	СЕДМЬ
8	ОСМЬ	ОСМЬ	ОСМЬ
9	ДЕВЪТЪ	ДЕВЪТЪ	ДЕВЪТЪ
10	ДЕСЪТЪ	ДЕСЪТЪ	ДЕСЪТЪ

Collective numerals, expressing a number of persons or things as a group, are used in two ways in Old Slavonic: 1. in the plural, used adjectivally and agreeing with the noun in gender and case, including *pluralia tantum*, e.g. *двѣхъ сестръ* = with double chains, *двѣхъ людемъ* = two kinds of people; 2. in the neuter singular with the noun following in the Genitive, e.g. *десѣти брѣthrenъ* = (the) ten brothers.

Multiplicative numerals are expressed either with the cardinal numerals followed by the noun *кратъ* in the appropriate case, e.g. *три кратъ* = thrice, *пять кратъ* = five times, or with the suffix *-мь* (*= 'go'-s*) attached to the cardinal numerals, e.g. *двѣмь* = twice, *тримь* = thrice, *шестимь* = six times.

Notice also the *fractions*: *полъ* = half, *треть* = a third, *четверть* = a quarter, and the *numeral nouns* *двоина* = a couple, *троина* = a group of three, but *троина* = the Trinity, *пятина* = a group of five, *семина* = a group of seven. These can be used adverbially in the Instrumental singular, e.g. *сороицею* = a hundredfold.

DECLENSION OF PRONOUNS

The following categories of words fall into the pronominal declension, which has hard and soft stems like the nouns, but different endings from them:—

Demonstrative pronouns, e.g.: <i>тѣ</i> that, <i>оуѣ</i> this	Relative pronouns, e.g.: <i>мже</i> who
Interrogative pronouns, e.g.: <i>кто</i> who, <i>что</i> what	Indefinite pronouns, e.g.: <i>нѣкто</i> someone
Negative pronouns, e.g.: <i>никто</i> no one	Possessive pronouns, e.g.: <i>мой</i> my, <i>нашъ</i> our
Definitive pronouns, e.g.: <i>такъ</i> such, <i>всѣ</i> all, <i>многъ</i> many, <i>самъ</i> self	Certain numerals: <i>двѣ</i> 2, <i>двѣ</i> 2 each,

Personal pronouns, e.g.: азъ I, ты thou, *н he
(Nom. онъ)

Hard stems:—

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
<i>Sing.</i>	тѣ	то	та
Nom.	того	того	тома
Gen.	тому	тому	томъ
Dat.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
Acc.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
Instr.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
Loc.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	ти	та	тѣ
Gen.	тѣхъ	тѣхъ	тѣхъ
Dat.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
Acc.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
Instr.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ
Loc.	тѣмъ	тѣмъ	тѣмъ

Dual

Soft stems:—

онъ, она, оно = he, she, it (*н, *ѣ, *ѣ)

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
<i>Sing.</i>	онъ (*н)	оно	она
Nom.	его	его	ѣѣ
Gen.	его	его	ѣѣ
Dat.	ѣѣ	ѣѣ	ѣѣ
Acc.	ѣѣ	ѣѣ	ѣѣ
Instr.	ѣѣ	ѣѣ	ѣѣ
Loc.	ѣѣ	ѣѣ	ѣѣ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	они	она	онѣ
Gen.	ихъ	ихъ	ихъ
Dat.	имъ	имъ	имъ
Acc.	имъ	имъ	имъ
Instr.	имъ	имъ	имъ
Loc.	имъ	имъ	имъ
<i>Dual</i>			
Nom.	она	онѣ	онѣ
Gen.	ѣѣ	ѣѣ	ѣѣ
Dat.	имъ	имъ	имъ
Acc.	имъ	имъ	имъ

+Oblique cases of all genders and numbers are preceded by
н after a governing preposition.
°Enclitic.

Soft stems:—

нѣ = who, which (Rel.)

	SING.	PLUR.	DUAL
<i>Masc. Neut. Fem.</i>	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Nom.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Gen.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Dat.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Acc.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Instr.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Loc.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Gen.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Dat.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Acc.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Instr.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ
Loc.	нѣ	нѣ	нѣ

мон = my

	SING.	PLUR.	DUAL
<i>Masc. Neut. Fem.</i>	мон	мон	мон
Nom.	мон	мон	мон
Gen.	мон	мон	мон
Dat.	мон	мон	мон
Acc.	мон	мон	мон
Instr.	мон	мон	мон
Loc.	мон	мон	мон

сѣ = this

	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
<i>Sing.</i>	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Nom.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Gen.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Dat.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Acc.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Instr.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Loc.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Gen.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Dat.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Acc.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Instr.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Loc.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
<i>Dual</i>			
Nom.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Gen.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ
Dat.	сѣ	сѣ	сѣ

The words for "what", "who" and "all" had peculiar declensions:—

<i>Sing.</i>				
Nom.	ѡто (=what)	кто (=who)		
Gen.	ѡсо (ѡсо)	кого		
Dat.	ѡсоу (ѡсоу)	кому		
Acc.	ѡто	кого		
Instr.	ѡмь	чьмь		
Loc.	ѡмь (ѡсомь)	комь		
	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>	
<i>Sing.</i>				
Nom.	ѡсь (=all)	ѡсе	ѡса, ѡсь (ѡ = ѡ)	
Gen.	ѡсего		ѡсена	
Dat.	ѡсемоу		ѡсени	
Acc.	ѡсь	ѡсе	ѡсѣ	
Instr.	ѡсѣмь		ѡсена	
Loc.	ѡсемь		ѡсени	
<i>Plur.</i>				
Nom.	ѡси	ѡса, ѡсь (ѡ=ѡ)	ѡса	
Gen.	ѡсѣхъ		ѡсѣхъ	
Dat.	ѡсѣмъ		ѡсѣмъ	
Acc.	ѡса	ѡса, -ѡ	ѡса	
Instr.	ѡсѣми		ѡсѣми	
Loc.	ѡсѣхъ		ѡсѣхъ	

DEFINITE ADJECTIVES

The original declension of the definite adjectives was a composition of the substantival declensions (o- and a-stems) + the declension of *н added in the corresponding case. The two parts then started to coalesce. These contractions are already in full swing in all extant O.S. texts.

Hard stems:—
новѣй, новѣиѣ = the new

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>	
Nom.	новѣй, новѣиѣ	новѣе	новѣа	
Gen.	новѣа	новѣа	новѣа	
Dat.	новѣаго	новѣагоу	новѣа	
Acc.	новѣй, новѣиѣ (or=Gen.)	новѣе	новѣа	
Instr.	новѣиѣмь		новѣа	
Loc.	новѣа	новѣа	новѣа	
<i>Plur.</i>				
Nom.	новѣи	новѣа	новѣа	
Gen.	новѣихъ		новѣихъ	
Dat.	новѣиѣмь		новѣиѣмь	
Acc.	новѣа	новѣа	новѣа	
Instr.	новѣиѣми		новѣиѣми	

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>
Loc.	новѣихъ		новѣихъ
<i>Dual</i>			
Nom.	новѣа	новѣи	новѣи
Gen.	новѣау		новѣау
Dat.	новѣама		новѣама

новѣй, новѣаго, Nom. and Gen. sing. masc. are regular, but новѣиѣмь, новѣа, Instr. sing. masc., Gen. sing. fem., новѣи, Dat. sing. fem., новѣахъ or новѣахъ, Instr. sing. fem., and новѣихъ, Loc. Gen. plur., новѣиѣмь, Dat. plur. show advanced contractions. *вѣиѣмь* (-ѣиѣ), "soft" adjective, *вѣиѣмь* Gen. plur. = the highest, and *мѣиѣ* (-ѣиѣ), definite Comparative adjective, Gen. sing. masc. neut. *мѣиѣаго*, = the lesser, show similar unexpected forms.

Soft-stems:—

вѣиѣмь = (the) highest, supreme

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>
Nom.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> , -ѣиѣ	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Gen.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣаго, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Dat.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Acc.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Instr.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Loc.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
<i>Plur.</i>			
Nom.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Gen.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Dat.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Acc.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Instr.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Loc.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>

<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>
Nom.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Gen.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Dat.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Acc.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Instr.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
Loc.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i> -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу, -ѣагоу	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
<i>Dual</i>			
N.A.V.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
G.L.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>
D.I.	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>	<i>вѣиѣмь</i>

* Reconstructed form, not found in extant texts.

THE DECLENSION OF DEFINITE COMPARATIVE ADJECTIVES

мѣиѣ = (the) lesser

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>
Nom.	<i>мѣиѣ</i> , -ѣиѣ	<i>мѣиѣ</i> or <i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>
Gen.	<i>мѣиѣаго</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>
Dat.	<i>мѣиѣагоу</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>
Acc.	<i>мѣиѣ</i> or Gen.	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>
Instr.	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>	<i>мѣиѣиѣ</i>

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>
<i>Loc.</i>	мѣньшии	мѣньш-иѣмь, * -иимь	мѣньшии
<i>Plur.</i>			
<i>Nom.</i>	мѣньшии	мѣньшаѣ	мѣньшаѣ
<i>Gen.</i>	мѣньшиихъ		
<i>Dat.</i>	мѣньшиимъ		
<i>Acc.</i>	мѣньшаѣ	мѣньшаѣ	мѣньшаѣ
<i>Instr.</i>	мѣньшиими		
<i>Loc.</i>	мѣньшиихъ		
<i>Dual</i>			
<i>N.A.V.</i>	мѣньшаѣ	мѣньшии	мѣньшии
<i>G.L.</i>	мѣньшоуо		
<i>D.I.</i>	мѣньш-иима, -има		

* Reconstructed form.

Comparative adjectives with a stem extended by -ѣ are declined identically: Nom. sing. старѣи (masc.), старѣишеѣ or старѣе (neut.), старѣишиѣ (fem.), Gen. sing. старѣишаѣго (masc., neut.), старѣишаѣѣ (fem.), etc.

THE DECLENSION OF THE DEFINITE FORM OF PARTICIPLES

The declension of the definite form of the Present Participle Active and of the Past Participle Active I have unexpected forms in some of the Nominative and Accusative forms of all numbers, which should be noted. In the other cases they follow the declension of *мѣньшѣи* above.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE ACTIVE

несѣи = (he) who carries; знаѣи = (he) who knows
молаи = (he) who requests

<i>SING.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>	<i>Feminine</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	несѣи	несѣтеѣ	несѣтиѣ
	знаѣи	знаѣтеѣ	знаѣтиѣ
	молаи	молаѣтеѣ	молаѣтиѣ
<i>ACC.</i>	несѣтъѣи, -и	= Nom.	несѣтъѣѣ
	знаѣтъѣи, -и		знаѣтъѣѣ
	молаѣтъѣи, -и		молаѣтъѣѣ
<i>PLUR.</i>			
<i>Nom.</i>	несѣтеи, -и	несѣтаѣ	несѣтаѣ
	знаѣтеи, -и	знаѣтаѣ	знаѣтаѣ
	молаѣтеи, -и	молаѣтаѣ	молаѣтаѣ
<i>ACC.</i>	несѣтаѣ	= Nom.	= Nom.
	знаѣтаѣ		
	молаѣтаѣ		

<i>DUAL</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter and Feminine</i>
<i>N. A.</i>	несѣтаѣ	несѣтии
	знаѣтаѣ	знаѣтии
	молаѣтаѣ	молаѣтии
PAST PARTICIPLE ACTIVE		
несѣи, -ѣи = (he) who carried; знаѣи, -ѣи = (he) who knew; молаѣи, -ни = (he) who requested		
<i>SING.</i>	<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>
<i>Nom.</i>	несѣи, -ѣи	несѣшеѣ
	знаѣи, -ѣи	знаѣшеѣ
	молаѣи, -ни	молаѣшеѣ
<i>ACC.</i>	несѣшѣи, -и	= Nom.
	знаѣшѣи, -и	
	молаѣшѣи, -и	
<i>PLUR.</i>		
<i>Nom.</i>	несѣшеи, -и	несѣшаѣ
	знаѣшеи, -и	знаѣшаѣ
	молаѣшеи, -и	молаѣшаѣ
<i>ACC.</i>	несѣшаѣ	= Nom.
	знаѣшаѣ	
	молаѣшаѣ	
<i>DUAL</i>		<i>Neuter and Feminine</i>
<i>N. A.</i>	несѣшаѣ	несѣшии
	знаѣшаѣ	знаѣшии
	молаѣшаѣ	молаѣшии

The definite forms of the Present Participle Passive, e.g. несѣи = who is being carried, and of the Past Participle Passive, e.g. несѣи = who was carried, follow the declension of definite hard stem adjectives, e.g. *новѣи* = the new.

The Past Participle Active II in -ѣѣ, e.g. несѣѣ = carried, never occurs in the definite form. (It is only used in the Nominative in the composition of compound tenses and only changes (quite regularly) according to gender and number in agreement with the subject of the sentence. See pp. 64 and 71-72.)

PERSONAL PRONOUNS

The declension of the Personal Pronouns for "I", "we", "thou", "you", and of the Reflexive "self" (ACC.) is as follows:—

	I	we	we two	thou
<i>Nom.</i>	аѣ	мы	ѣѣ	тѣѣ
<i>Gen.</i>	мене	наѣ	наѣ	тѣѣ

	I	we	you two	we two	thou
Dat.	мѣ, мѣнѣ	намѣ	вамѣ	намѣ	тѣ, тѣбѣ
Acc.	мѣ, мѣне	на, насѣ	ва, васѣ	на	та, тебѣ
Instr.	мѣноу	нами	вами	на	тобою
Loc.	мѣнѣ	насѣ	васѣ	на	тебѣ
Nom.	you	you two	-self		
Gen.	вѣ	ва	себѣ		
Dat.	вѣ	ва	себѣ		
Acc.	вѣ	ва	себѣ		
Instr.	вѣ	ва	себѣ		
Loc.	вѣ	ва	себѣ		

Underlined forms are enclitic.

ADVERBS

Adverbs in O.S., as in other Slavonic languages, have a great variety of endings. Many are derived from adjectives, nouns, pronouns, particles, etc. To quote only a few examples:—

мало	(a) little	вѣ	inside
сѣ	very	вѣнѣ	outside
сѣ	more	вѣнѣ	up, above
сѣ	here	латиньскѣ	in Latin
на	rather	дома	at home
на	(interrogative particle)	на	surely...not (interrogative particle)

Comparative adverbs have the form of the Nom. sing. neut. of indefinite Comparative adjectives, e.g. мѣнѣ=less. на- is prefixed for the Superlative. Not = не, but "no" = на, and "yes" = да, еи.

CONJUNCTIONS

Conjunctions, as in other I.E. languages, are of two categories, coördinating and subordinating. owing to the fact that there is no subjunctive in Slavonic, the latter present little difficulty in their use. Examples:—

coördinating: а and, but на but та and then
и and же² but аи (и) or

subordinating: аще if нако that
ако as, when бо² for, as
аа in order that, so that

наимѣнѣ = least. See p. 51. ²enclitic.

PREPOSITIONS

Prepositions in O.S. govern the same case, in almost every instance, as in modern Slavonic languages. e.g.:—

сѣ(а)	(+Gen.) without	на	(+Dat.) to
из(а)	(+Gen.) out of	из(а)	(+Acc.) up
о(оу)	(+Loc.) round, about	ао	(+Gen.) up to, until
поа	(+Instr. for rest, +Acc. for motion)	поа	to, under
за	(+Instr. for rest, +Acc. for motion)	за	behind
наа	" "	" "	above
преа	" "	" "	before
сѣ	(+Instr.) with; (+Gen.) off		
внѣ	(+Gen. or Dat.) near		
кромѣ	внѣ (+Gen.) outside		
вѣ	(+Loc. for rest, +Acc. for motion)	вѣ	in(to)
на	" "	" "	on(to)
отѣ	(+Gen.) from	оу	(+Gen.) by, at
при	(+Loc.) by, near	межаоу	(+Instr.) between
аа	аа, аа* (+Gen.) for	преае	(+Gen.) before
по	(+Dat.) over, according to; (+Acc.) over (motion)		
	(+Loc.) after		
противѣ	противѣ (+Dat.) opposite, against		
разѣ	(+Gen.) except	сѣ	(+Acc.) through
поаа	(+Acc.) along		

*These are also postpositions.

по- = through, по- = over, па(а)- = apart, are only used as verbal prefixes.

THE CONJUGATION OF VERBS

Voices: Only the Active remains. The Passive is expressed by the Active verb + the Reflexive pronoun аа or periphrastically with the verb "to be" and the Present or Past Participle Passive.

Tenses: Only the Present, Aorist, and Imperfect are not compound tenses. The others, such as the Imperfective Future and the Perfect, are expressed with the aid of auxiliary verbs, or in the case of the Future, by the use of the Present tense of the *Perfective* aspect of the verb in question.

The meaning of the three past tenses, Aorist, Imperfect and Perfect, corresponds to that of the English tenses called usually the Simple Past (he did), Imperfect (he was doing) and Perfect (he has done). The Aorist (= unrestricted, or without limits, from the Greek ἀόριστος) denotes a single action in the past without reference to duration or limits, e.g. *ишае* = he went out. The Imperfect expresses the duration or repetition of an action in the past, e.g. *сѣае* = he was sitting, he used to sit, while the Perfect expresses an action in the past which has

³With metathesis & vowel lengthening <**mel̥ti*. See p. 40, #1.

-xʷz, -we, -me; -xowz, -were (-cre), -xʷx; -xowʷ, -wera (-cta), -were (-cre)
 1. No simple rule can be given as to which kind of verbs have either *-xʷz* or the later *-xʷz*, *-owʷ* type of "s" Aor. in verbs of Cl. I. Texts vary in their use of these forms.

The Participles..

All five are declined in gender, number, (and case) like indefinite and also definite adjectives. We give here the endings of the Nom. sing. only:—

Present Active:	Masc. and Neut.	Feminine
	несѣи	несѣши
	знаѣа	знаѣши

Only *i*-stems have:—

Past Active I:	(хвал-)а	(хвал-)ашти
<i>i</i> -stems:—	несѣ	несѣши
Verbs with Infin. in -ѣ or -а-	хвалѣ	хвалѣши
e.g.:—	горѣѣ	горѣѣши

= having burnt

аѣаѣѣ = having worked

несѣ, -ѣ, -ѣа (-а- endings added to the Infin. stem), = carried, used to form the Perfect tense; Nom. only.

нес-О-мѣ (masc.), нес-О-мо (neut.), нес-О-ма (fem.) = being carried. generally ends in -ма (masc.), -но (neut.), -на (fem.), (-ѣна, etc., after consonants), or -ѣа, -ѣо, -ѣа, e.g.:—

несѣнѣ=carried
аѣаѣнѣ=worked
хвалѣнѣ=praised

The *Verbal Noun* in -нѣ, -тъѣ is formed from this participle.

The *Conditional Mood* is formed by the Past Participle Active II in -ѣа, compounded with the auxiliary verb:—

бѣмѣ, бѣи, бѣи; бѣмѣа (бѣхѣмѣа), бѣсте, бѣа (бѣмѣа);

else with the corresponding person of the Aorist of бѣти: бѣѣа, бѣа, etc. (See p. 69)

The *Infinitive* always ends in -ти and the *Supine* in -ѣа, except for velar stems of Class I: e.g. не-ти (Infin.)=to bake: *Supine* неѣѣа. The *Supine* is used to express purpose after verbs of motion only and governs the Genitive, e.g. наѣа ѣѣѣа ловѣѣа = I am going to catch fish.

Examples of the Conjugation of the Simple Tenses of Verbs

-e verb.

несѣ = I carry (Class I)

	Present	Imperative	Imperfect
Sing. 1.	несѣ	—	несѣахѣ
2.	несѣши	несѣ	несѣаше
3.	несѣтъ	несѣ	несѣаше
Plur. 1.	несѣмѣ	несѣмѣ	несѣахѣмѣ (-сте)
2.	несѣте	несѣте	несѣахѣте
3.	несѣтъ	—	несѣахѣ
Dual 1.	несѣѣѣ	несѣѣѣ	несѣахѣѣѣ
2.	несѣѣа	несѣѣа	несѣахѣѣа (-ста)
3.	несѣѣе	—	несѣахѣѣе (-сте)
	Aorist IIA	Aorist IIB	Aorist I
Sing. 1.	несѣѣ	несѣѣѣ	несѣѣѣ†
2.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣѣ
3.	несѣ	несѣ	несѣѣ
Plur. 1.	несѣѣмѣ	несѣѣѣмѣ	несѣѣѣмѣ
2.	несѣѣте	несѣѣѣте	несѣѣѣте
3.	несѣѣа	несѣѣѣа	несѣѣѣа
Dual 1.	несѣѣѣѣ	несѣѣѣѣ	несѣѣѣѣ
2.	несѣѣѣа	несѣѣѣѣа	несѣѣѣѣа
3.	несѣѣѣе	несѣѣѣѣе	несѣѣѣѣе

Participles:—

Present Active:—	несѣѣ
Present Passive:—	несѣѣѣ
Past Active I:—	несѣѣ
Past Active II:—	несѣѣѣ
Past Passive:—	несѣѣѣѣ
Infinitive:—	несѣѣѣ
Supine:—	несѣѣѣѣ

†From *мошти* = to be able.

-ne verbs (Class II)

авѣгнѣа = I lift (Pfive.). (Consonant stem авѣг-)
ѣгнѣа = I push (Pfive.) (Vowel stem ѣг-)

	Present	Imperative	Imperfect
Sing. 1.	авѣгнѣѣ	—	авѣгнѣѣахѣ
2.	авѣгнѣѣши	авѣгнѣ	авѣгнѣѣаше
3.	авѣгнѣѣтъ	авѣгнѣ	авѣгнѣѣаше
Plur. 1.	авѣгнѣѣмѣ	авѣгнѣѣмѣ	авѣгнѣѣахѣмѣ
2.	авѣгнѣѣте	авѣгнѣѣте	авѣгнѣѣахѣте
3.	авѣгнѣѣтъ	—	авѣгнѣѣахѣ
Dual 1.	авѣгнѣѣѣѣ	авѣгнѣѣѣѣ	авѣгнѣѣѣѣѣѣ
2.	авѣгнѣѣѣа	авѣгнѣѣѣа	авѣгнѣѣѣѣѣа (-ста)
3.	авѣгнѣѣѣе	—	авѣгнѣѣѣѣѣе (-сте)

	<i>Aorist I</i>	<i>Aorist II</i>
Sing. 1.	авигь	авигохь
2.	авиже	авиже
3.	авиже	авиже
Plur. 1.	авигомь	авигохомь
2.	авижете	авигосте
3.	авигь	авигоша
Dual 1.	авиговь	авигоховь
2.	авижета	авигоста
3.	авижете	авигосте

Participles:—

Present Active:—	—
Present Passive:—	—
Past Active I:—	авигъ
Past Active II:—	авиглаз
Past Passive:—	авиженъ
Infinitive:—	авигнати
Supine:—	авигнать

-je verbs (Class III)

знаѣ = I know

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aorist II</i>
Sing. 1.	знаѣхъ	—	знаѣхь	знахь
2.	знаѣши	знаѣ	знаѣше	зна
3.	знаѣтъ	знаѣ	знаѣше	зна
Plur. 1.	знаѣмь	знаѣмь	знаѣхомь	знаѣхомь
2.	знаѣте	знаѣте	знаѣшете	знаѣсте
3.	знаѣтъ	—	знаѣхъ	знаѣша
Dual 1.	знаѣвь	знаѣвь	знаѣховь	знаѣховь
2.	знаѣта	знаѣта	знаѣшета	знаѣста
3.	знаѣте	—	знаѣшете	знаѣсте

Participles:—

Present Active:—	знаѣ
Present Passive:—	знаѣмъ
Past Active I:—	знаѣзъ
Past Active II:—	знаѣзъ
Past Passive:—	знаѣнъ
Infinitive:—	знаѣти
Supine:—	знаѣти

-je verbs with consonant stem (Class III)

мелѣ = I grind

колѣ = I stab

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aorist II</i>
Sing. 1.	мелѣхъ	—	мелѣахь	мѣхь
2.	мелѣши	мелѣ	мелѣаше	мѣ

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aorist II</i>
Sing. 3.	мелѣтъ	мелѣ	мелѣаше	мѣ
Plur. 1.	мелѣмь	мелѣмь	мелѣахомь	мѣхомь
2.	мелѣте	мелѣте	мелѣашете	мѣсте
3.	мелѣтъ	—	мелѣахъ	мѣша
Dual 1.	мелѣвь	мелѣвь	мелѣаховь	мѣховь
2.	мелѣта	мелѣта	мелѣашета	мѣста
3.	мелѣте	—	мелѣашете	мѣсте

Participles:—

Present Active:—	мелѣ
Present Passive:—	мелѣмъ
Past Active I:—	клагъ
Past Active II:—	мѣлзъ
Past Passive:—	— колѣнъ (-кланъ)
Infinitive:—	мѣлти
Supine:—	мѣлтъ

важѣ = I bind, tie (Class III)

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
Sing. 1.	важѣхъ	—	важѣахь	важѣахь
2.	важѣши	*важѣ	важѣаше	важѣ
3.	важѣтъ	важѣ	важѣаше	важѣ
Plur. 1.	важѣмь	важѣмь	важѣахомь	важѣахомь
2.	важѣте	важѣте	важѣашете	важѣасте
3.	важѣтъ	—	важѣахъ	важѣаша
Dual 1.	важѣвь	важѣвь	важѣаховь	важѣаховь
2.	важѣта	важѣта	важѣашета	важѣаста
3.	важѣте	—	важѣашете	важѣасте

Participles:—

Present Active:—	важѣ
Present Passive:—	важѣмъ
Past Active I:—	важѣзъ
Past Active II:—	важѣлзъ
Past Passive:—	важѣнъ
Infinitive:—	важѣти
Supine:—	важѣтъ

*Reconstructed form.

коуповѣѣ = I buy (Class III)

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>
Sing. 1.	коуповѣѣ	—	коуповаахь
2.	коуповѣѣши	коуповѣѣ	коуповааше
3.	коуповѣѣтъ	коуповѣѣ	коуповааше
Plur. 1.	коуповѣѣмь	коуповѣѣмь	коуповааахомь
2.	коуповѣѣте	коуповѣѣте	коуповааашете
3.	коуповѣѣтъ	—	коуповааахъ
Dual 1.	коуповѣѣвь	коуповѣѣвь	коуповаааховь

	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Imperfects</i>
Sing.			
1.	речу*	буди	буди
2.	речи	буди	буди
3.	речи	буди	буди
Plur.			
1.	речу	буди	буди

Participles:—

Present Active:—	AAAZI	(masc. & neut.), AAAJXUTH	(fem.)
Past Active I:—	AAVA	(masc. & neut.), AAAZUH	(fem.)
Past Active II:—	AAVA		
Past Passive:—	AAVA		

1. коштх	Plur. 1. коштемх	Dual 1. коштефтх
2. коштемх	2. коштере	2. коштефтх
3. коштерх	3. коштарх	3. коштефтх

пришьлз ѣсмь, * etc. = I have come.
пришьлз бѣхъ, * etc. = I had come.

Imperfective Future *имамъ, хощахъ,* } *пити, etc.* = I shall drink
научу отъ взычнхъ

Future Perfect **АМЛЗ ВЪДЪА**, * etc. = I shall have given
Conditional (see above) **ИМЪЛЪЗ ВЪМЪ**, * etc. = I would

Conditional (see above) *нѣтъзъ нѣтъ*, *etc. = I would have

*The Past Participle Active in *-ъзъ* varies according to gender and number. The auxiliary verb may also precede it.

Aspects.

There is no sure guide from the form or termination as to whether a given verb is Perfective or Imperfective, but on the whole there are few Perfective verbs not compounded with a prefix. Prefixes make Imperfective verbs perfective; but Perfective verbs remain perfective when compounded with a prefix, the corresponding Imperfective being formed with the same prefix and the Iterative, lengthened or extended verb stem. From this the Present tense is formed for such a compound verb, since the Present form of Perfective verbs is *Future* in meaning in *main* (though not in some subordinate) clauses.

It should be noted that the Imperfect (past) tense is seldom formed from Perfective verbs, but the Aorist *can* be formed from Imperfective verbs. Such an Aorist then gives the action as past, without stressing its continuousness. The Perfect tense (compound Past) is used to translate the Greek Perfect tense mostly and expresses a present state as a result of a past action.

A few verbs use different roots to express the aspects:

<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Perfective</i>
глаголати = to say, speak	решти
видѣти = to see	оузрѣти
метати = to throw	връжати (Pres. вброси)

In the following important verbs different (vowel gradation) stages of the same root are used for the formation of Iterative forms:—

<i>Imperfective</i>	<i>Iterative</i>
ити	хоати
нести	носати
вести	воати
вести	возати
вѣшти	вѣцати
гѣзнати	гонати
=to go (see above)	
=to carry	
=to lead (Pres. вѣж)	
=to convey (Pres. вѣж)	
=to pull (Pres. вѣжж)	
=to drive (Pres. жѣж)	

I. CODEX ZOGRAPHENSIS. Luke VI, 20-44.

TEXTS

[illegible]

II. CODEX ZOGRAPHENSIS. Luke VIII, 20-40.

20. I възвѣстиша емоу глаголюхаше, ꙗко мати твоѣ i
ратроурѣ твоѣ вѣнѣ стоишѣ внаѣти та хоташе. 21. онѣ же
отвѣшаша рече къ нѣмъ. мати моѣ i братрѣ моѣ снi сѣтъ
лазѣишѣи слово божье i твораше е. 22. вѣистѣ же въ
аинѣ отъ аини i тѣ вѣлѣше въ кораблѣ i оученици его, i
рече имъ. прѣидѣмъ на онѣ полѣ езера, i прѣѣмъ. 23. ѣж-
итемъ же имъ оучѣне исoused. i саниае бочрѣ вѣтрѣна въ езерѣ,
исконьуаваахъ са i вѣлаахъ са. 24. пристѣпше же възвоу-
иша i глаголюхаше. наставѣниче, наставѣниче, погѣиенѣмъ. онѣ же
заставѣ запрѣти вѣтроу i вѣнѣнѣю морскоуоу, i оучеже i вѣистѣ
ишина. 25. i рече къ нѣмъ. нѣде естѣ вѣра ваша; оубоѣвше
е са убоиша са глаголюхаше къ себѣ. нѣто оубо съ естѣ, ꙗко
вѣтрома велитѣ i боѣ i послушашахъ его; 26. i прѣѣаша
а землѣ кенисаретскѣ, ѣже естѣ ов онѣ полѣ галилеѣ.
27. i ишѣзшемъ имъ на землѣ сарѣте i мѣжѣ езерѣ отъ града,
же имѣаше бѣсѣ отъ лѣтъ многа, i въ ризѣ не облачааше са i
а храмѣ не живѣаше нѣ въ гробѣхъ. 28. оузрѣвъ же исoused
рипадае къ нѣмоу i гласомъ вельемъ рече. убо естѣ мѣнѣ i
себѣ, исoused сѣине бога възвѣнѣго; молѣтъ ти са, не мѣи
еене. 29. прѣштааше бо доухови неучиноуоу. изнан отъ
ловѣна. отъ многа бо лѣтъ възвѣшашааше i, i вѣлаахъ i ажи
селѣнѣи i пѣтъ стрѣгаше i, i разстрѣзаше хѣтъ гонимъ вѣи-
ааше бѣсомъ снѣоуѣ поустѣиша. 30. възпроси же i исoused
лагола. убо ти има естѣ; онѣ же рече. леѣеонѣ, ꙗко бѣси
нози вѣниахъ въ нѣ. 31. i молѣахъ i, аа не повелитѣ имъ въ
еѣзѣнѣ ити. 32. сѣ же тоу стадо свинни много пасомо въ горѣ,
молѣахъ i, аа повелитѣ имъ въ тѣи вѣнѣти. i повелѣ имъ.
33. i ишѣзше бѣси отъ уловѣна вѣниааша въ свинѣа, i оу-
трѣи са стадо по вѣроу въ езеро i истопе. 34. вѣлѣаше
е пасѣишѣи възвѣшаше бѣааша i възвѣстиша въ града i въ селѣхъ.
5. изнахъ же вѣнѣтъ вѣлѣаааго i приахъ къ исoused i оверѣхъ
ѣаша уловѣна, iж нежеже бѣси изнахъ, овалѣена и сѣмѣишаша
ри ногоу исousedоу, i оубоѣша са. 36. възвѣстиша имъ вѣнѣ-
аше же i, како сѣпасе са бѣсѣновавѣи. 37. i молиша i всѣхъ
ароаѣ области керѣсинскѣиа отити отъ нѣхъ, ꙗко страхомъ
ельемъ оарѣжиимъ бѣахъ. онѣ же вѣлѣтъ въ кораблѣ възвратити са.
8. молѣаше же са емоу мѣжѣ, iж нежеже изнае бѣсѣ, аа си сѣ
нимъ вѣилѣ. исoused же отѣпоусти i глагола. 39. възвратити са
а аомѣ твои i повѣаи, елико ти сѣтвори богъ. i иае по
всемоу градоу проповѣдаа, елико сѣтвори емоу богу.
40. вѣистѣ же, егда възвратити са исoused, приахъ i нароа.
ѣахъ бо всѣи уаѣшѣе его.

III. CODEX ZOGRAPHENSIS. Luke VIII, 5-8.

5. изнае сѣиан сѣатѣ сѣмене своего, i егда сѣаше, ово
ааше при пѣти i попрано вѣистѣ, i пѣтица небесѣскѣиа
озоваша е. 6. а ароутое паде на камене i проѣавѣ оучаше,

за нѣ не имѣаше влагъи. 7. а ароутое паде по сребѣ трѣнѣ, i
възарастѣ трѣнѣ i подави е. 8. а ароутое паде на землѣ аверѣ
i проѣавѣ сѣтвори плоаѣ сѣторичѣхъ. се глагола възвѣлашѣ.
имѣи оуши слѣзашати аа слѣзѣишѣ.

II. CODEX ZOGRAPHENSIS. Luke VIII, 20-40.

20. I възвѣстиша емоу глаголюхште, ѣко мати твоѣ i братрѣ твоѣ вѣнѣ стоитѣ вниѣти та хоташте. 21. онѣ же отзвѣштавъ рече кз нѣмѣ. мати моѣ i братрѣ моѣ снi сѣтъ слѣзаште i слово божье i твораште е. 22. вѣистѣ же вѣ банизѣ отъ аѣни i тѣ вѣлѣзе вѣ кораблѣ i оученици его, i рече имѣ. прѣидѣмѣ на онѣ полѣ езера, i прѣвѣмѣ. 23. ѣахштемѣ же имѣ оуспѣе исѣуса. i сѣннае божрѣ вѣтрѣна вѣ езерѣ, i исконыуаваахѣ са i вѣлаахѣ са. 24. пристѣпаше же вѣзбоуаѣша i глаголюхште. наставьниче, наставьниче, погзѣвнемѣ. шнѣ же вѣстѣвъ запрѣти вѣтроу i влѣненью морьскоуемоу, i оулеже i вѣистѣ тишина. 25. i рече кз нѣмѣ. кѣде естѣ вѣра ваша; оубоѣвѣше же са уюаѣша са глаголюхште кз себѣ. кѣто оубо съ естѣ, ѣко i вѣтромѣ велитѣ i воеѣ i послушашѣтъ его; 26. i прѣвѣоша на землѣхѣ кенисаретскѣхѣ, ѣже естѣ ов онѣ полѣ галилеѣхѣ. 27. i ишѣаше имѣ на землѣхѣ сѣрѣте i мѣжѣ етерѣ отъ грааѣ, i же имѣаше вѣсѣ отъ лѣтъ многоѣ, i вѣ рнѣхѣ не облауааше са i вѣ храмѣ не живѣаше нѣ вѣ гробѣхѣ. 28. оузбрѣвѣ же исѣуса припадае кз нѣмоу i гласомѣ вельемѣ рече. убо естѣ мѣнѣ i тебѣ, исѣусе сѣине бога възшнѣего; молѣхѣ ти са, не мѣжи мене. 29. прѣштѣаше бо аоухови неустоимоу. i знаи отъ уловѣна. отъ многоѣ бо лѣтъ вѣзхѣшѣаше i, i вѣзлаахѣ i жи желѣзѣнѣ i патѣ i стрѣгаште i, i растрѣааше жѣзѣ гонимѣ вѣзѣваше вѣсомѣ снѣозѣ поустѣина. 30. вѣпроси же i исѣусѣ глагола. убо ти имѣ естѣ; онѣ же рече. леѣонѣ, ѣко вѣси мнози вѣниахѣ вѣ нѣ. 31. i молѣахѣ i, аа не повелитѣ имѣ вѣ безѣднѣхѣ ити. 32. вѣ же тоу стаао сѣини много пасомо вѣ горѣ, i молѣахѣ i, аа повелитѣ имѣ вѣ тѣ вѣнѣти. i повелѣ имѣ. 33. i ишѣаше вѣси отъ уловѣна вѣниаоша вѣ сѣинѣхѣ, i оустрѣми са стаао по брѣгоу вѣ езерѣ i истопе. 34. вниѣвѣше же пасѣште i вѣзвѣшѣе вѣжаша i вѣзвѣстиша вѣ градѣ i вѣ селѣхѣ. 35. i знахѣ же вѣнѣтъ вѣзвѣшааго i приахѣ кз исѣусови i оворѣхѣ сѣаашѣ уловѣна, iж негоже вѣси i знахѣ, овлѣуени и сѣмѣислашѣ при ногоу исѣусовоу, i оубоѣша са. 36. вѣзвѣстиша имѣ вѣнѣвѣше же i, нако сѣпасе са вѣсѣновѣвѣзѣ. 37. i молиша i вѣсь народѣ областѣ керѣсѣнѣскѣхѣ отити отъ нѣхѣ, ѣко страхомѣ вельемѣ оарѣжѣни бѣахѣ. онѣ же вѣлѣхѣ вѣ кораблѣ вѣзвѣрати са. 38. молѣаше же са емоу мѣжѣ, iж негоже i знае вѣсѣ, аа вѣн сѣ нимѣ вѣзлѣ. исѣусѣ же отзпоустѣ i глагола. 39. вѣзвѣрати са вѣ аомѣ твои i повѣаѣ, елико ти сѣтвори богѣ. i нае по вѣсѣмоу градоу проповѣдаѣхѣ, елико сѣтвори емоу богѣ. 40. вѣистѣ же, егда вѣзвѣрати са исѣусѣ, приахѣ i народѣ бѣахѣ бо вѣси уахште его.

III. CODEX ZOGRAPHENSIS. Luke VIII, 5-8.

5. i знае сѣмѣи сѣтѣ сѣмене своего, i егда сѣаше, ово паде при пяти i попзрано вѣистѣ, i пѣтица невѣсѣскѣхѣхѣ позоваша е. 6. а ароутое паде на камене i прозѣвѣ оуцѣше,

за не не ишѣаше вѣлѣзѣ. 7. а ароутое паде по среѣхѣ трѣнѣхѣ, i вѣздрѣасте трѣнѣхѣ i подави е. 8. а ароутое паде на землѣ доверѣ i прозѣвѣ сѣтвори плозѣ сѣторницѣхѣ. се глагола вѣзгласи. ишѣаи оуши слѣзашѣ аа слѣзѣшѣтъ.

SECTION 2. BULGARIAN

INTRODUCTION

The particular service of the Bulgarians to Slavonic literature and European literature generally lies in the fact that a form of language closely related to their own was used as the first literary language of the Slavs, namely Old Slavonic or Old Bulgarian, more precisely the language of the Macedonian Slavs of the tenth and eleventh centuries A.D. These Slavs were closely akin to the Slavs of Bulgaria, who absorbed the Uralo-altaic Turkic-speaking proto-Bulgars from Asia after the latter had invaded Europe under Asparuch in the seventh century (A.D. 680). This language was developed in Bulgaria when, after the disciples of SS. Cyril and Methodius had been driven out of Moravia, their pupil and disciple, St. Clement, took refuge in Macedonia and started spreading Christianity there. The philological and historical importance of the manuscripts preserved from this period and the Bulgarian Golden Age under Tsar Simeon (893-927) in the tenth century can hardly be exaggerated.

The development of the Bulgarian language falls into three periods: ninth to eleventh centuries—Old Bulgarian; twelfth to sixteenth centuries—Middle Bulgarian; sixteenth century onwards—Modern Bulgarian.

A period of subjugation to Byzantium of 168 years ushered in the Middle Bulgarian period, by the end of which most of the characteristically Bulgarian features of the language had established themselves, such as the loss of the cases, the general use of the definite article, etc. These features crept into the written language involuntarily—through the oversights and ignorance of the writers and scribes. The last Bulgarian Patriarch, Evtimij, in the fourteenth century undertook the task of "purifying" the language, including the orthography, and even forbade unlettered men to write books at all. It was this version of Middle Bulgarian, emanating from Tîrnovo, which was carried abroad in church books to Russia, Serbia, and Romania at the end of the fourteenth century. Important from the end of the fourteenth century point of view is the treatise on spelling by Konstantin of Kóstenec who earned the name of "the philosopher" at the court of the Serbian king, Stêvan Lazárević. He supported the reforms of Patriarch Evtimij and inaugurated similar ones in Serbia (the

"Resava" School). From his treatise light is thrown on many points of Middle Bulgarian pronunciation, e.g. that of *ѣ*, etc. After that followed the dark days of decline under Turkish domination.

In the sixteenth century there appeared a new kind of *Sbornik* (сборникъ) or almanach which provided popular reading matter in those times. They were also called *Damaskini* after *Damaskin Studit*, who wrote such works in popular Greek, and these in translation and adaptation (and with dialectical variations) were popular in Bulgaria till the nineteenth century. Attempts to "popularize" the language, i.e. to make the written language more like the spoken language of the people, were constantly countered by the influence and prestige of the church language which was regarded as the noblest and purest. This is noticeable in the writings of Father *Paŭsij*, the great eighteenth century patriot writer whose *Slav-Bulgarian History* appeared in 1762, and the grammarian and scholar *Neófit Rilski* at the beginning of the nineteenth century and *Konstantín Fótinov*.

It is interesting to note that *Rilski's Grammar of Bulgarian*, which appeared in 1835, was anticipated by some thirteen years by the Serbian scholar and reformer, *Vûk Kàradžić* who, encouraged in his studies by the Slovene *Kopitar*, in 1822 published his famous *Supplement (Dodatak) to the St. Petersburg Comparative Dictionaries of all Languages*, in which he gave the first description of the Bulgarian language. He based this on the language of Bulgars from *Razlóg*, S.W. Bulgaria or N.E. Macedonia, whom he met in Vienna; and it was this treatise that finally refuted the theory of the pioneer Czech scholar, *Dobrovský*, that Bulgarian is not a separate language, but merely a dialect of Serbocroatian.

Later another famous Czechoslovak scholar, *Šafarík*, after an exhaustive study of both modern and old Bulgarian, convinced himself of the Macedonian origin of Old Slavonic, contrary to the beliefs of *Kopitar* and *Miklošič* who held it to be the language of the old Pannonian Slavs. *Šafarík* also gave a competent sketch of Bulgarian in his *Slovanský národopis*. And it was a Russian scholar, *Grigoróvič*, who in 1848 first pointed out to the outside world the existence of the two main dialects, eastern and western, in Bulgarian, the traces of the nasal vowels still evident in certain Macedonian dialects, etc., later competently investigated by the Yugoslavs *Jágić* and *Oblák*, and in more modern times by the Frenchman *Mazon*, and the Russian *Seliščev* and the Bulgar *Mátov*,

etc. However, as early as 1824, Dr. P. Berón wrote a

Bukvar or primer in the modern Eastern dialect, and Dr. *Ivan Bogórov* in 1844 published his *First Bulgarian Grammar*, in which he advocated the use of the modern colloquial language. (These schools were parallel to the three schools of thought in Greece, the middle (compromise) school of which was led by the great reformer *Koraës*.) Nearly all the early writers kept to the Western dialect, but in the 'sixties, a great number of brilliant writers appeared in Eastern Bulgaria, such as the famous poets, publicists, and patriots *Pétko Slavéjkov*, *Ljubén Karavélov*, and *Hrísto Bótev*.

In 1869 the scholar *Marín Drinov* wrote an article in an important periodical published in Braila, in which he finally chose the Eastern dialect as the basis of the literary language, and put forward a fairly definite plan of orthography. Both before and after the liberation of Bulgaria in 1877 the modern Russian language was already beginning to exercise a particularly strong influence on the development of Bulgarian. It was an easy language from which to borrow. The first complete dictionary of Bulgarian, completed and published in 1904, by *Gérov* and *Pánchev*, shows strong Russian influence. A Russian scholar, *Duvernois*, had already attempted a Bulgarian-Russian dictionary in 1886-9. Indeed, as far back as the 1760's, the *Vlach* (Aromun) scholar *Hadži Danił* had published at *Voskopoje* (Moschopolis) in Albania a four language vocabulary giving Modern Greek, Aromun, "Bulgarian," and Albanian equivalents. The "Bulgarian" vocabulary in it was recommended by *Vûk Kàradžić* for its purity of language greater "than in any previous book." It was also quoted (transcribed in Latin characters) by *Martin Leake* in his *Researches in Greece*. Actually it is clear to anyone who knows the Macedonian dialects that the language there quoted as "Bulgarian" is really a very pure specimen of Macedonian from the *Bitola* (Bitolj) region, witness the accent indicated throughout among other evidence. (See chapter on Macedonian.)

In the years before the recent (1939-45) war Russian words, no less than borrowings from West European languages, Turkish and such Asiatic languages as Arabic and Persian, have been banned from Bulgarian as much as possible, the tendency being to keep the language as purely Slav--and primarily Bulgarian, as possible. An attempt at introducing a simplified spelling was made by the ill-fated *Stamboljiski* régime under the guidance of *Omarčevski* in

1920, but with the return of more reactionary governments a more conservative and less rational (historical) orthography was reintroduced. It may be said, however, that the retention of **ѣ** had the advantage of offering a conveniently ambiguous letter which the speaker could pronounce how he liked in accordance with his own dialect, the modern language having a fair admixture of Western features with the Eastern.

Some of the leading modern authorities on Bulgarian are Miletich, Cónov, and Mladénov. Both the latter have expressed themselves in favour of orthographical reform, Mladénov in general approving that of 1920, except for the "senseless" generalization of **ѣ** for **ѣ** and **ѣ** medially, an etymologically "shocking" feature not contained in the previous project of the Bulgarian Academy.

It is interesting to note how very few words of proto-Bulgarian origin have survived in the modern language. This is hardly surprising because the original invading Bulgars numbered only about 50 to 60 thousand, and were completely absorbed and "Slavized" by the Slav inhabitants of Bulgaria, then called Moesia and Thrace. For this reason Bulgarian is essentially a Slav language, and the Bulgars—an essentially Slav people, conscious of their common Slavonic heritage.

NOTE ON THE LATEST SPELLING REFORMS (1945)

Since the writing of this section Bulgaria has been liberated, and the Bulgarian orthography has been reformed and greatly simplified. Historic spelling has been abandoned in favour of a more phonetic spelling. Final mute **ѣ** has been abolished, while **ѣ** now does duty for both vocalic (medial) **ѣ** and **ѣ**, now also wholly abolished. Final mute **ѣ** has likewise been dropped. For **ѣ**, as mentioned, **ѣ** is now regularly substituted, but **ѣ** is now written **ѣ** (= they are). For **ѣ** one now writes **ѣ** or **ѣ**, according to whether **ѣ** or **ѣ** was pronounced with **ѣ** as the old spelling. The dialect of N.E. Bulgaria has been adopted as the model for the correct pronunciation of the old **ѣ**, so that roughly the old rule about the hardness or softness of the subsequent syllable deciding whether one pronounces **ѣ** or **ѣ** respectively, holds good. Thus one writes **мѣко** (= milk), **трѣба** (= one must), but **пѣя** (= I sing), **тѣсен** (= narrow); **бѣл** (= white, masc. sing.) but **бѣли** (= white, pl.); **мѣсто** (= place), however—plural: **мѣста**, where former **ѣ** was unstressed. (See p.82f., "Pronunciation.")

As the British student is still bound to have to deal with books and dictionaries in the old spelling, which prevailed between the two world wars, I have left my explanations of it here in square brackets []. Part of the texts are also given in the old spelling as well, for comparative purposes. But the examples in the grammar have been modernized.

There is no doubt that the new spelling makes Bulgarian much easier both for the native and the foreign learner alike. The simplification is enormous. Only the speakers of the Western dialects who pronounce former **ѣ** always as **ѣ** have something new to learn. And the eye will have to get used to the new feature of the alternating vowels **ѣ** and **ѣ** where formerly **ѣ** was written: **бѣл**, **бѣли** (= white); **бѣя** (= I was), **бѣме** (= he was), cf. Polish—**miasło** (= town), Loc.: **w mieście**; **wziął** (= he took) but masc. pl. **wzięli**; or German—**Buch**, **Bücher**, **Hand**, **Hände**.

THE BULGARIAN ALPHABET

Bulgarian.

Approximate English Equivalent.

А	а	(more open and forward than) <i>ah</i>
Б	б	<i>b</i>
В	в	<i>v</i>
Г	г	<i>g</i> as in "go".
Д	д	<i>d</i>
Е	е	<i>e</i> in "met".
Ж	ж	<i>s</i> in "pleasure", <i>zh</i> .
З	з	<i>z</i>
И	и	<i>ee</i> in "meet".
Й	й	<i>y</i> in "boy", <i>y</i> in "yes".
К	к	<i>k</i>
Л	л	<i>l</i> in both "leaf" and "table".
М	м	<i>m</i>
Н	н	<i>n</i>
О	о	<i>o</i> in "hot".
П	п	<i>p</i>
Р	р	<i>r</i> rolled.
С	с	<i>s</i>
Т	т	<i>t</i>
У	у	<i>oo</i> , or <i>u</i> in "rule".
Ф	ф	<i>f</i>
Х	х	<i>ch</i> in "loch".
Ц	ц	<i>ts</i> pronounced together as in "bits".
Ч	ч	<i>ch</i> in "church".
Ш	ш	<i>sh</i>
Щ	щ	<i>sh t</i>

Bulgarian. Approximate English Equivalent.

- *ъ [silent finally], medially like *a* in "about", *e* in southern English "bitter", phonetic *e*.
- *[ъ usually silent, a sign of softening—see below; with masc. definite article = jъ, e.g. кѡнѣтъ (now spelt кѡнѣтъ) pron. кѡнѣтъ (phon. 'kɔnɛt) (= the horse)].
- ѡ In modern orthography ѡ occurs only in ѡ, pronounced like *yo* in "yonder", phon. jo; used medially and finally.
- *[ѣ *e* in "met", or "yah", see below.]
 ю "you".
 я "yah".
- *[ѧ *a* in "about" = medial ѧ, phonetic *ic e*.]

*See introductory note on the latest orthographical reform.

Old Slavonic letters not in the modern Bulgarian alphabet are:—

ѡ, ѣ, ѧ (now y), ѡ, ѡ, ѧ (now я), ѣ, ѧ, ѧ, ѧ, and the Greek letters ѧ, ѡ, ѡ, ѡ. Now also: ѧ.

Russian letters not in Bulgarian are:—

ѡ, ѣ, ѧ. ѡ is pronounced differently.

Serbian letters not in Bulgarian are:—

ђ, ј, ѡ, ѧ, ѧ, ѡ.

[Only ѧ was a peculiarly Bulgarian letter, preserved for etymological reasons, and indicating the place of the old nasal vowel.]

PRONUNCIATION

The *Accent* in Bulgarian is a strong, purely stress accent, and can fall on any syllable in the word, including the last. It agrees in position with the accent in Russian in well over half the total vocabulary, e.g.:—

нагрѣда = prize
 налѡг = tax
 обрѣто = back (adv.)

In a small proportion of words the Bulgarian accent agrees in position with that in Serbocroatian, e.g.:—

грѣница = frontier, Russian—граница
 нѣбор = composition (typ.)

In some instances the same unexpected stress position is to be found as in Slovenian, e.g.:—

месѡ = meat, Sln. mesŏ
 морѣ = sea, Sln. morjê.

There are instances where alternative variants of stress are possible, e.g. in the Aorist tense of verbs; this accounts for a few words bearing two accents in this text.

The Vowels

The Bulgarian vowels are: *a*, *e*, *и*, *o*, *y*, *ъ*, [*ѧ* (= ѡ)] and the two "yotated" or *j*-vowels *ю* and *я*, [and lastly *ѣ*. This was pronounced either *e* or *ya*, in the literary language according to no absolutely consistent rule, though generally "softness" in the subsequent syllable or ending, i.e. the presence of *e*, *и*, or *ъ*, caused a *ѣ* in the preceding syllable to be pronounced *e*, e.g. лѣто = лѣто (this is now the modern spelling) "summer", but прѡлѣтъ = прѡлѣтъ (now written simply прѡлет) "spring"; however, вѣкъ "century" was pronounced бек (which is also the modern spelling). *ѣ* was never pronounced *я* when unstressed or, under stress, before the *chuintantes* ж, ч, ш, щ, or another vowel.]

Ѣ is the short or glide *j* vowel, phonetically *j* or *j*, equivalent to the Russian Ѣ and the Serbian *j*, and like the latter may be used initially, as in Йѡсиф (= Joseph). For *j*o medially and finally ѡ is used, e.g. рѡн = sole. The combination *je* does not occur in the literary language except in words of foreign origin, such as иепѣх = priest, phon. je'rei.

The only true diphthongs in Bulgarian are those with this *j* glide as the second element, e.g. крѣх (= end), бѡх (= fight), рѣх (= so), etc.

In Bulgarian the yotated vowels *я* and *ю* are pronounced with a full yot initially and after vowels, e.g.:—

яѣцѣ = egg вѣтел = sculptor
 юздѣ = bridle воѣвам = I make war

But when *я*, *ю* and also *ѡ* are preceded by consonants,

they are pronounced themselves like a, y and o respectively, but cause the preceding consonant¹ to be pronounced soft or palatalized. The softening is not as great as in Russian. It affects all consonants except the *chuintantes* ш, ж, ч and дж, which are always hard. E.g.:—

бял = white (masc.) гюл = rose
 тя = she гюл = marsh
 тютюн = tobacco актьор = actor

я, like а, is pronounced ъ in verbal and article terminations, and я then = ъъ = phon. jə and palatalizes preceding consonants, e.g.:—

градъ = the city (Oblique case), pron.

градъ, gra'də

коня = the horse (Oblique case), pron.

'koŋə

трѣгнат = they start out, Pfv., pron.

трѣгнат, 'trɛɡnɐt

тѣрсят = they seek, pron. 'tɛrʂɐt

The vowels e and и also cause velars *only* to be pronounced soft before them, e.g.:—

керемѣда = tile блага = sweet, kind (plur.)
 кисел = sour хигиѣна = hygiene

The vowels e and и also cause л to be pronounced as medium л before them, as in Serbocroatian and Czech, e.g.:—

лѣсно = easily лѣжа = I lick

while before я, ю and ъо л is pronounced soft л, practically as in Russian:—

лѣлка = cradle лѣло! = auntie!

кѣля = I slaughter, pron. 'koɭə лѣто = summer

and before the "hard" vowels а, о, у, ъ, [ɤ], it is pronounced as a hard л, as in Russian, e.g.:—

лѣком = greedy лук = onion
 лош = bad лѣк [лѣкѣ] = bow

Unstressed vowels, similarly (but not identically) to Russian, are often modified, viz. а to ъ, о to у (this is a characteristically Bulgarian feature!), but this is censured in the literary language as dialectal, e.g.:—

¹With consonant groups, palatalization affects only the consonant immediately preceding the yotated vowel and not the whole group; e.g. in сгъста (= I thicken, trans.) the second c is hard, phon. zɡɐ'sta.

гласувам (= I vote), pronounced гласуѣвъм
 освѣн (= except), pronounced усвѣн

e and и also tend to be "centralized" or less distinctly pronounced, especially in some dialects, and also у, but the modification is not nearly as noticeable as it is in Russian, e.g.:—

ѣсен = autumn
 извинѣвам = I excuse
 удѣбно = convenient

ѣ, ѣ [and ɤ].

[As has already been indicated, ѣ and ѣ, though silent finally, were used as vowels medially (though never initially until the recent reform), e.g.:—

прѣвъ = first
 градѣтъ = the city
 краѣлътъ pron. краѣлѣтъ = the king]

These are now written:—

прѣвъ
 градѣтъ, but
 краѣлѣтъ,

because silent final ѣ and ѣ have been abolished and only ѣ is used as a vowel medially. [ѣ was the sign of "softening" for forming the Oblique case of masc. nouns with the article (see below), e.g. конѣ (= (a) horse), (now кон), Nom., but вѣждам конѣ (= I see the horse), not конѣ. In nouns ending in a consonant ѣ was often the sign of feminine gender, e.g. нощѣ (= night), нощѣра (the night), (all fem. nouns formerly ending in ѣ have the definite article stressed and the ѣ silent)], now: нощ, нощѣра, see below.

[ɤ, the phonetic equivalent of medial ѣ, was never mute and could occur initially and finally as well as medially, e.g.:—

ѣгълѣ = an angle
 вѣтрѣ = inside
 аслѣ = actually]

now—

ѣгъл
 вѣтрѣ
 аслѣ

[These three letters ѣ, ѣ, ɤ, as well as а and я in unstressed positions, rendered the so-called "neutral vowel", phonetic ə, see also p. 82.]
 In the new orthography, owing to the abolition

of ж, ъ now occurs initially in a few words, e.g.:—

ѣгъл

ъ is still used medially and finally for the *j* consonant before о (see above), e.g.:—

Кольо а man's name
Кьолн = Cologne

(As in Serbian, all former ѡ's have developed into ѡ's, e.g.:—

син = son)

The Consonants

The *Consonants* in Bulgarian do not present any particular difficulties. They are of the usual "continental" Slavonic-Romance non-aspirated type, as opposed to the aspirated English type. As in English, as well as in other S. and W. Slav languages, н is pronounced ѧ, i.e. as *ng* in "sing", when followed by velars and, with some speakers, in other positions, e.g.:—

сѣнка (= shadow), pron. сѣѡка

The difference, as from Russian, in the pronunciation of ш (as *sh*t) should also be noted. As in Russian, the *English j* sound, rendered in Serbian ш, is written рж in Bulgarian.

As in all other Slav languages except Serbo-croatian and Ukrainian sometimes, final voiced consonants in the spelling are pronounced unvoiced, e.g.:—

град (= city), pron. грат
зѣб (= tooth), pron. зѣп
нож (= knife), pron. ном
аз (= I), pron. ас
рев (= roar), pron. реф

In mixed groups of consonants, assimilation is generally regressive, the nature of the second one deciding whether the whole group shall be voiced or unvoiced, e.g.:—

втор (= second), pron. фтор

Double consonants in compound words are pronounced as long consonants, e.g.:—

бѣззѣб = toothless
оттам = from there
стѣнна = mural (fem.)

Colloquially, final ст[ъ] and ѣд[ъ] are some-

times pronounced simply с,¹ e.g.:—

младос for младост[ъ] (= youth)

Also medial ш is sometimes pronounced simply as ш, e.g.:—

мощно (= powerfully), pron. мѡшно.

тд is reduced to д as in

педесѣт = fifty

where colloquially the final т is also dropped, as in the other numerals with this ending.

в is dropped colloquially in the group вс¹:—

всѣчки = all (plur.), всѣки = every

(For the softening of consonants before я, ю, and ѡ see above, under "*The Vowels*".)

THE BULGARIAN DIALECTS

Bulgarian dialects do not lend themselves readily to classification and subdivision, because on the territory of Bulgaria proper they present a certain homogeneous unity, even though the details of the picture, when examined closely, are very varied and confusing. In this brief survey we do not take into account the dialects of Greek and Yugoslav Macedonia, which are closely allied to Bulgarian and are briefly described in our separate chapter on Macedonian. These Macedonian dialects have many features which also occur in various Bulgarian dialects, but mostly not in literary Bulgarian, from which they are sharply differentiated, particularly by accent and phonetic system. These features, together with the growing literature in Macedonian, have contributed to the establishment of a separate Macedonian literary language, based on the central and western dialects of Macedonia.

On the territory of Bulgaria proper many features, such as accent shifts and vowel changes, occur in scattered and disconnected regions all over the country. But in one respect all Bulgarian dialects are uniform: in all of them the accent is free, i.e. it can occur on any syllable in a word, even in Bulgarian Macedonia (the south-western corner of Bulgaria).

Three other features enable one to see fairly clear divisions in the Bulgarian dialects, as Cǎnev

¹Not recommended in the literary language, where the pronunciation voiced в, not ф, is preferred in вс—.

has shown:—

- (1) The various developments of O.S. *k* (C.S. *č*).
- (2) The various developments of C.S. *tj* (and *ktj*) and *dj*.
- (3) The various developments of O.S. *x* (C.S. *q*).

(1) *k*: By this criterion the dialects are subdivided into three main regions: Western, North-Eastern and South-Eastern. West of a line running obliquely across Bulgaria from N.N.E. to S.S.W. and starting from a point a little west of Nikòpol on the Danube, running east of Plòven and Etropòle and forming a big bulge eastward round Čèpino and then running west of Razlòg and Mèlnik and east of Pètrič to the Greek frontier—west of such a line original O.S. *k* develops into the vowel *e*. (In the north-west of this region this *e* has a variant *be*.)

The larger eastern half of Bulgaria is divided in two by a line starting a little south of Pàzardžik and running east, south of Plòvdiv, Čirpàn, Nòvo Sèlo, the villages of Borìsovo and Slìvovo (south of Jàmbol) to the Black Sea south of Burgàs. South of this line *k* develops in both stressed and unstressed positions into various varieties of 'a' (*я*); (these are the *пѣньки рѣньки* according to Mladènov). North of this line *k* develops into *я* only when stressed and followed by a hard consonant or syllable; otherwise it is pronounced *e* (with various shades of clarity). This is the North-Eastern feature adopted as the rule for literary Bulgarian. There are naturally transitional stages, e.g. the pronunciation *ä* (*ä* as in French, according to Vùk Kàradžić) round Razlòg, and 'ä' round Pavlikjàne.

(2) C.S. *tj* (also *ktj*) and *dj*: These generally develop in Bulgarian into *št* (*m*) and *žd* (*ж*) respectively, one of the features peculiar to Bulgarian. But in S.W. Bulgaria, south-west from Sàmokov and into Bulgarian Macedonia up to the frontiers, we have what Cònev regards as the older pronunciations preserved: *šč* (*шч*) for *št* (*m*) and phon. *žč* (*жч*) for *žd* (*ж*) (as also in South Macedonia). In the extreme west and north-west of Bulgaria, however, *tj* (and *ktj*) develop into *ч*, phon. *ч'* (hard) and *dj* into *ш*, phon. *ш'* (hard), as in the Kòsovo-Mòrava (Eastern) dialect in Serbia.

(3) *x*—develops in Bulgarian generally into *ъ* in the roots of words and into a in terminations (so

in literary Bulgarian).¹ But in a large area of Central Bulgaria east, south-east, south and south-west of Sòfia, including the towns of Vràca, Orhanè, Pirdòp, Ihtimàn, Sàmokov (and well beyond it to the south-east), Dùbica, Kjustendil and Ràdomir, *x* develops into *a*. Also, in the central Rhodope Mountains south-west of Plòvdiv, *x* develops into a sound between *o* and *a*, noted *oa* and *ö* and *ã*. This area extends into Bulgarian-speaking areas of Greek Thrace. In a few isolated areas in E. Bulgaria (and in Macedonia) *x* develops into a variety of *e* (noted *ê* or *ë*).

The term *šòpski* (шòпски) is not a scientific dialectological term, but is used popularly to indicate the speech of the area around and to the west of Sòfia.

Many of the Western dialects are noted for their clearer pronunciation of unstressed vowels. This feature is one of their main contributions to the model pronunciation of literary Bulgarian, as advocated also by Cònev in whose terminology they are called central.²

VOWEL GRADATION AND VOWEL LENGTHENING

As in other Slavonic languages, in Bulgarian too both Ablaut or vowel gradation and vowel lengthening play their full part in word formation.

Vowel gradation:—

да отнесà = that I should carry away;

прѣнос = contribution;

зов = a call: прѣзив = an appeal;

цѣфтà = I blossom: цвят = flower;

дъх = breath: дух = spirit: дъшам = I breathe.

Lengthening:—

говоря = I speak: отговорям = I answer;

нося = I carry: пренасям = I transfer, or пренясам.

SLAVONIC CHARACTERISTICS

1. Metathesis:³ a regular feature, e.g.:—

град = city мляко = milk, formerly мляко

¹ Pronounced *а*, see p. 80.

² See Б. Цоневъ: История на българския езикъ, Sofia, 1940, vol. i, p. 414. ³ See p. 40, No. 1.

владѣя = I rule рѣбота = work, thing
 бряг = shore, pl. брѣговѣ; брѣгѣт = the shore
 2. The 1st Palatalization:—

к, г, х, to ч, ж, ш before е, и, ъ, [ѣ from
 ѣ], e.g.:—

пекѣ = I bake, печѣх = I was baking (Impf.)
 мѣга = I can, мѣхех = I was able (Impf.)
 страх = fear, страшен = dreadful.

2a. As in Serbocroatian, ц and з when originating from к and г respectively, also change to ч and ж, as in the 1st Palatalization, e.g.:—

княз = prince, княже Voc. sing., cf. княгѣ-
 ня = princess, княжество = principality
 Отец = Father, Отец! Voc. sing.

3. The 2nd Palatalization:—

к, г, х, to ц, з, с before е and и, when originating from I.E. diphthongs with *i* as the second element: *ai*, *ei*, *oi*, but not before -и in the plural of fem. nouns and adjectives, e.g.:—

ръка = hand, formerly рѣка, ръцѣ = hands
 залѣг = pledge, залѣзи Nom. plur.
 сиромѣх = a poor man, сиромѣси Nom. plur.
 вѣлк = wolf, вѣлци Nom. plur.

4. The influence of the *j* element, compared with that in Serbocroatian, is rather restricted in Bulgarian, where there are no Comparative adjectives in -*j* and the *j* in Past Participles Passive of *i*-verbs seems to be lost. This yotation can be observed in the case of:—

к and г which change, as usual, to ч and ж respectively, e.g.:—

плакѣх = I wept (Aor.), плача = I weep, from
 *плакѣж
 лѣгѣх = I lied (Aor.), лѣжа = I lie, from
 *лѣгѣж

с which changes, as usual, to ш, e.g.:—

писѣх = I wrote (Aor.), пѣша = I write, from
 *писѣж

and з, which changes, as usual, to ж, e.g.:—

мазѣх = I smeared (Aor.), мажа = I smear,
 from *мазѣж

In the case of the other consonants, these remain unchanged for *i*-verbs before the -en ending of

the Past Partic. Pass., while in the 1st pers. sing. of the Pres. the *j* element is preserved by the final vowel being written я (formerly spelt ѣ), e.g.:—

изпѣрен = dispatched, Pfve. Pres. изпѣря, but also изпѣране = dispatch
 извѣден = extracted, Pfve. Pres. извѣдя, but also извѣждам, Ipive. Pres., рождѣние = birth (see below, Features Characteristic of Bulgarian, No. 1), also рѣждане = birth, delivery, but родѣн = born.

хвѣлен = praised, Impfve. Pres. хвѣля
 напѣлен = filled, Pfve. Pres. напѣля
 стѣрен = made, Pfve. Pres. стѣря

Labials also remain unchanged, e.g.:—

земѣ = earth тѣрѣж = I suffer
 трѣбѣне = trumpeting вѣрѣж = I go

Words like оживѣние (= animation) are Russian loan words; the corresponding adjective is оживѣн.

The group ст also remains:—

прекрѣстя = I make the sign of the cross (Pres. Pfve.), Past Part. Pass. прекрѣстен, but we have—
 прекрѣщѣние = nicknaming. (Cf. below, Features Characteristic of Bulgarian, No. 1.)

5. There are many cases of the dropping of consonants from certain groups. Besides the long established С. and Е. Slav—

плел = wove, for *плетль, etc.

we have—

дѣграм (or вдѣграм) = I lift, beside движеніе = motion

влак = train, but облак = cloud

творѣ = I create, but стѣря = I do (Pfve. Pres.)

загѣна = I perish (Pfve. Pres.), with Impfve. Pres. загѣвам or загѣнвам.

(гѣтѣя = I prepare, cook, бесѣдвам = I converse, give examples of similar simplifications in Bulgarian by dropping vowels. We even have чеп for чѣрен = black, in folk poetry.)

6. The opposite process of epenthesis, or insertion of consonants, is also to be found in such words as:—

ноздри = nostrils

нѣго = him (full form)

знахѣр = fortune-teller

FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF BULGARIAN

- * marks exclusively Bulgarian features.
+ marks features shared with Macedonian.

1.* Common Slav *t + j*, *d + j* become *щ*, жд respectively, e.g.:—

свещ = candle
рождѣн ден = birthday
между = between

2.* Common Slav *kt + j* also becomes *щ*:—

нощ = night
мощ = might (subst.)

cf. more modern—

къща (= house), cf. Macedonian куќа.

But, in contrast to Serbocroatian, foreign loan words preserve the combination *k + j* or front vowel:—

къшѣ = corner, cf. Serbocr. hōmak
килим = carpet, cf. Serbocr. hīlim

similarly—

гюл = rose, cf. Serbocr. hūl

3.* Development of the nasal vowels:—

C.S./O.S. ѡ, formerly preserved orthographically, now written phonetically ѡ (= ə):—

[пѡтъ, now] пѡтъ = way
[рѡкѡ, now] рѡкѡ = hand

The modern spelling of the Present tense, however, is an exception, e.g.:—

мѡга = I can, 3rd pers. plur. мѡгат, cf.
O.S. могѡ, могѡтъ

+C.S./O.S. ѡ develops into e:—

пет = five
ред = order, as in Serbocroatian.

4.* C.S./O.S. ѣ, formerly partly preserved orthographically (see above, Section on Pronunciation, page 83), now я or е (cf. Polish):—

[свѣтъ, now] свѣтъ = world

but—

[врѣме, now] врѣме = time
[мѣсецъ, now] мѣсецъ = moon, month

5.* C.S./O.S. ѡ [formerly consistently preserved orthographically and] pronounced as ə, the neutral vowel, medially (see above, Pronunciation):—

сън = dream [formerly сънѡ]
мѡх = moss [" мѡхѡ]

6. [ѡ formerly preserved orthographically and pronounced medially, in the Nom. sing. of soft masc. nouns with the definite article (see above, Pronunciation):—

e.g. краљъ = king, pron. крал, phon. kraɫ,
now spelt крал, but краљъ = the king
(Nom.), pron. краљѡтъ, now spelt
краљѡтъ.]

ѡ is used mostly in spelling foreign words, in rendering, for instance, the Russian ѡ and the German ѡ sounds, the resulting sound in Bulg. being [jo! (cf. Ukrainian):—

актьѡр = actor гѡл = bog (< Turkish: göl = lake)
Кѡлнѡ = Köln, Cologne

+In strong position C.S./O.S. ѡ develops into e: ден = day, O.S. дѡнѡ.

7. ѡ used as the "fill-vowel", as in Old Slavonic, but even more frequently (cf. the pronunciation of Russian ѡ fill-vowel and Slovenian e = ə):—

мѡзѡк = brain ѡгън = fire
добѡр = good (masc. sing.) егѡѡзм = selfishness

Occasionally e is used as a fill-vowel:—

[пѡсенѡ, now] пѡсен = song

8.* Common Slav hard and soft vocalic ѡ, ѡ' and ѣ, ѣ', and also C.S. ѡ, ѡ' and рѡ, рѡ' are confused and develop respectively into ѡ' and рѡ' in monosyllables, and in polysyllables before two or more consonants, but into ѡ and рѡ in polysyllables before single consonants. There are many exceptions to this rule, especially for ѡ in its various forms—due to analogy, in compound words, etc. (Bulgarian ѡ, ѡ' and рѡ, рѡ' contain the vowel ѡ (ə) and are not identical with the true vocalic ѡ of Czech and Slovak and with the true vocalic рѡ of these two languages and Serbocroatian). E.g.:—

From ѡ : скръѡ = affliction, sorrow, but
скръѡен = sorrowful
" ѣ : прѡв = first (masc.) but
" ѣ : прѡвѡ = first (fem.)
" ѣ : прѡст = finger

- From *ръ* : *кръв* = blood, but
кръвав = bloody
 " *ръ* : *кръст* = cross and
крѣстя = I christen
 " *ѣ* : *тлъст* = fat, but
дѣлг = debt and
длъжен = owing, due
 " *ѣ* : *млък* = hush!, but
мълча = I am silent
 " *ѣ* : *вълк* = wolf, plur. *вѣлци*.
ѣ : *пѣлен* = full (masc.), with fill-
vowel, fem. *пѣлна*.
 " *лъ* : *плът* = flesh, and so *плѣтски* =
carnal
 " *лъ* : *сълза* = tear

9.† Initial *e* instead of *je*:—

- ѣзеро* = lake
e = is
едѣн = one (masc.)

10. Vowel reduction in unaccented syllables, especially the characteristic changing of unaccented *o* to *y* (see "Pronunciation" above).

11.* Reduplication of Personal Pronouns for emphasis (as in French and Spanish), e.g.:—

Мѣне ме мѣма не дѣва = mother does not give me (to...)

In Macedonian this is the regular practice also when there is *no* emphasis.

12.† The loss of the declensions, see below.

13.* The development of a single definite article, see below.

14.† The loss of the Infinitive in *-ti*, regularly replaced by clauses introduced by *да* (cf. Serbocroatian where this usage is not quite so widespread).

15.† Formation of Comparative adjectives by prefixing *по-* to the Positive degree, see below.

16.† Development of new compound tenses in "Renarration" (преизказване—see below), e.g.:—

пѣмел (Imperfect Past Part. Act.) *сѣм* = they say I was writing

17.† The preservation in conversation of the Aorist and Imperfect tenses. Cf. Lusatian.

18.* *ме* + Pres. Pfv. or Impfv. for the Future tense, see below: e.g.:—

ме дѣдат = they shall come

The following features, thought not exclusively Bulgarian, also characterize the language:—

19. As in Serbocroatian and Slovenian, *ы* has developed into *и*, see above "Pronunciation", p. 86: e.g.:—

ти = thou

20. Palatalized *r* has become hard except before *я* and *ю*: e.g.:—

морѣ = sea, phon. *мо'рѣ*, but *цѣрѣ* = the king (Oblique case), phon. *'цѣрѣ*

21. Free accent, as in E. Slav—on *any* syllable.

22. In common with S. and E. Slav languages, the dropping of final dentals of roots before the *л* of the Past Part. Act.: e.g.:—

плел = wove, from **плелл*

23. In common with S. and E. Slav, original *kv*, *gv* become *цв*, *зв*: e.g.:—

цвят = flower
звездѣ = star

24. As in other S. and E. Slav languages, palatal consonants can change a subsequent *o* in a termination to *e*: e.g.:—

вол = ox, *волѣве* = oxen (plur.)

but—

брой = number, *брѣве* = numbers (from *брѣвесе*)

25. Reduction of unstressed verbal ending *-ува-* to *-ва-* (cf. Byelorussian), e.g.:—

вѣрвам = I believe, *слѣдва* = he follows

26.† -*т* termination for 3rd pers. plur. Pres.

(see below "Morphology"), as in Russian and O.S. Bulgarian verbs, however, have only *-ат* or *-ят*.

The student will observe that from the phonetic and phonological point of view, Bulgarian is closer to Old Slavonic than other Slav languages.

MORPHOLOGY

The morphology of modern Bulgarian occupies a special place among the Slavonic languages of today. It is a partly simplified version of the general Slavonic system, and reminds one of other modern Balkan languages, such as modern Greek, and West European languages. Points 12-18 in the preceding

section on the characteristics of Bulgarian sum up its main features. Mladénov considers that the simplification of the substantival system, the development of the postpositive definite article, as well as the elaboration of the verbal system, are part of a general Bulgarian striving after precision and clarity, which is a tendency inherent to Indo-European languages from earliest times.

THE TREATMENT OF NOUNS IN BULGARIAN

As in other Slav languages, the three genders survive in full, and of the three old Numbers the Dual is lost as in all other Slav languages except Slovenian and Lusatian. But the loss of the declensions with their seven cases is peculiar to Bulgarian and Macedonian only. It is true that traces of certain oblique cases, e.g. the Dative, survive in folk poetry, and that traces of the old five declensions can be observed in the formations of the Plurals and in the Vocatives singular masculine. But for practical purposes, in the modern literary language we have to deal with only two cases in *masculine singular nouns with the definite article*—the Nominative and the Oblique case, which latter does duty for the Accusative and all the other cases (except the Vocative) with the aid of various prepositions, as in English and the Romance languages (cf. English, he, him, to him, of him, etc.). The use of the same preposition *на* for both the Genitive and the Dative cases may be considered to seem contrary to Mladénov's contention, but in practice ambiguity due to this usage seems to be rare. In the feminine and neuter genders and in the plural of all genders with or without the definite article even the distinction between the Nominative and the Oblique case does not exist; while the Vocative (sing. only!) has a separate form in the masc. and fem. genders only. And so we have for masc. sing. nouns *without* article the following constructions, where the other Slavonic languages would use various cases:—

Nom. sing. masc.	град = city	учител = teacher	път = road
Voc. sing. masc.	граде	учителю	(пъте)
Acc. sing. masc.			

Виждам град, учител, път = I see a city, teacher, road.

Gen. sing. masc.

Назвѣнието на град, учител, път = The name of a city, teacher, road.

Dat. sing. masc.

Давам на град, учител, (път) = I give to a city, teacher, (road).

Instr. sing. masc.

Говоря с учител = I am speaking with a teacher
Писа с молив = I am writing with a pencil

Loc. sing. masc.

Живя в град = I live in a city
Приказвам за учител = I am talking about a teacher

And likewise in the plural. Feminine and neuter nouns also make no difference between the Nom. and the Oblique case, e.g.:—

жена = a woman
Виждам жена = I see a woman

[Bulgarian used to preserve the distinction between hard and soft nouns in the Nom. sing. In the masculine the hard ended in *ъ*, while the soft ended in *ь* (which was also mute and without any phonetic effect finally). But] in the Oblique case the soft masc. nouns *with the definite article*¹ have instead of a in the singular. In the Plural there is no regular difference.

Feminine hard nouns end in *а*, while fem. soft nouns end in *я* or a consonant [formerly in *ъ*], but this makes no difference in the plurals (see below). In the neuter, hard nouns end in *о* and soft in *е* with the same difference in the plur. as in other Slavonic languages: *-а* for hard and *-я* for soft nouns as a rule, but see below!

Plural

The plural of most masc. nouns, except monosyllables, ends in *-и*:—

молив = pencil, plur. моливи
учител = teacher " учители
порой = torrent " порої
слуга = servant " слуги
съдия = judge " съдии

Masculine nouns ending in a velar undergo the

¹See p. 101, also pp. 84, 85 and 93 (No. 6).

2nd Palatalization:—

войник = soldier, plur. войници
 съпруг = husband " съпрузи
 сиромъх = poor man " сиромъси

Nouns ending in -(н)ин, drop the -ин in the plural and end in -(н)и:—

англичанин = Englishman, plur. англичани
 турчин = Turk " турци

Exceptions:—

домакин = host, plur. домакѝни
 господѝн = Mr. " господа

Some nouns with ъ or е in the final syllable, drop these vowels in the plural:

ловѝц = hunter, plur. ловци
 кѝсѝм = a hair " кѝсми
 but: кѝрен = root " кѝрени
 пѝсък = scream " пѝсъци

Notice: дѝдо = grandfather, plur. дедѝ¹ = ancestors, but дѝдовци = grandfathers; and—

чѝчо = "uncle", plur. чѝчовци

Most *monosyllables* have their plural ending in -ове (variously stressed):—

хляб = bread, loaf, plur. хлябове
 вол = ox " волѝве
 град = city " градовѝ;

with soft stems, -еве:—

брой = number, plur. брѝеве

(See "Features Characteristic of Bulgarian", No. 24.)

Some common exceptions with plural in -и:—

роб = slave, гост = guest, зѝб = tooth,
 трѝн = thorn, прѝст = finger

and, with the 2nd Palatalization:—

вѝлк = wolf, plur. вѝлци
 рак = lobster " раѝи
 грѝк = a Greek " грѝци

A few (soft) nouns have their plural in -ѝ:—

мѝж = man, plur. мѝжѝ, also крал = king,
 кон = horse, княз = prince, цар =
 czar, king.

¹Literary, poetical.

A few nouns (not animate) have a *neuter* plural in -ица (not stressed):—

край = end, plur. краѝца, also път = road,
 сън = dream.

път meaning "time" after numbers, etc., has plural in -и:

два (мнѝго) пѝти = twice (many) times.

крак = leg, has a (neuter) plural: кракѝ.

After *all* numerals the "Secondary Plural" (the old Dual) is used with masc. nouns:—

пет града = five cities

and also after кѝлко? = how many?, тѝлкова = so many,
 нѝколко = a few.

The Plural of all feminine nouns regularly ends in и:—

Hard:— женѝ = woman, plur. женѝ

Soft:— земѝ = land, plur. земѝ
 кост = bone, plur. кѝсти
 нощ = night, plur. нѝщи

Some feminine nouns ending in a consonant preceded by ъ or е, drop these vowels in the plural:—

мѝсл = thought, plur. мѝсли
 пѝсен = song " пѝсни

Exceptions are:—

ръкѝ = hand, plur. ръцѝ
 ногѝ¹ = leg " носѝ²

(survivals of the old Dual forms.)

(As in E. and W. Slav, the *а*-declension has predominated.)

In the neuter the plural of hard stems in -о ends in -а, e.g.:—

селѝ = village, plur. селѝ, ѝзеро = lake,
 plur. езерѝ

Soft stems in -е have their plural in -ѝ or -ета, e.g.:—

полѝ = field, plur. полѝ or полѝта
 обѝяснѝние = explanation, plur. обѝяснѝния (only)

¹Dialectal for крѝк, pl. крѝкѝ.

²Literary.

Verbal nouns in -не have their plural in -ния:—

искане = wanting, plur. искания

After ц and щ the plural is in -а, e.g.:—

сърце = heart, plur. сърца

училище = school, plur. училища

There are many survivals of the old consonantal neuter stems and even an extension of their use in the plural ending, as in полета above:—

време = time, plur. времена

небе = sky, plur. небеса

телё = calf, plur. телёта

рамо = shoulder, plur. рамена

момиче = girl, plur. момичета

(-че is one of the regular endings for neuter diminutives, the other being sing. -це, plur. -ца, e.g.:—

оченце = little eye, plur. оченца.)

The plural of дете = child, is деца.

Neuter nouns formed from adjectives have a masc.-fem. plural in -и:—

животно = animal, plur. животни

насекомо = insect, plur. насекоми

Око = eye, and ухо = ear, show survivals of the feminine Dual form for their plural: очи, уши.

Vocative

Separate endings exist for the Voc. sing. of masc. and fem. nouns. These are largely the same as those in Serbo-cr.:—

-е for hard masc. nouns,

-ю for soft masc. nouns, and

-о for feminines, e.g.:—

господи́не! = Sir!

кра́лю! = o King!

ма́йко! = mother!

The endings -о for hard masc. nouns and -о or -е for soft masc. nouns are also used:—

глупе́цо! = fool!

войни́йко! or войни́че! = soldier!

сла́вейо! = o nightingale!

ко́ньо! or ко́ню! = (my) horse!
господ (= Lord) has Voc. Господи, and баща (= father) has Voc. татко!

Soft fem. nouns have the Voc. ending in -ьо or -йо:—

зе́мьо! = o earth!

Ма́рйо! = Mary!

Those ending in -ца generally have a Voc. ending in -це:—

сестри́це! = little sister!

Nouns and especially names ending in a consonant + ка also have the Voc. in -е:—

учи́телке! = teacher! (fem.)

Стан́ке = Stanka!

Дъще́рѧ (=daughter) has a Voc. дъ́це!

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE

This is a postposition or suffix varying according to gender and number, derived from the old demonstrative тъ (= that). (Cf. French "le" from Latin "ille".) Only the masc. sing. differentiates the Nom. from the Oblique case.¹ Colloquially this Oblique case is often used for the Nom. sing. masc. According to the modern orthography the forms of the definite article now are:—

Sing. *Masc.*

Nom. Hard -ът, e.g. гра́дѧт = the city

Soft -ят, e.g. ко́нят² = the horse

бо́ят = the fight

Obl. Hard -а, e.g. града́

Soft -я, e.g. ко́ня бо́я

Sing. *Fem.*

-та, e.g. же́ната = the woman

зе́мѧта = the earth

ко́стѧта³ = the bone

Sing. *Neut.*

-то, e.g. се́лото = the village

полѧто = the field

Plur. *Masc.* and *Fem.*

-те, e.g. градо́вете

ко́нѧте

¹Cf. pp. 96, 97, also pp. 84, 93 (No. 6).

²So also: ден = day, де́нѧ(т), plur. днѧте.

³All fem. nouns ending in a consonant (formerly a в), when compounded with the def. article, have the latter stressed.

бoевѣтe
женѣтe
земѣтe
кѣстѣтe

Plur. *Neut.* only

-та, e.g. селѣта
полѣтата

Nouns with irregular endings take the article according to their *apparent* gender:—

бащѣта = the father
чѣчото = the uncle
пѣтишѣта = the roads

It will be noted that in certain older writers the Oblique case for masc. sing. nouns can be the same for the noun with or without the def. article, e.g.:—

вѣждам градѣ = I see the (or a) city,

but the modern language prefers to reserve this form for the Oblique case of masc. nouns *with* the article.

When a noun is preceded by one (or more) qualifying adjectives, the definite article is attached to the (first) adjective. In the masc. singular the article then has a form different from those given above, namely:—

Sing. *Masc.* Nom. -ият, e.g. голѣмият хѣбав град стои
в долинѣ = the big fine city
stands in a valley.

Obl. -ия, e.g. вѣждам голѣмия хѣбав град
за кѣйто прикѣзвѣте = I see
the big fine city about which
you are talking.

Sing. *Fem.* бѣрзѣта рекѣ = the fast river

Sing. *Neut.* малѣкото детѣ = the small child

Plurals: in this case the Neuter is the same in form as the Masc. and Fem. def. article:—

Plur. *Masc.* голѣмите градовѣ = the big cities

Plur. *Fem.* бѣрзѣте рекѣ = the fast rivers

Plur. *Neut.* хѣбавѣте селѣ = the beautiful villages

ADJECTIVES

As will be seen from the preceding examples, adjectives in Bulgarian vary in gender and number, and when compounded with the article they distinguish the Nom. from the Oblique case in the masc. sing. only.

The endings for the three genders are:—

SING.	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	PLUR. <i>All Genders.</i>
	consonant or и	-а -я	-о -е	-и

Hard:	бял ¹	бѣла	бѣло	бѣли	= white
	лѣнски	лѣнска	лѣнско	лѣнски	= last year's

Soft:	син	сѣня	сѣнѣо	сѣни	= blue
-------	-----	------	-------	------	--------

Possessive adjectives (*soft*)—

кѣзи	кѣзя	кѣзе	кѣзи	= goat's
------	------	------	------	----------

with *chuintante*—

ѣвчи	ѣвча	ѣвче	ѣвчи	= sheep's
------	------	------	------	-----------

Many adjectives maintain the same number of syllables in all genders by omitting the last vowel of the masc. sing. in the other genders and in the plural, e.g.:—

добѣр, добѣра, добѣрд, добѣри = good
лѣсен, лѣсна, лѣсно, лѣсни = easy
извѣстен, извѣстна, извѣстно, извѣстни = well-known

Other adjectives shorten e after a vowel to й:—

случѣен (= casual, fortuitous), fem. случѣйна, etc.

Some adjectives in -ен, keep the e in all forms: студѣн = cold, fem. студѣна; копѣнен = silken, fem. копѣнена.

The Comparison of Adjectives in Bulgarian is very simple. For the Comparative degree the prefix по- is added to the Positive degree, and for the Superlative най- is prefixed to the Positive, e.g.:—

добѣр	= good
по-добѣр	= better
най-добѣр	= best

These prefixes are sometimes used with other parts of speech, e.g.:—

Това ми най лежѣ на душѣта = This weighs most heavily on my conscience.

There are no irregular Comparatives in Bulgarian except the adverb повече = more, Comparative of много = many, much.

¹Like бял go the hard possessive adjectives such as: бѣатов = brother's, мамин = mother's.

Than	= откѡлкого
Rather better	= ма̀лко по-по̀брѣ.
Rather good	= до̀ста до̀брѣ.
Less than	= по-ма̀лко от (<i>or</i> откѡлкого).
The more, the better	= кѡлкого по̀вече, то̀л-кова по-до̀брѣ.
As big as	= (то̀лкова) го̀лям кѡл-кото
As soon as possible	= кѡлкого е възмо̀жно по-скѡро

THE NUMERALS

The following is a list of the principal *Cardinal Numerals*. Only 1 and 2 change according to gender. 2 onwards are followed by the noun in the plural, but in the case of the masc. nouns this is the so-called secondary plural, or the Old Dual, which is in fact the same in form as the Oblique case of the singular with definite article. The verb is also in the plural after all numerals from 2 onwards. Numerals ending in 1 properly take the noun and the verb in the plural, in contrast to Russian. едѣн is often used as an indefinite article, in all genders.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
1	едѣн	една̀	едно̀
2	два	две	две
3	три		
4	чѐтири		
5	пет		
6	шест		
7	седем		
8	ѡсем		
9	девет		
10	дѐсет		
<i>Literary.</i>			
11	едина̀десет		едина̀йсе (т) ¹
12	двана̀десет		двана̀йсе (т)
13	трина̀десет		трина̀йсе (т)
14	четирина̀десет		четирина̀йсе (т)
15	петна̀десет		петна̀йсе (т)
16	шестна̀десет		шестна̀йсе (т)
17	седемна̀десет		седемна̀йсе (т)
18	осемна̀десет		осемна̀йсе (т)
19	деветна̀десет		деветна̀йсе (т)
20	два̀десет		два̀йсе (т)
21	два̀десет и едно̀		два̀йсе (т) и едно̀

Conversational.

едина̀йсе (т) ¹
двана̀йсе (т)
трина̀йсе (т)
четирина̀йсе (т)
петна̀йсе (т)
шестна̀йсе (т)
седемна̀йсе (т)
осемна̀йсе (т)
деветна̀йсе (т)
два̀йсе (т)
два̀йсе (т) и едно̀

¹The final т can be dropped in colloquial pronunciation in the numerals 11-90.

30	трѝдесет	трѝйсе (т)
40	чѐтиридесет	чѐтийресе (т)
50	петдесет	пейсе (т)
60	шестдесет	
70	седемдесет (т)	
80	осемдесет (т)	
90	деветдесет (т)	
100	сто	
101	сто и едно̀	
121	сто два̀десет и едно̀	
200	двѐсте (двѐста)	
300	трѝста	
400	чѐтиристотин	
500	пѣстотин	
600	шѐстстотин	
700	седемстотин	
800	ѡсемстотин	
900	деветстотин	
1,000	хила̀да	
2,000	две хила̀ди	
5,000	пет хила̀ди	
1,000,000	милион	

The *Ordinal Numerals* are adjectives. In compounds only the last figure is made ordinal:—

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1st	пръв <i>or</i> пѣрви	пѣрва	пѣрво	пѣрви
2nd	втор <i>or</i> вто̀ри	вто̀ра	вто̀ро	вто̀ри
3rd	трѣти	трѣта	трѣто	трѣти
4th	четвѣрти			
5th	пѣти			
6th	шѐсти			
7th	се́дми			
8th	ѡсми			
9th	девети			
10th	десѣти			
11th	едина̀десети			
20th	два̀десети			
100th	стѡтни			
101st	сто пѣрви			
200th	двестѡтни			
1,000th	хила̀дни			

As in Serbo-croatian, *Collective Numerals* in -ица, signifying male persons, exist; besides these there is another series in -(и)ма or -(и)на which are alternates with the same meaning. These and the Cardinals can have the def. article added for greater clarity, as in English. When numerals are preceded by и collectiveness is expressed, e.g.:—

и трѣте (= all three), fem.
and
и трѣмата (= all three), masc. only.

2 двѣма, двамѣйна, двоѣца
3 трѣма, трѣѣца

4 четѣрма

5 петѣрма

6 шестѣрма

7 седмѣйна

8 осмѣйна

9 деветѣрма

but

десетѣйна, стотѣйна, however, = about 10, 100, etc.

The forms in -ма and -ина are regularly used with nouns signifying male persons instead of the ordinary Cardinals. They are followed by the noun and verb in the plural:—

трѣма бѣлгари са дошли = three Bulgarians have come.

Half = половѣйна: едѣйн мѣтр и половѣйна = one and a half metres; but *before* nouns it is used without the final -а:

половѣйн мѣтр = half a metre.

Distributive Numerals are expressed by по followed by the Cardinals: по три ябълки = three apples each.

THE PRONOUNS

The pronouns in Bulgarian vary in gender and number, but only the Personal Pronouns have remnants of the old cases in regular use. They include all the familiar categories, to be found in the list below:—

Masc.	SING.	Fem.	Neut.	PLUR.	All Genders
Demonstrative:					
тоя	тѣя	товѣ	тоѣ	тѣя	= this
тоѣ	тѣѣ	туѣ	тоѣ	тѣѣ	= this (more colloquial)
онѣ	онѣ	онѣ	онѣ	онѣ	= that
онѣ	онѣ	онѣ	онѣ	онѣ	= that (more colloquial)
Interrogative:					
кой	кой	коѣ	коѣ	кой	= who?
какѣ	какѣ	какѣ	какѣ	какѣ	= what kind of? (Latin: qualis)
какѣ	(occasionally)	що			= what?
Interrog. Possessive:					
чий	чий	чиѣ	чий	чий	= whose?

Relative (characterized by the suffix -то):—
който който коѣто който = who, which
що ог дѣто = that

чийто чийто чийто чийто = whose (colloq.)

Definitive: всѣки = every

всѣчко sing. } = all

всѣчки plur. }

сѣщ, сѣща, etc. = the same

сам, самѣ, etc. = -self, alone

такѣв такѣва такѣво такѣви = such

толѣв толѣва толѣво толѣви = so great, such

Indefinite: нѣщо = something

нѣколко = some (a few)

нѣкой = someone

кой да ѣ = whoever, any

Negative:

нѣщо = nothing

нѣкой = nobody

нѣкакѣв = no, none

Possessive:

мой, мѣя = my

твой = thy

свой = (own)

наш = our

ваш = your

нѣгов = his

нѣин, -ѣна = her

тѣхен, тѣхна, тѣхно, тѣхни = their

The possessive pronouns often take the article, e.g.:—

мѣя(т) хѣбав брат = my handsome brother,

мѣята мѣлка кѣма = my small house,

мѣето мѣлко дѣтѣ = my small child.

Personal:

Full form Encitic¹ Full form Encitic¹

Nom. аз = I ти = you (famil-iar)

Dat. на мѣне, ми на тѣбе, ти

Oblique мѣне, ме тѣбе, те

Nom. нѣе = we вѣе = you (polite)

Dat. на нас,² ни на вас,² ви

Oblique нас, ни вас, ви

¹The encitic forms of the *Oblique* case are used mostly as Accusatives, and also after *ѣто*; e.g. *ѣто* ни = here we are!

²Note the corresponding, rarely used, archaic Datives: нам, вам.

Full form	Enclitic ¹	Full form	Enclitic ¹
Nom. той	= he	тя	= she
Dat. на него, ² му	на нѐя, ² ѝ		
Oblique нѐго,	го	нѐя,	я
Nom. то	= it	те	= they (all genders)
Dat. на нѐго, ² му	на тях, ² им		
Oblique нѐго,	го	тях,	ги

As in Serbo-cr., the enclitic forms are always used when there is no special emphasis on the Personal Pronouns in the oblique cases. In the Nom., where only one form exists, the Personal Pronoun can be omitted when unimportant. The Dat. enclitics are frequently used instead of the Possessive adjectives, e.g.:—

книгата ми = моята книга = my book
 майка му = неговa майка = his mother

When the Dative enclitic Personal Pronoun is used as a possessive adjective the article is omitted with nouns denoting relationship, except син = son, and мъж = husband, in the singular.

The Reflexive себе is declined exactly like (ти), тебе:—

Nom. — Dat. на себе, си Obl. себе, се¹
 and its enclitic Dat. is similarly used, e.g.:—

викам синà си = I call my son

Frequently, for the sake of emphasis, both forms of the Personal Pronoun are used in the same clause (as in French and Spanish—see above, "Features Characteristic of Bulgarian," No. 11):—

Нѐго го викат = It is him they are calling
 Нѐя я нàма = She's not there

As in Russian, си is used simply for emphasis or intensity:—

той си пàше (Russ. он себе пàшет) = he is busy writing

Себе is very often coupled with си, e.g.:—

Всѐки глѐда себе си = everyone looks after himself.

¹The enclitic forms of the *Oblique* case are used mostly as Accusatives, and also after èro; e.g. èro го = here he is!

²Note the corresponding, rarely used, archaic Datives: нему (m. and n.), ней (f.), тям (pl.).

Notice also: приятно ми е = (it is pleasant for me), I am glad to...
 спи ми се = I feel sleepy
 but, with a noun, страх ме е = I am afraid

ADVERBS

As in other Slavonic languages, only adverbs formed from adjectives have any regular ending. It is generally -o, the same as the neut. sing. adj., though it can be -e, and from adjectives in -ски we have adverbs also in -ски:—

хубаво = beautifully
 добре = well
 приятелски = amicably

The comparison of adverbs is identical with the comparison of adjectives—by means of the prefixes: по- for the Comparative and най- for the Superlative: по-добре = better, най-добре = best.

Other adverbs, derived from nouns, numerals, verbs, prepositions, etc., have a great variety of endings:—

Place:—

тук, тѹка	= here	вѹтре	= inside
там	= there	в кѹщи	= at home
долу	= down below	напред	= forward

Time:—

сега	= now	най-после }	= at last,
тогàва	= then	най-сетне }	finally
днес	= to-day	винаги	= always
ѹтре	= to-morrow	ведна̀га	= at once
вчѐра	= yesterday	ведна̀ж, -ѣж	= once
скоро	= soon	но̀щем	= by night
нàкога	= never		

Manner:—

такà	= thus, so	зàедно	= together
бързо	= quickly	нап̀ра̀зно	= in vain
бàвно	= slowly	на̀р̀очно	= on purpose
тичешкòм	= running		

Degree:—

м̀н̀го	= much, very	с̀в̀с̀ѐм	= quite
п̀в̀ече	= more (N.B. irregular Comparative)	п̀оч̀ѣ	= almost
най-м̀ного }	= most	сàмо	= only
най-вече }	= (a) little	п̀он̀ѣ	= at least
мàлко		дов̀ол̀но }	= enough
		достàтъч̀но }	

Interrogative:—

кога̀?	= when?	как?	= how?
къдѐ?	= where?	колко̀?	= how much?
гдѐ?	whither?	защо̀?	= why?
накъдѐ?	= whither?	далѝ?	(interrogative particle)
откъдѐ?	= whence?	налѝ?	(interrogative particle expecting the answer "yes")

Not = не; no = не; yes = да.

CONJUNCTIONS

The coördinating and subordinating conjunctions of Bulgarian have no special forms or difficulties.

Coördinating:—

и	= and	или	= or
а	= and, but	оба̀че	= however
но	= but	та	= and then
ама̀, ала̀	= but, however		

Subordinating:—

ако̀	= if	щом	= as soon as
кога̀то	= when	за да	= in order that
ка̀то	= as, when	понѐже	= because, since
дока̀то	= while	мака̀р че	= though
след ка̀то	= after	ка̀то че	= as if
защо̀то	= because	предѝ да	= before

It is important to note that, in contrast to Serbocroatian, Bulgarian uses да + the Pres. (Pfve. or Impfve.) to replace the Infinitive of other languages, but че (= that) to introduce an indirect statement:—

той ѝска да... = he wants to...
той ка̀зва че... = he says that...

Какво̀ is used as a variant for че when there are many successive "that's's".

PREPOSITIONS

Owing to the loss of the declensions, in Bulgarian prepositions have a wider use than in other Slavonic languages. One may therefore divide them roughly into three categories:—

1. uses where other languages use plain cases;
2. uses similar to those in other languages;
3. uses, as well as forms of the prepositions themselves, peculiar to Bulgarian (see above, "The Treatment of Nouns.")

The Oblique case is always used.

1. Ора̀ с плуг *Cf. Serbocroatian: Орем плугом* *Cf. Russian: Орем плугом*

= I plough with a plough

Гово̀ря на бра̀та *Говорим брату*

= I am speaking to my brother

Върва̀ из у̀лицата *Идем улицом* *по улице*

= I am going down the street

На трѣти ма̀й *Треѣтер ма̀ја*

= on the 3rd of May

По случѝй (ро̀жден ден) *Приликом* *при случае*

= on the occasion of (a birthday)

Учѝтел по фрѣнски *Учѝтель француског*

ези́к *језика*

= a teacher of French

По по̀щата *Поштом*

= by post

2.

Жи́вѝя в Пловди́в *Cf. Serboocr.: Живим у Пловдиву* *Cf. Russ.: Живим у Пловдиву*

(Proper names remain in Nom.)

Вли́зам в ста̀ята *Улазим у собу*

= I enter the room

Къ́м нѐя *К љо̀ј*

= towards her

Ме́ждѝ у̀лицата и *Међу улицом и ку̀ном*

кѝ́щата ѝма́ше *бе́ше башта*

гради́на

= between the street

and the house there

was a garden

На ма̀сата

= on the table

Пред сви́дѣтели

= before witnesses

3.

От вре́ме на вре́ме *Cf. Serboocr.: С времена на време* *Cf. Russ.: от времени до времени*

= from time to time

Предѝ всѝ́чко *Пре свега*

= above all

Пре́з планина̀та *Преко планине*

= over the mountain

прежде всего

через гору

Cf. Serboacr.: Cf. Russ.:

у јесен осенью

Кроз прозор

Код бунара

По закону

Против Турака

Код Бугара

Књига о бугарској
привреди

О чему причате?

= about what are

You talking?

Гледам из прозора
= I am looking out
of the windowПутујем из Југосла-
вија вији

= I travel about

Југославия
Излазим кџм два
сата= I go out about
two o'clock

По љубави

= Out of love

Под мџа отговорност
= on my responsi-
bilityОтвџд Дунава
= beyond the
DanubeAlso: зарадџ = because of, подџр = after, be-
hind, вџз = on (to).After *Verbal Nouns*¹ the object is very often
translated by a further noun in the Oblique case not
connected by any preposition:—¹See pp. 100, 115.чџтене књиги = reading books
лџене оцџт = pouring vinegar
пџене чай = drinking teaPartitive and other Genitives are also thus
rendered:—чџша водџа = a glass of water
начџлник отџленџе = head of department
but, едџн от тях = one of themВ and с are usually pronounced вџф and сџс,
especially вџф before в, вс, ф, хв, and сџс before
з, ж, с, ч, ш, щ, вс, and also in cases where confu-
sion can arise or where the preposition is empha-
sized:—

в Вџрна (= in Varna), pron. вџф....

с(џс) чџсџн = with garlic

в(џф) џмето на краџицџта = in the name of the queen
тџзи дуџма се пџше с(џс) е, а не с(џс) я = this word
is written with an е and not with япџшџ ми за всџџко, що стџва с(џс) и чџрез нџро =
write to me about everything that happens with
and because of himThe spelling вџв is recommended before words
beginning with в and ф, and the spelling сџс is
recommended before words beginning with с, з, ш and
ж.With monosyllables and in cases of emphasis
these prepositions may also be spelt thus.Про-, раз-, об-, and пре- are used in Bulgarian
only as prefixes.

THE CONJUGATION OF VERBS

*Voices and Tenses*While the declensional system in Bulgarian has
become greatly simplified in the course of its de-
velopment, the conjugational system has been consid-
erably elaborated and enriched, so that in this re-
spect too Bulgarian occupies a special place among
the modern Slavonic languages. In practice, in the
ordinary language of conversation, the newspapers,
etc., the usage of verbs does not differ very marked-
ly from that in Serbocroatian, but a number of vari-
ants and possibilities exist for rendering subtler
shades of meaning which in Serbocroatian would be
rendered more analytically by means of adverbs and
other more explicit means. In Bulgarian a system of
tenses has been developed for relating about facts
not witnessed by the speaker without using an intro-
ductory verb, similar to the English system of re-

¹This is formed by using the separable enclitic Accusative Reflexive pronoun *ce* with an Active verb.

1.	четѣ	= I read,	Аор.	чѣтох
	тъкѣ	= I weave,	"	тъкѣх
	порѣсна	(Pfve.) = I grow,	"	порѣснах
	знѣя	= I know,	"	знѣях
	чуѣя	= I hear,	"	чуѣх
	пѣша	= I write,	"	пѣсах
	владѣя	= I rule,	"	владѣх
2.	мѣсля	= I think,	"	мѣслях
	тѣрпѣя	= I suffer,	"	тѣрпѣх
			(formerly sp.	тѣрпѣхъ)
	стоѣя	= I stand,	"	стоѣх
	доѣя	= I milk,	"	доѣх
	дѣржѣя	= I hold,	"	дѣржѣх

3. глѣдам = I look, Aor. глѣдѣх
 вѣлям = I roll, " валѣх
 поглѣждам = I glance, " поглѣждах

Tense Endings
Present

1. Sing. 1. четѣ = I read знѣя = I know
 2. четѣш знѣеш
 3. четѣ знѣе
 Plur. 1. четѣм (or четѣме) знѣем (or знѣеме)
 2. четѣте знѣете
 3. четѣт знѣят

(a pron. ѣ, from ж, formerly spelt ж; я pron. јъ, from јѣ, formerly spelt ж.)

2. Sing. 1. мѣслѣ = I think държѣ = I hold (1st sing., see note after четѣ above)
 2. мѣслиш държѣш
 3. мѣсли държѣ
 Plur. 1. мѣслим (or мѣслиме) държѣм (or държѣме)
 2. мѣслѣте държѣте
 3. мѣслят държѣт (-at from -атъ, 3rd plur., irregular development, due to analogy.)

(държѣ follows the orthographical rule of not writing я after *chuintantes*.)

3. Sing. 1. глѣдам = I look стрѣлям = I shoot
 2. глѣдаш стрѣляш
 3. глѣда стрѣля
 Plur. 1. глѣдаме стрѣляме
 2. глѣдате стрѣляте
 3. глѣдат стрѣлят

These are new contracted endings, as in Serbocr., etc., and most newly formed verbs go into this category, e.g. планирам (= I plan). -ме for the 1st pers. plur. is obligatory in this class to avoid confusion with the 1st pers. sing. -м.

Aorist

In this tense the personal endings are the same for all categories of verbs, while the connecting vowel varies. Those that end in -ox in the 1st pers.

sing. have -e in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. The two latter persons are always identical. All verbs whose stem ends in a vowel add the endings direct to the stem without a connecting vowel. It will be observed that in contrast to modern Serbocroatian and O.S., analogy has made the consonant x prevail also in the 2nd and 3rd pers. plur. The stress in this tense is very often the opposite to that in the Present. This tense can be formed from verbs of either aspect, but is more usual in the Perfective.

- четѣх¹ четѣ четѣ чѣтохѣ четѣхѣ чѣтоха
 = I read
 рѣснах (Pfive.) рѣсна рѣсна рѣснахѣ рѣснахѣ рѣснаха
 = I grew
 чух (Pfive.) чу чу чухѣ чухѣ чуха
 = I heard
 мѣслих¹ мѣсли мѣсли мѣслихѣ мѣслихѣ мѣслиха
 = I thought
 търпѣх¹ търпѣ търпѣ търпѣхѣ търпѣхѣ търпѣха
 = I suffered
 глѣдѣх¹ глѣдѣ глѣдѣ глѣдѣхѣ глѣдѣхѣ глѣдѣха
 = I looked
 валѣх валѣ валѣ валѣхѣ валѣхѣ валѣха
 = I rolled

The Imperfect

The endings of this tense are the same as those of the Aorist except in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing.; but in the 1st and 2nd classes this tense is characterized by the joining vowel e or, under stress, я for the 1st pers. sing. and all the plural [formerly ѣ, written e after vowels and *chuintantes*]; and in the 3rd category, where the joining vowel is a or я and this distinguishing feature is lacking to mark it off from the Aorist, the stress, which for all three categories is the same as in the Present, helps to distinguish the Imperfect from the Aorist. This tense can also sometimes be formed from Perfective verbs.

- четѣх четѣше четѣше четѣхѣ четѣхѣ четѣха
 = I was reading
 пѣмѣх пѣмѣше пѣмѣше пѣмѣхѣ пѣмѣхѣ пѣмѣха
 = I was writing
 знѣѣх знѣѣше знѣѣше знѣѣхѣ знѣѣхѣ знѣѣха
 = I used to know
 мѣслѣх мѣслѣше мѣслѣше мѣслѣхѣ мѣслѣхѣ мѣслѣха
 = I used to think

¹The corresponding *Perfective* Aorists are: прочѣтох, etc., помѣслих, претърпѣх, поглѣднах.

държѣх държѣше държѣхе държѣхте държѣха
= I used to hold (or -ах, -ахте, -ахте, -аха stressed after a *chuintante* or with -а- after a vowel)

гледѣх гледѣше гледѣхе гледѣхте гледѣха
= I was looking

вѣлях вѣляше вѣляхе вѣляхте вѣляха
= I was rolling

сѣднѣх сѣднѣше сѣднѣхе сѣднѣхте сѣднѣха
= I used to sit down (сѣдна Pfve.), more vivid than сѣдах, сѣдаше, etc.; from сѣдам (Fre-quentative) [formerly сѣдамъ].

The Imperative Mood

This has an independent form for the 2nd pers. sing. and plur. only.

In categories 1 and 2—

those verbs whose stems end in consonants add:
sing. -а (stressed),¹ plur. -ѣте.¹

those verbs whose stems end in a vowel add:
sing. -а, plur. -айте.

Verbs in category 3 have sing. -ай (unstressed), plur. -айте, or sing. -ай plur. -айте

according to the original vowel of the Present ending.

The 1st pers. plur. and the 3rd pers. sing. and plur. are formed with да or нѣка (да) + Present Pfve. or Impfve.

Prohibitions are mostly expressed by недѣй,

plur. недѣйте + truncated Infinitive (see below).

If expressed by не + Imperative, the Impfve.

aspect is used. But after недѣй the Present preceded by да can also be used (see below).

Examples:—

Sing.

2 четѣй = read!¹ брой = count! гледѣй = look! стрѣляй = shoot!

3 нѣка четѣ нѣка брой нѣка гледѣ нѣка стрѣля

Plur.

1 нѣка да нѣка да нѣка да нѣка да

четѣм бройм гледѣме стрѣляме

2 четѣте¹ бройте гледѣйте стрѣляйте

3 нѣка четѣт нѣка броят нѣка гледѣт нѣка стрѣлят

¹ Velar stems undergo the 1st Palatalization

before these endings, e.g.:—

пекѣ = I bake, Imper. печѣй, печѣте.

Prohibitions: недѣй (ге) гледѣ, не гледѣй (ге), недѣй да гледѣш

in 3rd persons and 1st pers. pl. with нѣка: нѣка да не гледѣ.

For the 1st and 3rd pers. sing. and plur. one can use стѣга or дѣста + Compound Past (see below). This construction with 2nd persons expresses a wish, e.g.:—

дѣста сме ѣли! = let us stop eating, let us not eat!

стѣга си гледѣл! = stop looking, don't look (any more)!

The Infinitive

The old Infinitive in -ti, as well as the old Supine, have been lost in modern Bulgarian. These are regularly replaced by clauses introduced by да + Present, even in sentences where the Infinitive replaces a noun, e.g.:—

да крадѣш, е грехотѣ = it is wrong to steal, or stealing is wrong

After a few expressions, such as недѣй, (see above, the Imperative), не мѣра (= I cannot), не смѣя (= I dare not), the "truncated Infinitive" can be used. In form this is the pure root of the verb, identical in form with the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. Aorist, e.g.:—

гледѣ = to look

In verbs whose stems end in a dental, this too is cut off, e.g.:—

че = (to) read

я = (to) eat

да = (to) give

—all ending in a vowel, as well as—

пя = sing

кѣзва = say

хвѣли = praise, etc.

Present Gerund Active (*Verbal Adverb*)

Categories 1 and 2 end in -ейки

Category 3—in -айки or -яйки, e.g.:—

четѣйки = reading

мѣслейки = thinking

гледѣйки = looking

вѣляйки = rolling

These are formed from Impfve. verbs and can be paraphrased by a clause with a verb in the Indicative introduced by *како* (= as, when).

As in other Slavonic languages, gerunds in Bulgarian can only qualify a main verb and therefore refer only to the subject of the sentence.

(There is no Past Gerund in Bulgarian.)

Participles (Verbal Adjectives)

These vary in gender and number, and also in case for the masc. sing. with article, and can have the article suffixed.

Present Active, formed only from Impfve. vbs.:—

Categories 1 and 2 end in -ещ, or, if finally

stressed, -ещ, or -ящ.

Category 3 ends in -ам/-ящ.

Examples:—

пламтѣщ = flaming, fem. пламтѣща, neut. -що, plur. -щи.

пламтѣщият ѓгън = the flaming fire (Nom.)

гаврани прелягати из мръка = ravens flying about in the dark

Past Active.—In contrast to Serbo-Croatian and other Slavonic languages, Bulgarian has, for verbs with different stems in Present and Aorist, two Past Participles Active in -л (masc.), -ла (fem.), -ло (neut.), -ли (plur.):—

(1) one formed by adding these endings to the 1st pers. sing. Imperfect less the final -х—the Imperfect Past Participle Active, used only in Renarration;

(2) the other formed by adding the same endings to the 2nd/3rd pers. sing. Aorist—the Aorist Past Participle Active.

E.g.:—

пѣша = I write (Impfve.)

Imperfect: пѣшех (1) Imperfect Past Part. Act.: пѣшел

Aorist: писѣх (2) Aorist Past Part. Act.: писѣл

напѣша = I write (Pfve.)

Aorist: напѣсах (2) Aorist Past Part. Act.: напѣсал

трѣгна = I set out (Pfve.)

Imperfect: трѣгнех (1) Imperfect Past Part. Act.: трѣгнел

Aorist: трѣгнах (2) Aorist Past Part. Act.: трѣгнал

Verbs with Aorist in -ох add -ъл, e.g.:—

донѣсах = I brought, Past Part. Act.: донѣсал

but dental stems lose their final т or д before the л, e.g.:—

плѣтох = I wove, Past Part. Act.: плѣл

бодох = I pricked, Past Part. Act.: бодл

These participles are mostly used in compound tenses (see below), but they can also be used by themselves in Renarration to give a description of events not witnessed by the speaker:—

живѣел едѣн цар... = There once lived a

king...

Той вдѣгнал тоѣгата и кѣзал = They say (or: Once) he lifted his stick and said...

These Past Participles Active are actually the Compound Past (Perfect) tense with the auxiliary verb (quite regularly) omitted in the 3rd persons. (See "The Compound Past or Perfect" tense below.)

Past Participle Passive. This is obtained by adding—

-н, -на, -но, -ни to verbs whose 2nd/3rd pers. sing. Aorist ends in -а or -я;

-ен, -ена, -ено, -ени to verbs whose 2nd/3rd pers. sing. Aorist ends in -е or -и;

sometimes also (under stress) -ѣн, -ѣна, -ѣно, -ѣни;

-т, -та, -то, -ти to verbs which add the

Aorist endings direct to vocalic verb stem, or whose 1st pers. sing. Present ends in -на.

Past Participles Passive in -ен should be distinguished from adjectives in -ен:—

побѣден, fem. побѣдна = victorious, conquering
побѣдѣн, fem. побѣдена = conquered

These participles can be formed from transitive verbs of either aspect according to the meaning required, though perfective Past Participles Passive are more common. Examples:—

писан = written хрѧнен = fed
 тѣрпѧн = endured чут = heard
 мѣчен = tormented трѣснаг = struck

Compound Tenses

Future. This is formed with the invariable (unstressed) particle *ще* + Present Pfv. or Impfv.:

ще четѧ = I shall read
 ще четѣм
 etc.

The negative is often formed with *нѧма* да + Present:

нѧма да четѣм = you will not read

Far more rare and dialectal is the Future formed by using the Truncated Infinitive with the variable auxiliary—

ѡа = will щем (щеме)
 щеш etc. щете
 ще щат

This form is archaic and is to be found in special expressions and "popular" (народна) speech.

Future of Renarration

The Compound Past of *ѡа* (ѡял съм) is here followed by да + Present with omission of the 3rd person auxiliaries, e.g.:

Тоѡ ѡял да замѧне = I have heard that he was starting out (was going to...)

This tense also serves as the Renarration form of the Past Conditional (Past Future)—see below.

Future Perfect

The Future of "to be" is compounded with the Aorist Past Participle Active of either aspect, viz.:

either— ще съм (про)чѣл
 or— ще бѣда (про)чѣл = I shall have read (through)

Negative form:—

нѧма да съм (бѣда) (про)чѣл.

There is also a *Past Future Perfect*:

ѡях да съм прѧвил = I was going to have done

The corresponding form of *Renarration* serves to render a *Future Perfect* as well as a *Past Future Per-*

fect of direct speech:—

ѡял съм да съм прѧвил = They say I would have done;
 or: They say I was going to have done

The Compound Past or Perfect

This tense is formed with the Present of "to be" + the Aorist* (or, for Renarration only, the Imperfect) Past Participle Active. In the most correct language it is used:—

- (a) as an indefinite Past tense, generally equivalent to the English Perfect, e.g.:
 "I have done," or "I have been doing";
 (b) in Renarration (прѣзкѧване), when the omission of the auxiliary verb in the 3rd persons sing. and plur. (е, са) is obligatory.

(In Renarration the speaker or writer describes events not witnessed by himself, but learnt of indirectly. This is, of course, quite different from "Reported Speech".)

чел си = (1) You have been reading, or
 (2) They say (or: I have heard) that you read

In Renarration this form corresponds *only* to an Aorist of direct statement.

No introductory verb is necessary to render the second alternative meaning.

In the 3rd person:—

(1) Тоѡ е болѣдѣвал годѧни = he has been ill for years

But—

(2) Болѣдѣвал годѧни = they say he was ill for years
 (corresponding to an original Imperfect or Aorist, because the stem of both is identical).

Четѧл си (with Imperfect Past Participle Active), however, can only mean: I hear (or: they say) you are or were reading.

*N.B. of *either* aspect, with corresponding change of meaning, i.e.:

чел си > < прочѣл си
 = (1) you have been reading = (1) you have read through
 = (2) they say you read = (2) they say you have read through,
 Nos. (2) corresponding to direct—чѣте > < прочѣте.

This form, therefore, corresponds either to an original Present or to an Imperfect. (Cf. under Past Participle Active.)

Compound Past (Perfect) in Renarration

The Renarration form of Nos. 1 above adds a бил, making the report more remote, e.g.:—

бил си чел = they say you have read
бил боледувал години = they say he has been ill for years

These forms are also used to renarrate an original Pluperfect—see below.

The Pluperfects

The same principle applies here. When the Aorist Past Participle Active of either aspect is compounded with the Imperfect or Aorist Indicative of "to be", they represent direct continuous or completed Pluperfects respectively, e.g.:—

бе(ше) чел = he had been reading
бе(ше) прочёл = he had read through

Pluperfect of Renarration

But when these participles are compounded with the Compound Past of "to be" with the usual omission of the auxiliary verb in the 3rd persons, they imply reported information which the speaker does not necessarily believe, i.e. Renarration (also used in historical accounts). E.g.:—

Той бил пèл из òлиците = They say he was singing in the streets.

This form, e.g. бил съм пèл = they say I have sung, etc., also corresponds to an original direct Compound Past (Perfect), e.g.: пèл съм (see above).

The Conditional

This Mood is formed by compounding the Aorist Past Participle Active of either aspect with бих, би, бихме, бихте, биха.

бих чел = I would read (I would be reading)
бих прочёл = I would read (through)

Very rare is the form obtained by adding -вам, -ваш, -ва, -ваме, -вате, -вар to the root of the verb:—

Ядвам = I would eat, also = I may eat

The Past Conditional or Past Future is formed either with the Imperfect of ма (мях, etc.) + да + Pres. Ppive. or Impfe., or more rarely with the invariable

auxiliary ще + the Imperfect. E.g.:—

мях да черà or ще черàх = I would have been reading,
or: I was going to read
мях да прочетà = I would have read, or: I was going to read through

Negative form:—

нàмаше да черà = I would not have read, or:
I was not going to read

These tenses can express "Unreal Conditions in the Past".

There also exists a Past Conditional of Renarration made up of the Compound Past (or Pluperfect) of ма + да + Present:—

мьл съм да черà = they say that I would have read or been reading

This tense is also used to render in Renarration a Future of direct speech (see above).

The use of the Pluperfect with its бил makes the Renarration even more remote.

той мьл бил да замàне = they say he would have started off, or: meant to start off

Irregular Verbs

Originally Athematic Verbs

Съм = I am (Frequentative бивам — regular)

Present

Imperfect

Sing. 1 съм бях (formerly бяхъ) or бьдех (formerly бьдяхъ)
2 си бе or беше бх(ше) (regular, used only after ако and да in conditional clauses)

3 е бе or беше бх(ше)

Plur. 1 сме бяхме

2 сте бяхте

3 са (formerly бяха)

Aorist

Sing. 1 БЯХ (formerly бѣхъ) or БИДОХ (used only with Past Participle Passive to render the Aorist Passive)

2 бе or беше " бѣ(ше) БИДѢ

3 бе or беше " бѣ(ше) БИДѢ

Plur. 1 БЯХМЕ БИДОХМЕ

2 БЯХТЕ БИДОХТЕ

3 БЯХА БИДОХА

Future

Sing. 1 ще бѣда (formerly бѣда) or ще съм бил(а)

2 ще бѣдеш etc., бих

3 ще бѣде бѣ

Plur. 1 ще бѣдем бийх

2 ще бѣдете бийхте

3 ще бѣдат бийха

Present Gerund: бидейки

Present Participle: (бѣдеш)¹

Past Participle: бил, билъ, билъ, били

Imperative: 2nd pers. sing. бѣди! (formerly бѣди!)

2nd pers. plur. бѣдете! (formerly бѣдете!)

ям = I eat дам = I give (Pfive.)

Present Imperfect Aorist Present Imperfect Aorist

Sing. 1 ям ядох дам дадох

2 ядѣш ядѣше дам дадѣше

3 ядѣ ядѣше дам дадѣше

Plur. 1 ядѣм ядохме дам(е) дадохме

2 ядѣте ядохте дам(е) дадохте

3 ядѣт ядоха дам(а) дадоха

Present Gerund: ядейки (дѣвайки)

Present Participle: ядѣш (дѣваш)

Impr. Past Participle: ядѣл, -а, -о, ядѣли

Aor. Past Participle: ял, яла, яло, яли

Past Part. Pass.: яден

Imperative: яж! яжте! дай! дайте!

¹This form is really an adjective, meaning "future";

cf. същ = real, true.

The old verb вѣмъ (= I know) survives only in the adverb невѣм (= maybe).

Other Irregular Verbs

ща = I will (aux. verb in the literary language), cf. йскам (reg.) = I want

Present Imperfect

Sing. 1 щам щях (formerly щѣхъ) щях (formerly щѣхъ)

2 щеш щѣше щѣше

3 ще щѣше щѣше

Plur. 1 щем щяхме щяхме

2 щѣте щяхте щяхте

3 щат щяха щяха

Past Participle: щял, щяла, щяло, щѣли (formerly щѣл, щѣла, щѣло, щѣли)

мога, можеш, = I can, has Impf. можеш, Aor. можѣх, Aor. Past Part. Act. (можѣл or) можѣл, можѣла, можѣло, можѣли.

спя, спиш = I sleep, Impf. спях, спѣше, Impf. Past Part. спял, -а, -о, спѣли, Aor. спях, Aor. Past Part. спал.

Verbs of Going and Conveying

I go on foot = вървѣ (reg. Class 2)

I go regularly (Freq.) = ходя (reg. Class 2)

I go away (Impfve.) = отивам (Class 3)

(Pfive.) = отида (Class 1) with Past Part. отишъл, fem. отишла (otherwise both regular).

I go out (Impfve.) = излизам

(Pfive.) = изляза, излѣзеш, Aor. излязох, Aor. Past Part. излязъл, -зла, -лезли, Imperative излѣз! излѣзте!

I come (Impfve.) = дохѣдам

(Pfive.) = дойда, -еш, Aor. дойдѣх, Imperative дойд! ейдѣте! Past Part. дошѣл or дошѣл, дошѣла, дошѣло, дошѣли.

I lead (Impfve. and Freq.) = водя 2nd pers. sing. водѣш, (Pfive.) = заведѣа, заведѣш, Past Part. Act. заведѣл.

I convey (Impfve. and Freq.) = вѣзя, 2nd pers. sing. вѣзѣш; or кѣрам or откѣрам

(Pfive.) = only откѣрам, откѣраш, Past Part. Act. откѣрал

I carry (Impfve. and Freq.) = нѣся, 2nd pers. sing. нѣсѣш, (Pfive.) = занесѣа, занесѣш, Past Part. Act. занесѣл, занесѣла.

The regular verb ймам (= I have) has a special

Aorist

Sing. 1 БЯХ (formerly бѣхъ) or БИДОХ (used only with Past Participle Passive to render the Aorist Passive)

2 бе or бѣше " бѣ(ше)
3 бе or бѣше " бѣ(ше)

Plur. 1 БЯХМЕ бѣхмѣ БИДОХМЕ
2 БЯХТЕ бѣхтѣ БИДОХТЕ
3 БЯХА бѣха БИДОХА

Future

Sing. 1 ще бѣда (formerly бѣда) or ще съм бил(а)
2 ще бѣдѣш etc., би
3 ще бѣде etc. би

Plur. 1 ще бѣдем бѣхмѣ били
2 ще бѣдете бѣхтѣ
3 ще бѣдат бѣха

Present Gerund: бидейки

Present Participle: (бѣдѣщ)¹

Past Participle: бил, била, билъ, били

Imperative: 2nd pers. sing. бѣди! (formerly бѣди!)
2nd pers. plur. бѣдете! (formerly бѣдете!)

ям = I eat дам = I give (Pfive.)

Present Imperfect Aorist Present Imperfect Aorist

Sing. 1 ям ядох ядох дам дадох дадох
2 ядѣш ядѣше ядѣ дадѣш дадѣше дадѣ
3 ядѣ ядѣше ядѣ дадѣ дадѣше дадѣ

Plur. 1 ядем ядохмѣ ядохмѣ дадем(е) дадохмѣ дадохмѣ
2 ядете ядохтѣ ядохтѣ дадете дадохтѣ дадохтѣ
3 ядат ядѣха ядѣха дадат дадѣха дадѣха

Present Gerund: ядейки (давайки)
Present Participle: ядѣщ (даващ)

Imp. Past Participle: ядѣ

ядѣл, -а, -о, ядѣли

Aor. Past Participle: ял, яла, яло, яли

Past Part. Pass.: яден

Imperative: я! яте!

¹This form is really an adjective, meaning "future"; cf. съм = real, true.

The old verb вѣмъ (= I know) survives only in the adverb невѣм (= maybe).

Other Irregular Verbs

ща = I will (aux. verb in the literary language), cf. йскам (reg.) = I want

Present Imperfect

Sing. 1 ща шях (formerly щѣхъ) шях (formerly щѣхъ)
2 щѣш щѣше щѣш
3 ще щѣше щѣш

Plur. 1 щем шяхмѣ щѣхмѣ шяхмѣ
2 щѣте шяхтѣ щѣхтѣ шяхтѣ
3 щат шяха щѣха шяха

Past Participle: шял, шяла, шяло, шѣли (formerly щѣл, щѣла, щѣло, щѣли)

мога, можеш, = I can, has Impf. можеш, Aor. можѣх, Aor. Past Part. Act. (можѣл or) можѣл, могѣл, могѣл, могѣл, могѣл.

спя, спиш = I sleep, Impf. спях, спѣше, Impf. Past Part. спял, -а, -о, спѣли, Aor. спях, Aor. Past Part. спал.

Verbs of Going and Conveying

I go on foot = вървѣ (reg. Class 2)

I go regularly (Freq.) = ходя (reg. Class 2)

I go away (Impfve.) = отѣвам (Class 3)

(Pfive.) = отѣда (Class 1) with Past Part.

отѣшл, fem. отѣшла (otherwise both regular).

I go out (Impfve.) = излѣзам

(Pfive.) = излѣза, излѣзеш, Aor. излѣзох, Aor.

Past Part. излѣзъл, -зла, -лезли, Imperative

излѣз! излѣзете!

I come (Impfve.) = дохѣждам

(Pfive.) = дойда, -еш, Aor. дойдѣх, Imperative

елѣ! елѣте! Past Part. дошѣл or дошѣл, дошѣл,

дошѣл, дошѣл.

I lead (Impfve. and Freq.) = вѣдя 2nd pers. sing.

водиш, (Pfive.) = заведѣ, заведѣш, Past Part.

Act. завѣл.

I convey (Impfve. and Freq.) = вѣзя, 2nd pers. sing.

вѣзиш; or кѣрам or откѣрам

(Pfive.) = only откѣрам, откѣраш, Past Part.

Act. откѣрал

I carry (Impfve. and Freq.) = нѣся, 2nd pers. sing.

носиш, (Pfive.) = занесѣ, занесѣш, Past Part.

Act. занесѣл, занесѣла.

The regular verb ймам (= I have) has a special

Aorist

Sing. 1 БЯХ (formerly бѣхъ) or БИДОХ (used only with Past Participle Passive to render the Aorist Passive)

2 бѣ or бѣше " бѣ(ше)
3 бѣ or бѣше " бѣ(ше)

Plur. 1 БЯХМЕ бѣхмѣ БИДОХМЕ
2 БЯХТЕ бѣхтѣ БИДОХТЕ
3 БЯХА бѣхѣ БИДОХА

Future

Sing. 1 ще бѣда (formerly бѣда) or ще съм бил(а)
2 ще бѣдѣш etc., би
3 ще бѣде etc. би

Plur. 1 ще бѣдем бѣхмѣ били
2 ще бѣдете бѣхтѣ
3 ще бѣдат бѣхѣ

Present Gerund: бидейки

Present Participle: (бѣдѣш)¹

Past Participle: бил, била, билъ, били

Imperative: 2nd pers. sing. бѣди! (formerly бѣди!)
2nd pers. plur. бѣдете! (formerly бѣдете!)

ям = I eat дам = I give (pfve.)

Present Imperfect Aorist Present Imperfect Aorist

Sing. 1 ям ядох ядох дам дадох дадох
2 ядѣш ядѣше ядѣ дадѣш дадѣше дадѣ
3 ядѣ ядѣше ядѣ дадѣ дадѣше дадѣ

Plur. 1 ядем ядѣхмѣ ядѣм(е) дадѣхмѣ дадохмѣ
2 ядѣте ядѣхтѣ ядѣте дадѣхтѣ дадохтѣ
3 ядат ядѣхѣ ядохѣ дадат дадѣхѣ дадохѣ

Present Gerund: ядейки (давайки)

Present Participle: ядѣш (давам)

Imp. Past Participle: ядѣш

Aor. Past Participle: ядѣл, -а, -о, ядѣли

ял, яла, яло, яли

Past Part. Pass.: яден

Imperative: яж! яжте!

¹This form is really an adjective, meaning "future"; cf. съм = real, true.

The old verb вѣмъ (= I know) survives only in the adverb невѣм (= maybe).

Other Irregular Verbs

ща = I will (aux. verb in the literary language), cf. йскам (reg.) = I want

Present Imperfect

Sing. 1 ща щях (formerly щѣхъ) щях (formerly щѣхъ)
2 щеш щѣше щѣше щѣ
3 ще щѣше щѣше щѣ

Plur. 1 щем щѣхмѣ щѣхмѣ щѣхмѣ
2 щѣте щѣхтѣ щѣхтѣ щѣхтѣ
3 щат щѣхѣ щѣхѣ щѣхѣ

Past Participle: щял, щѣла, щѣло, щѣли (formerly щѣл, щѣла, щѣло, щѣли)

мога, можеш, = I can, has Impf. можеш, Aor. можѣх, Aor. Past Part. Act. (можѣл or) можѣл, могѣл, могѣл, могѣл.

спя, спиш = I sleep, Impf. спях, спѣше, Impf. Past Part. спял, -а, -о, спѣли, Aor. спях, Aor. Past Part. спал.

Verbs of Going and Conveying

I go on foot = вървѣ (reg. Class 2)

I go regularly (Freq.) = ходя (reg. Class 2)

I go away (Impfve.) = отивам (Class 3)

(pfve.) = отида (Class 1) with Past Part.

отивѣл, fem. отивѣла (otherwise both regular).

I go out (Impfve.) = излизам

(pfve.) = изляза, излязеш, Aor. излязох, Aor.

Past Part. излязѣл, -ела, -лезли, Imperative

изляз! излязте!

I come (Impfve.) = дохѣждам

(pfve.) = дойда, -еш, Aor. дойдѣх, Imperative

елѣ! елѣте! Past Part. дошѣл or дошѣл, дошѣл,

дошѣл, дошѣл.

I lead (Impfve. and Freq.) = вѣдя 2nd pers. sing.

водиш, (pfve.) = заведѣ, заведѣш, Past Part.

Act. завѣл.

I convey (Impfve. and Freq.) = вѣзя, 2nd pers. sing.

вѣзиш; or кѣрам or откѣрам

(pfve.) = only откѣрам, откѣраш, Past Part.

Act. откѣрал

I carry (Impfve. and Freq.) = нѣся, 2nd pers. sing.

носиш, (pfve.) = занесѣ, занесѣш, Past Part.

Act. занесѣл, занесѣла.

The regular verb ймам (= I have) has a special

Не гó давай!
 Не тé търсят
 = Do not give it!
 = They are not looking
 for you

Не ѱ казвай!
 Не сѣм хóдил отдávна на Вѣтоша
 = Do not tell her!
 = I haven't gone up
 the Vitosha (mountain) for a long
 time

Contrary to the usage in Serbocroatian, these enclitics can occur directly after и (= and), но (= but), etc., e.g.:—

Обичай родната си и ѝ = Love your country and
служай вярно serve it faithfully
Дирен е и у тях, но го = He was sought (i.e.
не намерили they looked for him) in
their house, too, but
they did not find him.

When an auxiliary verb of the Compound Past tense occurs with an enclitic Personal or Reflexive Pronoun, the auxiliary verb takes precedence unless it is the 3rd pers. sing. auxiliary verb e, e.g.:—

Купил съм си нови дрехи = I have bought myself
Много пъти съм го some new clothes
наблюдавал = I have often observed
Той го е погледнал, та it
го е поразил = He looked at him and
Той добре разбрал каквo struck him down
се е случило = He understood well what
Той се е борил с мечка had happened
= He fought a bear

If a Dative and an Accusative Personal Pronoun occur in the same clause, then the Dative Pers. Pronoun comes first. This is true even when the Acc. Pers. Pronoun is the Acc. Reflexive ce (as in Serbocroatian, and contrary to the usage in Slovenian, Czech and Slovak). E.g.:—

Струва ми се = It seems to me
Кой ти го даде? = Who gave it to you?
Купих си го отдавна = I bought it for myself
long ago
Не съм му я дал = I have not given him
it (fem.)

'He' can be separated from its main verb only by the enclitic Personal and Reflexive Pronouns, as in Macedonian and in contrast to Serbocroatian:—

Не го виждам но го чувам = I do not see it but I
hear it
Това не се казва = That is not said
Въ него не се чувствуваша = In it one does not
прекъсване feel a break

But with the Compound Past tense, he cannot be separated from the auxiliary verb by enclitic pronouns unless the auxiliary is in the 3rd pers. sing. —e, e.g.:—

Не съм го виждал = I have not seen him
Не се е обадил = He has not called

The interrogative particle ли takes precedence over other enclitics, but it cannot come between the negative не and its auxiliary verb. It follows the word asking the question, not necessarily the verb. E.g.:—

Не си ли го виждал? = Have you not seen him?
Не е ли излязал тъдъва? = Has he not come out
here?
Ти ли си идвал? = Did you come?
Ти вчера ли си идвал? = Was it yesterday you
came?
Не ви ли се струва, че...? = Does it not seem to
you that...?

The Dative enclitic Pers. Pronouns used as possessives occur after or before the noun they qualify, if it is without an adjective, e.g.:—

Взех шапката си or Взех = I took my hat.
си шапката

But if the noun is also qualified by an adjective, the possessive enclitic comes between the adjective and the noun, e.g.:—

Взех голъмата си шапка = I took my big hat
The Vocative particles follow their noun:—

Иване бе! = I say, John!
Марийке ле! Марийке ма! = I say, Mary!

The auxiliary verb of the Future tense, *ще*, is a proclitic. It may start a sentence and can only be separated from its verb by the enclitic Pers. and Reflexive Pronouns and rarely by *ли*.

Ще му кажа това = I shall tell him that
(Ще ли дойдем?) Better:
Ще дойдем ли? = Will you come?

The auxiliary verb of the Conditional Mood, *бих*, *би*, etc., is neither proclitic nor enclitic. It, too, can only be separated from its main verb by the enclitic Pers. and Reflexive Pronouns and *ли*.

Бих се обадил = I would call
Не бих го видял никога = He would never see him
Бихте ли ми услужили? = Would you do me a
favour?

TEXTS

For purposes of comparison, passages are given in both the old and the new spelling.

I. (*Old Orthography*)
Евангелие отъ Лука,
VIII, 5-8.

5. Стѣчьтъ излѣзе да сѣе семето си; и когато сѣеше, едно падна край пътя; и затѣпка се, и небеснитѣ птици го изкълваха.

6. А друго падна на карата; и щомъ поникна, изсѣхна, защото нѣмаше влага.

7. Друго пъкъ падна всрѣдъ трѣнитѣ; и заедно съ него порастоха трѣнитѣ, та го заглушиха.

8. А друго падна на добрата земя и, като порастна, даде стократенъ плодъ. Като каза това, извика: Който има уши да слуша, нека слуша.

II. (*New Orthography*)
И. Вазов

Габровският манастир.

Сред глухите недра на Стара планина, сред чаровните балкански самотии, в една от най-разкошните гънки на северния склон на тая планина, е кацнал недалеко от изворите на кристалната Янтра Соколският манастир.

Кацнал със своите чардаци и с блестящото на слънцето кубе, между зелени гористи висоти, над един дълбок дол, пълен с вечен шум на реката, той приветливо и радостно се изпречва пред погледа на поклонника, който иде по върлия път от към Габрово да го посети.

Четири дена бях мил гост на тая балканска светиня.

От което място на манастиря да погледнах,—от звона ли, от чардаците ли, из стаята си ли—аз виждах отвърд чудесен изглед. На север, на запад се спускаха и вълнуваха зелени планински върхове с пасища,

ниви и гори по тях. На изток и юг—високи урви, които от манастиря се качваха към небето, за да стигнат гръбняка на Стара планина. Столетни букови гори шумят там.

И аз още от сутринта, разбуден от шума на водите и на славеите в близкия букак, изкачах из манастиря и се залутвах по висотите, през гори и пасища, запъстрели с хиляди разноцветни цветя, за да се любувам още по от високо на безкрайната картина. И не се нагледвах, и не се насищах на тези красоти.

Господи, колко хубаво!...

III. (*New Orthography*)
Любен Каравелов

Хубава си, моя горо...

Хубава си, моя горо, меришиш на младост,
Но вселяваш в сърцата ни само скръб и жалост.

Който веднъж те погледне, той вечно жалеет,
Че не може под твоите сенки да изтлее.

А комуто стане нужда веч да те остави,
Той не може, дорде е жив, да те заборава!...

IV. (*New Orthography*)
Пею Яворов

ЗАТОЧЕНИЦИ.

От заник-слънце озарени,
Алеят морски ширини;
В игра стихийна уморени,
Почиват яростни вълни...

И корабът се носи леко
С попятни тихи ветрове—
И чезнете в мъгли далечно
Вий родни брегове.

И вече нам за път обратен
Едва ли ще удари час:

Вода и суша—необятен,
Затворен е светът за нас!
А Вардар, Дунав и Марица,
Балканът, Странджа и Пирин
Остават сенки върволица
На спомена един.

Но корабът, уви, не спира:
Все по-далеч и по-далеч
Лети, отнася ни... Простира
Нощта крилото си... И веч

Едва се мяркат очертани
На тъмно модър небосклон
Замислените великани
На чутния Атон.

(*New Orthography*)

(*Old Orthography*)
Пѣю Яворовъ.

И ний през сълзи накупели И ний прѣзъ сълзи накупѣли
Обръщаме за сетен път Обръщаме за сетен път
Назад към скѣпи нам пре- Назадъ къмъ скѣпи намъ
дели прѣдѣли

Угаснал взор, — за сетен Угасналъ взоръ, — за сетенъ
път път

Простираме ръце в окови Простираме рацѣ въ окови
Към нашия изгубен рай... Къмъ нашия изгубенъ рай...
Горчива скръб сърца ни Горчива скръбъ сърца ни
трови, трови,

Прощавай, роден край! Прощавай, роденъ край!

V. (*New Orthography*)

Елин Пелин

From «ЗАНЕМЕЛИТЕ КАМБАНИ»

Но игумена искаше още веднѣж да провери. Може би е забравил нещо. И той отново влезе в черквицата. Малка, ниска стара черквица, градена кой знае в кои години, запомнила старите царе, преживяла робство и благословила новото царство. Вътре вече бе влязъл вечерният мрак и се молеше пред запалените кандила, чиито малки пламъчета се губеха пред благите усмивки на светите. Те бяха умирително тържествени пред деня на големия празник.

Дядо игумен спря очудено на прага, защото видя пред светата икона тъмния силует на жена с дете в ръка. Старецът се ядоса. — На днешната вечерня не се влизаше в черква преди да ударят тържествено камбаните. Така беше обичаят.

Той пристѣпи тихо към влязлата и я изгледа. Тя беше дрипава, мръсна, забрадена с нечиста кърпа така, че само очите ѝ се показваха. Тя беше стѣпила на плочите с боси, изцапани крака, които бяха отпечатали стѣпките си по пода и това ядоса повече чистия старец. Жената не го усети. Тя се молеше високо, с плач, и поднасяше пред стѣпките на Светата Майка своето болно дете, бледо, изсъхнало, като ланско цвете. То бе склопило очиците си, дишаше тежко и болезнено стенеше.

— Запази ми го и го спаси, майко Богородичке, единичко ми е, шепнеше жената и се навеждаше ниско, като дърво под силата на вятъра. Сълзите ѝ капеха по студените плочи, както капеше восъкът от горещите свещи.

Жената извади от пазухата си игличка с синьо топченце на края и я забодне на новото копринено перде.

— Приеми това от мен, Света Майко. Нямам нищо друго!

— Защо си влязла тука? — каза сърдито старецът. — Камбаните още не са били. Не знаеш ли обичая?

— Не знам, отче, — каза объркано жената.

— Излез сега. После, после ела!

Жената покорно се обърна, стисна детенцето си в прегръдките и тръгна. Отец Иоаким я проследи с поглед. И когато тя мина през светлината на вратата, още един път забеляза, колко е дрипава и нечиста.

Игуменът видя, че по плочата, на която стоеше жената, бяха останали кални петна. Той видя върху завесата простата игличка със синята топчица на края. Тая топчица личеше като дървеница върху хубавата завеска и я грозеше. Отец Иоаким я извади и захвърли в ъгъла. След това се прекръсти пред иконата, оправи хубаво завеската и излезе.

Без тая случка, всичко друго беше в ред. Но неговото добро сърце забрави това, като видя, че дворотъ бе изпълнен с богомолци, които държеха свещи и чакаха да ударят камбаните, за да влязат в черквата. Братята също бяха готови. Те бяха слезли долу и разговаряха с народа за предстоящия празник.

VI. (*New Orthography*)

Н. Й. Вапцаров

ВЯРА

Ето — аз дишам,
работя,
живея

и стихове пиша
(тъй както умея).
С живота под вежди
се гледаме строго

и боря се с него
до колкото мога.

С живота сме в разпра,
но ти не разбирай,
че мразя живота.
Напротив, напротив! —
Дори да умирам,
живота със грубите
лапи чилични

аз пак ще обичам!
Аз пак ще обичам!

Да кажем, сега ми окачат
вѣжето
и питат:

«Как, искаш ли час да
живееш?»

Веднага ще кресна:

«Свалете!

Свалете!

По-скоро свалете

вѣжето, злодеи!»

За него — живота —
направил бих всичко. —
Летял бих

със пробна машина в

небето,

бих влезнал във възривна
ракета, самичък,

бих търсил в простора

далечна
планета.

Но все пак ще чувствам
приятния гъдел
да гледам как
горе

небето синее.
Все пак ще чувствам
приятния гъдел,
че още живея,
че още ще бъда.

Но ето, да кажем,
вий вземате, колко?—
пшеничено зърно
от моята вера,
бих ревнал тогава,
бих ревнал от болка
като ранена
в сърцето пантера.

Какво ще остане
от мене тогава?—
Миг след грабежа
ще бъда разнищен.

И още по-ясно
и още по-право—
миг след грабежа
ще бъда аз нищо.

Може би искате
да я сразите
моята вяра
във дните честити,—
моята вяра,
че утре ще бъде
животът по-хубав,
животът по-мъдър?

А как ще шурмувате,
моля?
С куршуми?
Не! Неуместно!
Ресто! —Не струва! —

Тя е бронирана
здраво в гърдите
и бронебойни патрони
за нея
няма открити!
Няма открити!

SECTION 3. MACEDONIAN

INTRODUCTION

By an irony of history the people whose ancestors gave to the Slavs their first literary language, were the last to have their modern language recognized as a separate Slavonic language, distinct from the neighbouring Serbian and Bulgarian. In medieval times the Macedonian people formed part of the Bulgarian and Serbian kingdoms and of the Byzantine Empire, until they were finally swallowed up by the Osmanli Turks in the fifteenth century. The majority of them remained under Turkey till the beginning of the twentieth century, when she was finally expelled from the Balkans in 1912. Then the Macedonian people were split up between the three neighbouring countries of Serbia, Bulgaria, and Greece—a state of affairs which still partially persists to-day, as there are still about a quarter of a million Macedonians in both Greece and Bulgaria. The Macedonians, though thus divided and small in numbers and though exploited economically and politically, nevertheless managed to preserve their distinctive dialects and culture, largely in their villages and smaller towns. The bigger centres were in earlier centuries for the most part turkicized, at least superficially.

Their own poets and scholars, such as the brothers D. and K. Miladinov in the nineteenth century, and B. Koneski, V. Iljoski, and K. Tošev in our day, as well as scholars from Russia and Western Europe, such as A. M. Seliščev, A. Mazon, and A. Vailant, have collected many beautiful folk-songs and delightful folk-stories, treasures of folk-lore preserved by the people. The melodies of their songs, in beauty and subtlety, compare favourably with any in the Balkans, which are one of Europe's richest regions in this respect. Thus the Macedonians, though oppressed and poor, preserved their national identity and their cultural and artistic individuality.

Macedonian was recognized as a literary language quite recently, during the struggle for liberation by the Yugoslav peoples during the last (1939-45) war. On 29th September, 1943, at the second session of AVNOJ (Anti-fascist Council for the National Liberation of Yugoslavia) at Jajce, the Macedonian people was recognized as a separate nationality with its own language. And on 2nd August, 1944, at a meeting in the monastery of St. Prohor Pčiniski, the Macedonian people formally joined the new federal Yugoslavia, as

an independent people with their own official and literary language. Since then much publishing of books, periodicals, and newspapers in Macedonian has taken place, and great progress has been made in developing a complete official and literary language. But in certain smaller points the language is still in a state of active development and stabilization, especially as regards the spoken language of educated speakers. The last orthographical reforms took place in 1970 with the publication of the new *Præonuc*.

One of the earliest records of Macedonian is to be found in the *Lexicon tetraglosson* of Hadži Daniil, first published in 1764 at Voskopojë (Moschopolis) in Albania.¹ Hadži Daniil was a Vlach (Aromun) scholar whose object in this work was to teach Greek to, and hellenize the non-Greek inhabitants of the southern Balkans. His *Lexicon in four languages* contains passages in Greek translated into Albanian, Vlach, and what he calls "Bulgarian". But as Mazon and Vaillant point out,² the language recorded is actually a fairly exact picture of the language spoken in the region of Bitolj (Monastir)—in Macedonian Bitola) in the middle of the eighteenth century.

It was not till some fifty years later that native Macedonians tried to use their own language in literary works. The first to do so were two monks, Joakim Krčovski and Kiril Pejčinovič. Krčovski, born in the region of Kičevo, worked also as a teacher and moved about from place to place. He published four religious works, printed in Buda between 1814 and 1819, and died in 1820. Pejčinovič was born in 1771, in the village of Tearce in the Tetovo district of Western Macedonia and spent most of his life in monasteries. He was a pupil of Krčovski for a time. His two works, also of a religious character, appeared at Buda in 1816 and at Salonika in 1840. He died in 1845. Both these writers tried to write in a simple popular language, comprehensible to the people, and modelled themselves on the Bulgarian writer, Sofronij Vračanski, and the Serbian reformer, Vuk Karadžić. Krčovski's language is rather more artificial and is a mixture of various dialects—doubtless due to his many changes of habitat. Pejčinovič attained a more lively and popular style and based his language mainly on the dialect of the Tetovo district. His writings are more emotional and personal, though also on religious themes (e.g. his

¹See also our chapter on Bulgarian.

²See Mazon and Vaillant, *L'Evangéliste de Kulakia*,

"Ogledalo" = Mirror), and are exclusively inspired by a zeal to spread and heighten Christian morality. Neither he nor Krčovski sound any note of protest on behalf of their people, or show any sign of an awakened national consciousness.

The second half of the nineteenth century saw the fight of the Southern Slavs of Orthodox faith against the domination of Greek influence, centred in Constantinople, over all their church and cultural affairs. The famous national champion, Dimitar Miladinov, was born in Struga on Lake Ohrid in 1810, and was brought up in Greek schools. In 1840 he was a teacher in his native town, teaching in Greek. The Russian scholar, Grigoróvič, visited him at his school in 1845 and asked why he did not teach in his native tongue, and encouraged him to do so. "Are you not our brothers?" he said. From then on, D. Miladinov turned more and more toward his native Slav language and the Cyrillic alphabet, and became a resolute opponent of Panhellenism. He gradually became absorbed in the struggle and developed a fanatical Bulgarian national consciousness. (The Macedonians did not regard themselves as a separate nation yet.)

He had a number of famous pupils, among them his younger brother, Konstantin Miladinov (born in Struga, 1830), Rajko Žinzifov (b. in Veles, 1839), Grigor Prličev, Partenij Zografski, and Kuzman Šapkarev. He directed them to Russia for their education; and his brother Konstantin, Žinzifov and Zografski were able to attend Russian universities where they studied Slavonic philology in the late fifties.

K. Miladinov, Žinzifov, and Prličev laid the foundations of modern Macedonian poetry, into which they introduced entirely novel and inspired elements.

K. Miladinov, a born poet, contracted consumption in Moscow under the rigours of student life in those days. His poems often express his aversion to the northern climate and his longing for his native South. He based his style and language on Macedonian folk poetry which he knew well, and succeeded in writing genuine poetry. In Moscow he and Žinzifov fraternized with prominent Bulgarian leaders of the day, such as Ljuben Karavelov, the poet, and Marin Drinov. Their whole group was under the influence of the democratic wing of the Russian Slavophiles, led by Aksákov. In 1861, K. Miladinov went to Zagreb. There the Croat bishop and patriot, Josip Štrossmajer, helped him to publish his big collection (Zbornik) of six hundred Macedonian folk epics and lyrics. It was the first publication of its kind, and Štrossmajer had persuaded him to transcribe it from the Greek alpha-

bet into the Cyrillic.¹ That year his brother Dimitar was arrested by the Turks, who were influenced by the slander of the Greek church authorities and imprisoned him in Constantinople. Konstantin promptly went there to intercede for his brother and was himself imprisoned. The two brothers died in captivity early the following year.

Rajko Žinzifov remained in Russia all the rest of his life, working as a secondary school teacher. He was a Slavonic scholar and translated the "Слово о полку Игореве", the poems of Мевченко, and even the Czech Ossianic forgery, the *Krdlovédvorský rukopis*. He was also an active publicist for the Macedonian cause. He was the first to protest against the economic oppression of Macedonia. He also wrote the first short story in Macedonia. He also wrote the scribbling the sufferings of the Macedonian peasants at the hands of the Greek priests. He was an ardent Slavophil and loved the folklore of his native land. In Russia he felt himself isolated, and his poetry expresses his longing for his native land and his doubts as to the reality of his achievements. The Ukrainian poet, Мевченко, exercised the most powerful influence on him. Žinzifov wrote in a mixed language, strongly influenced by Bulgarian. His accentuation and prosody also show the influence of Russian and Ukrainian.

Grigor Prličev showed that he was undoubtedly a gifted poet when he wrote in Greek; but when he tried to write in Slavonic, he wrote in a painfully mixed language, apparently unaware that his own native Macedonian would best serve him as a medium of expression. He translated the *Iliad*, and at the end of his life he lamented that he could never completely master Bulgarian.

Kuzman Šapkarev and Marko Čepenkov both collected folk songs, stories, proverbs, and riddles. Šapkarev published a big collection in 1891. Čepenkov, who was a tailor in Prilep, published his many contributions in collections published by the Ministry of Education in Sofia.

But these preparations did not lead to an immediate growth of Macedonian literature on a big scale owing to the expansion at that time of Pan-Serb and Pan-Bulgar political influences, for both Bulgars and

¹The Greek alphabet was at that time freely used for Macedonian. For instance, in 1852, Kirjak Dražilovec of Voden (Edessa) printed in Salonika in the Greek alphabet a translation of the Gospels into Macedonian, made by the monk Pavel Božigropski who was born in the village of Konikovo, near Voden.

Serbs laid claim to Macedonian folk poetry as their own. And Greek church influence held education firmly in its own hands. Šapkarev's school textbooks in Macedonian were forbidden.

One of the most interesting and important figures of the Macedonian national revival was the writer, publicist and teacher, Krste P. Misirkov (1874-1926). He was born in Postol (Aegean Macedonia) and first went to the Greek primary school there; but he finished his rather troubled schooling mainly in Belgrade, and in 1895 completed his course at the teachers' training college there. He then decided to go for further study first to the Ecclesiastical Seminary in Poltava (Ukraine) and then to the University of St. Petersburg, where he graduated in the faculty of history and philology in 1902. He was acutely aware of the political dilemma of his people under Turkish rule, being as they were the target of propaganda from Serbia and Bulgaria alike, as well as from the great powers interested in the Balkans. His main work, "За македонските работи" (On Macedonian affairs) was suppressed after being printed in Sofia in 1903, and very few copies survived destruction. His periodical, "Баднап", suffered a similar fate after the first issue was printed in Odessa in 1905 but was never published. His main advocacy was for the independence of the Macedonian people who he thought at first should remain loyal to the Turkish Sultan. In respect of the Macedonian language he advocated basing the literary language on the dialects of Veles, Prilep, Bitola and Ohrid, remarkably enough the very dialects on which the modern literary language was founded after 1944, the dialects of central and western Macedonia. Due to the suppression of his publications, his views expressed in these works were only known to an extremely small circle until after the second world war. In 1913 he advocated his ideas in the Macedonian émigrés' paper published in St. Petersburg in Russian, called "Македонский роман". At the time of the Russian revolution he was a teacher in Kishinév (Moldavia) which was annexed by Romania. Misirkov then went again to Bulgaria where he worked mostly as a teacher, in difficult material circumstances. He died in poverty and obscurity in Sofia, Bulgaria, in 1926. But even though he was not in a position to evolve and finalize the orthography and grammatical norms of Macedonian as we know them today, he is now honoured in Macedonia as one of the chief founders of modern literary Macedonian.

Only after the first world war was there an op-

portunity for the nation to consolidate culturally and gather strength. Curiously enough, drama led the way. B. Iljoski, A. Panov, and R. Krleski wrote plays about local life and customs ("6m"), which accorded with the interest of Serbian theatres in this subject at that time and were allowed to be performed. The first play in Macedonian had actually been written considerably earlier—in 1900, by Vojdan Černodrinski.

Soon afterwards three of Macedonia's best-known modern poets started their activity: Kosta Racin, Kole Nedelkovski, and Venko Markovski. They all three took the national folk-poetry as their starting point and basis.

Racin (b. 1909) was the son of a poor potter in Veles, and at first followed his father's trade. He was largely self-educated. His poetry expresses the bitterness of his nation's struggle for freedom against oppression and poverty and a presentiment of her coming liberation. He took an active part in illegal political work for his nation, and was hounded by the police. His only volume of poems (Бели мурџи) was published in Zagreb in 1938. In 1942, when he was arrested by the police in Skopje, his landlady burnt his unpublished poetry. Earlier the Serbian police had burnt the manuscript of his novel *Optum*. He joined the Partisans during the second world war and died on service in the summer of 1943.

Nedelkovski was born in the village of Vojnica in the district of Veles in 1912. He grew up in great poverty and had to leave school early and became a house painter in Skopje. In 1933, he went to live a lonely life in Sofia. There he met Venko Markovski, whose poetry greatly moved him. He started publishing in 1939, and later produced two small volumes of very successful and moving lyrics. He was an active political worker in his nation's cause. In 1941, he committed suicide to avoid arrest by the police in Sofia, when he found he could not escape.

Markovski was born in 1915. His first lyrics were in the folk style and of extreme beauty. Later he published poetry in a more individual style and on political and war themes, not dissimilar to that of the Soviet modernists. He also was an active political worker, and went to Sofia at the end of 1937. During the second world war he fought in the ranks of the Partisans. He has described the long struggle of the Macedonian people for liberation. His many volumes of poetry, both because of their aesthetic value and also their progressive ideas, have greatly con-

tributed to the formation of the modern Macedonian literary language.

These three poets helped finally to establish¹ the central dialect as the basis of the modern literary language. Thus the speech of some of Macedonia's biggest towns, Prilep, Bitola, Veles, and Kičevo, round which lives the most compact mass of Macedonian population, became the model for the whole nation. The dialects of western Macedonia stand closest to this central one. (See § on "Dialects" and "Features Characteristic of Macedonian" for further details.) The Cyrillic alphabet, on phonetic principles, had now long been in use, and in 1945 the main rules of the orthography were laid down in the official "Правилник", slightly revised in 1948.² Since then, publishing in Macedonian of papers, text-books, translations, and original literature has gone on apace in the new federal Yugoslavia. The Macedonians in Yugoslavia at last have their own National Republic. Their language has been recognized, their literature is growing.

THE MACEDONIAN ALPHABET

<i>Macedonian</i>	<i>Approximate English Equivalent</i>
А а	(more open and forward than) <i>a</i> ^h
Б б	<i>b</i>
В в	<i>v</i>
Г г	<i>g</i> in "go"
Д д	<i>d</i> (dental)
Ѓ ѓ	voiced midpalatal plosive, cf. <i>đ</i> in "dew"
Е е	<i>e</i> in "met"
Ж ж	<i>zh</i> , <i>s</i> in "pleasure"
З з	<i>z</i>
С с	<i>dz</i> pronounced together, as in "adze"
И и	<i>ee</i> , <i>i</i> in "machine"
Ј ј	<i>y</i> in both "boy" and "yes"
К к	<i>k</i>
Л л	<i>l</i> ³
Љ љ	medium <i>l</i> in "let"
М м	<i>m</i>
Н н	<i>n</i>
Њ њ	soft <i>n</i> , <i>ni</i> in "onion"

¹Other notable modern poets are: Blaže Koneski, G.

Ivanovski, and S. Janevski. ² See also p. 138, lines 9-10.

³Л, л is pronounced hard [l] before the back vowels а, о, у, and medium before е and и, and ј.

Macedonian Approximate English Equivalent

О	о	in "for"
П	п	
Р	р ¹	rolled
С	с	s in "see"
Т	т	(dental)
Ќ	ќ	unvoiced midpalatal plosive, cf. <i>t</i> in "tune"
У	у	oo in "boot", <i>u</i> in "rule"
Ф	ф	<i>f</i>
Х	х	<i>ch</i> in "loch"
Ц	ц	<i>ts</i> pronounced together, as in "bits"
Ч	ч	<i>ch</i> in "church"
Џ	џ	<i>j</i> in "jam"
Ш	ш	<i>sh</i>

The Macedonian alphabet is the same as the Serbian Cyrillic, except that it replaces *h* and *h* by the typically Macedonian palatal plosives *ř* and *ķ* respectively, and adds the letter *s* to represent the typically Macedonian sound *đ*. The form *s* goes back to a letter of similar shape and representing the same sound in Old Slavonic. Otherwise, the same differences between the Macedonian and the Old Slavonic (and also the Russian) alphabets exist, as between Serbian Cyrillic and Old Slavonic (and Russian) Cyrillic.

PRONUNCIATION

The spelling of literary Macedonian is phonetic —one letter represents one sound only, as in Serbo-Croatian. The only exceptions to this rule are due to the assimilation of consonants in groups and to the unvoicing of final voiced consonants, apart from the two variants of *l* mentioned on page 143, footnote No. 3.

The Accent

The accent in Macedonian is a purely stress ac-

¹p, p can be vocalic, as in *дрво* (= wood), *крвав* (= bloody). When it is vocalic initially, an apostrophë is used before it: 'пк (= rye), 'рфа (= rust).

The apostrophë is also used to indicate the "neutral vowel", *ə* (= *a* in Eng. "about"), which occurs in foreign and dialectal words, e.g.:—

к'смет = fate
В'чко (a name)

cent, as in Bulgarian and East Slav. ("Musical accent" or intonations do not exist here.) In literary Macedonian the stress is placed on the third syllable from the end in words of three or more syllables and on the first syllable of dissyllables,¹ e.g.:—

планина = mountain
дуќан = shop

When a monosyllabic suffix is added, e.g. the definite article, to words of three or more syllables the accent shifts forward by one syllable, keeping to the third from the end. E.g.:—

планината = the mountain

On dissyllabic words with a suffix it is kept on the third from the end, e.g.:—

дуќанот = the shop
куќата = the house

Monosyllabic nouns never have the article stressed, in contrast to Bulgarian, e.g.:—

град = city граѓот = the city,
cf. Bulg. град, граѓт

леб = bread, лебот = the bread
ноќ = night, ноќта = the night

Irregular accents occur with monosyllabic prepositions, conjunctions, pronouns, the negative *не*, and with adjectives before nouns and the article when attached to an adjective, owing to a tendency of shorter words to form dactylic groups (²...) on the model of the trisyllabic and longer words. See the accented text at the end of this section in which there occur:—

кај него = to him
до неа = to her
по глава = on the head
да прави = to do
ако не *с*д сториш тоа = if you do not do this
болната нога = the sick foot

See also on the Enclitics and Proclitics under "Word Order with Enclitics".

Foreign words also have an irregular accent, mostly in accordance with that in the language of origin, e.g.:—

¹The words *опвај* = hardly, *рамѝ* = just, all accented on the final syllable, are exceptions.

клише = cliché
помѣна = pomade
бирѣ = office
меморандум = memorandum
досиѣ = dossier
литература = literature

The Present Gerund of all verbs is always stressed on the penultimate syllable. (see p. 205.)

The Vowels

In literary Macedonian the vowels should always be clearly pronounced, whether stressed or unstressed, as in Serbocroatian and West Slav. This is one of the main characteristics of literary Macedonian, distinguishing it from the Bulgarian of many speakers (also from Russian) and from certain Macedonian dialects. In contrast to Serbocroatian, Slovenian, Czech and Slovak, there are no long vowels in literary Macedonian.

The Macedonian o is pronounced like a short o in Serbocroatian.

The neutral vowel, indicated by an apostrophé, occurs only in foreign words and in Macedonian dialects. Vocalic p is as frequent as in Serbocroatian.

C.S. vocalic ǝ has become -ол-.
For consecutive vowels see under "The use of j" below.

A "movable a" occurs in words ending in -изам (= -ism), e.g.:—

романтизам = romanticism, but—
романтизмот = the romanticism (of...)

E and a are used as the "fill-vowels" in consonant groups, e.g.:—

ветер = wind, cf. O.S. вѣтръ
храбар = brave, cf. O.S. храбръ

But the C.S. semivowels ъ and ь become o and e in Macedonian, when developed, e.g.:—

тежок (masc.) = heavy, fem. тешка, O.S. тажѣкъ
редок (masc.) = rare, fem. ретка, O.S. рѣдѣкъ
ден = day, O.S. днь

Borrowed words preserve the fill-vowel used in the language borrowed from, e.g.:—

метар = metre
Александар = Alexander
Днепар = Dnieper

} from Serbocroatian

The Consonants

	Bi-labial	Labio-dental	Dental	Dento-alveolar	Alveolar	Palatal	Velar
Plosive	п б		т д			ќ ǣ	к г
Affricate				ц с	ч ʃ		
Fricative		ф в		с з	ш ж	ј	х
Nasal	м		н			њ	(ŋ)
Lateral			л (ɭ)				
Rolled					р		
Semivowel						ј	

The consonants of Macedonian are the same as those of Serbocroatian and Bulgarian, except in the following respects:—

1. Macedonian possesses the sound ǣ, written s, in contrast to Serbocr. and most words in Bulg. E.g.:—

свезда = star
сид = wall
свонец = bell
свеп = beast
јанса =ague, chill; "jitters"

and in some foreign words:—

сенсеп = (kind of) apricot

2. Macedonian ǣ, ǣ are midpalatal plosives (or affricates with some speakers) and usually correspond to Serbocr. h, ъ, e.g.:—

куќа	= house	Serb.	cf. also Bulg.
цвеќе	= flowers	кѹѹа	кѹѹа
ќе	= will, shall	цвѣѣе	цветѣѣ
дукан	= shop	ѹе	ше
меѓа	= boundary	дѹѹан	дукѹѹн
туѓ	= strange	мѣѣа	междѣѣ
ѣвол	= devil	тѹѹѣ	чѹѹѣ
шеќер	= sugar	ѣѹѹол	ѣѹѹол
калуѓер	= monk	шѣѣер	(зѣѣар)
		калѹѹер	калѹѹер

But cf. also:—

ангел = angel
лѹѹе = people
ќ is never written before и.
Serbian names with ѣ and ѹ are regularly trans-

scribed in Macedonian with *ř* and *ǣ* respectively.
E.g.:—

Ђурић = Ѓурик

3. Љ, љ were described by Kepeski as "half-soft" palatal consonants. For practical purposes the pronunciation of љ may be regarded as the same as in Serbo-cr. But Macedonian љ is much less palatal than љ in Serbo-cr. and much nearer medium *l*, as in Czech and *l* in Serbo-cr., e.g.:—

Љубов = love

Кољо man's name

In many words in Macedonian either hard *л* or *лј* occur where Serbo-cr. has љ, e.g.:—

недела = Sunday	cf. Socr. недеља
постела = bed	постеља
учител = teacher	учитељ
лут = angry, hot (in taste)	љут
луге = people	људи
	etc.

On the other hand:—

волја = will	cf. Socr. воља
зелје = greens	зеље
илјада = thousand	хйљада
	etc.

л is pronounced medium before *ј* as in волја (= will) above.

Before *е* and *и* it is also a medium *l* as in Bulg. before *е* and *и* and as in Socr. before all vowels.

Before *а*, *о*, *у* it is a hard *l* as in Bulg. and Russian.

4. The affricates *ч* and *џ* in Macedonian, though hard, are not as hard as in Serbo-croatian. Being compounds of *ш* and *ж* (i.e. *тш* and *дж*) and not having to be distinguished from *ћ* and *ђ*, they are pronounced with the tip of the tongue further forward than in Serbo-cr.

5. A characteristic feature of Macedonian is the frequent dropping of *х* or the replacing of *х* by *в* or *ј*, e.g.:—

леб = bread	зедов = I took (Aor.)	сторив = I did
страв = terror	зедовме = we took	сторивме = we did
тичко = quietly	зедоа = they took	сторија = they did
итно = urgently	виор = whirlwind	уво = ear
убав = beautiful	муза = a fly	глув = deaf

Хв becomes *ф*, as in Serbo-cr. dialects and collo-

quially in Serbo-cr., e.g.:—

фаќам = I seize, begin
фрлам = I throw, cf. Bulg. хвѣрлям

6. *The use of j.*—When two vowels occur consecutively in a word, *j* is used to avoid hiatus only between *и* and *а*, and when three vowels would otherwise occur consecutively. E.g.:—

пијам	= I drink
сторија	= they did
Македонија	= Macedonia
знаеја	= they knew

In foreign words, too, there is now, according to the latest orthography, a *j* between *и* and *а*, e.g.:—

материјал = material
варијанта = variant

-aa- is frequent in Macedonian, e.g.:—

траам	= I last
бараат	= they seek
оваа	= this (fem.)
бегaa	= they were running

Other examples of consecutive vowels:—

знае	= knows
заам, dial. for заем	= loan
пеам	= I sing
грее	= warms
пее	= sings
трофеи	= trophies
ножеи, dial. for ножеви	= knives
неугоден	= unsuitable
ние	= we
пиеше	= he was drinking
судии	= judges
виор	= whirlwind
нашиот	= our (masc.)
стоам	= I stand
тоа	= this (neut.)
зборои, dial. for зборови	= words
поубав	= more beautiful
пиуат	= they write
пише	= writes

now: пишувам, пишува

These consecutive vowels are pronounced with their full value and are not reduced, except sometimes in the dialectal and poetic masc. plur. forms such as:—

свѣќа = candle, is pronounced [sfeca], сфѣќа
сват = wedding quest, " " [sfat], сфат

Likewise 3 before ʏ and ж is pronounced ж but is preserved as 3 in spelling; e.g.:—

пацавка (ce) = starts yapping, pron. пацавка (ce)
 разжавака¹ = I chew up, " разжавака

Double Consonants

Double consonants are generally avoided in Macedonian, as in:—

одамна = long ago < одамна < оддавна

Similarly з, after changing to с, is dropped in:—

исечам = I cut out < иссечам < иссечам
 расипам = I spoil < рассипам < рассипам
 бесмртен = immortal < бессмртен < бессмртен

and:

раширам = I widen < раширам < раширам

Feminine nouns in -ст, when the definite article -та is added, lose one -т-, e.g.:—

радост = joy, but радоста = the joy
 маст = grease, " маста
 свест = consciousness, " свеста
 conscience

but e.g. пролет = spring, пролетта, pronounced with double т.

Prefixes, the original meaning of which is emphasized, are not reduced. E.g.:—

одделам = I divide off
 оттука = from here
 наадавам = I give extra, add
 раззеленам = I make green
 бессилен = powerless
 најјасен = clearest

н is never written or pronounced as a double consonant in Macedonian.

Further Consonantal Changes

Notice the peculiarly Macedonian change of с, з, ч, ш, ж and ј all to в before the diminutive ending -че. This change is reflected in the spelling. E.g.:—

мостче = little bridge < мост-че
 гусче = gosling from гуска = goose
 мавче = kitten " мавка = cat
 појавче = little belt " појас
 грозче = little bunch " грозд = bunch of grapes

¹More usually: пазивакам.

тровче = little crumb from трощка
 крлевче = little tick " крлеж
 шамивче = little ketchief " шамија (See p. 161, No. 5)

Notice the change of в to м before н in:—

одамна = long ago < оддавна
 рамно = on a level with < равнo

MACEDONIAN DIALECTS

These are divided according to their accent and certain other linguistic features into:—

1. The Western dialects. These are further subdivided into:—

(a) the central group of the Veles, Prilep, Kičevo, and Bitola (Bitolj) regions, with the accent fixed on the third syllable from the end of a word. If a word is lengthened by the addition of a suffix, the accent still remains on the third syllable from the end by shifting forward a syllable, e.g.:—

воденица = water-mill, воденџата = the watermill

The Western dialects (central group) are also characterized by the following main features:—

I. Three forms of the article, e.g.:—

волот = the ox
 волов = the ox here
 волон = the ox there

II. The clear pronunciation of all vowels, whether accented or not.

III. The vowel а representing C.S. ѡ (O.S. ѡ).
 E.g.:—

пака = hand, O.S. пака
 пат = road, O.S. патъ

This group of dialects is the basis of modern literary Macedonian.

(b) the dialect of the Debar-Galičnik region, with features:—

I. о for literary а (from ѡ), e.g.:—

пот (for пат) = road

II. мие = we, instead of ние

2. The South-western dialect of the Koster (in Greek: Castoria)—Lerin (Greek: Florina) region, spoken mainly in Northern Greece, and characterized by having the accent on the penultimate syllable, e.g.:—

бабѣчка = grandmother
бабица = granny

Closely related are the dialects of Tikveš and Mariovo, which accent the penultimate or propenultimate, but never the final syllable of words. They also drop vowels, as in дѣт'о = the child, дѣц'та = the children, c'te = all (pl.).

3. The South-eastern dialect, spoken in the region of Gevgelija, Strumica, and Lake Dojran, characterized by a stress which gravitates towards the penultimate syllable, and by the shortening of words, e.g. учѣт'ле = teachers, and by the ending -ум in the 1st pers. sg. Present, e.g. нѣсум = I carry.

4. The dialect of the Kukuš and Voden (in Greek: Kilikis and Edessa) region in Northern Greece, with a mobile (shifting) accent which has a tendency to fall on either of the last two syllables of a word, and with modified (reduced) vowels, e.g.:—

јабѣлка = apple
синѣви = sons
дубѣт'к = cattle, income
урѣч = ploughman
чувѣк = person, man

5. The Eastern dialect of the Štip and Pirin (Bulgaria) region, with a mobile accent which tends towards one of the final three syllables of a word, e.g.:—

ѣстина = truth
рабѣта = work, thing
дојдѣ = he came

The closely related dialect of Maleševo and Gorna Džumajà (Bulgaria) is characterized by the masc. definite article ending -о and by a mobile accent: гласѣ = the voice, гласѣверо = the voices; Станкѣ Voc. (girl's name).

6. The Northern dialect of the Kumanovo-Kratovo region, with features showing a transition to the Serbian dialects of the Morava valley, e.g.:—

дѣн for lit. ден (O.S. дѣнь) = day
сѣн " сон (" сѣнь) = dream
Видеа с'м га Стојан = I have seen Stoyan
Ја ву кажа = I told her
Поздрави гу мајку = Greet mother

¹These two dialects could be counted as one, according to K. Tošev,—see Македонски јазик, I, 9-10, p. 199.

In scattered areas of S. Macedonia we have traces surviving of the old nasal pronunciation of former nasal vowels. The most solid area is in the region of Kostur (Castoria). There are also six villages north-east of Salonica and four villages near Seres (Sër) with this pronunciation. Here we have the pronunciations ън/ѣм in many words for former ѣ, but not consistently, e.g. бѣнди! = be!, and the pronunciations ен/ем, also after *chuintantes* and j, for former а: гренди! = come!, женден = thirsty, ензик = tongue.

VOWEL GRADATION AND VOWEL LENGTHENING

These two features exist also in Macedonian.

Examples:—

Vowel Gradation

донеси! = bring (Pfve.); носеме = she was carrying
= death; да умрат = that they (should) die
= tired (Pfve.); умреа = they died; уморен = tired
разбрав = I understood; да разбере = that he
= should understand; избор = a choice
= derived (Nom. pl.); наводи = quotes
= I said, печеница = sentence (with 1st
= palatalization); прирок = predicate
= freezes; мраз = frost
дујам = I blow; здив = breath, gasp
= sings; пој! = sing!

Vowel Lengthening

роден = born; раѓање = birth
разбрав = I understood; разбирам = I understand
одам = I go away, walk (< ход-); доваѓа = comes
(< дохадја)
се разлеат = they overflow, or are poured out; нали-
ваше = he was pouring (in)
говор = speech; разговарав со М. = I was talking
to M.

SLAVONIC CHARACTERISTICS

1. The Metathesis of liquids. In Macedonian this takes place, as in other South Slav languages, with the vowel o becoming a after the preceding r or r in all cases and with no further developments.

E.g.:—

град = town млеко = milk
глава = head работа = work, thing
брег = coast, hill

¹Notice the further change to ш in e.g. *junаштво* < *junачьство* = heroism. Cf. *филотор* = philologist, adj. *филоторски* < *филоложск-* = philological, by analogy, as in *Sber.*

N.B. Ъ is an independent phoneme in Macedonian, as

in:—

любов = love

бела = misfortune >< бела = white (fem. sg.)
Коло (a name) >< коло = wheel, series

After p, j disappears in Macedonian, except when derived from -ъј-, e.g.:—

more = sea, cf. O.S. морѣ

but—

приморје = littoral, coast, from -рје
борје = pines (collective plural)

The labials п, б, в, м are preserved before j, which itself also remains unchanged and is not preceded by any kind of /л/, e.g.:—

копје = lance
сабја = sabre
дрвје = trees
земја = earth

Both ст and ск become ш before j, e.g.:—

напуштам = I leave (root: пуст-)
огниште = fireplace, hearth (< огникје)
трештен = cracked, mad; cf. треска =
to knock; to talk nonsense

ж is preserved before j, as in:—

оружје = arms

5. The dropping of consonants.

The dropping of x or its replacement by в or j, as mentioned in point 5 under the heading "Pronunciation—The Consonants", p. 148, is the most frequent and characteristic phenomenon in this sphere in Macedonian.

в is omitted in certain instances:—

тоа = this (neut.), cf. Bulg. това
зема (Ipfv.) = takes, Pfv. земе
Малески (a surname)
се(го) = all (neut.)

Further, т is dropped in the groups стј, стл, стн, etc., e.g.:—

лисје = leaves
послан = spread out; polite; well brought up
жалосн-а, -о, -и and in masc. by analogy
жалосен = sad, pitiful

Similarly:

радосн-а, -о, -и and радосен = joyous
свесн-а, -о, -и " свесен = conscious, etc.

But some more literary adjectives restore the -т- in the masc. sing., e.g.:—

месн-а, -о, -и = local, but masc. месрен
усн-а, -о, -и = oral, " устрен

Similarly:

немошн-а, -о, -и = sick, masc. sing. by
analogy немошен
помошн-а, -о, -и = auxiliary, masc. sing. by
analogy помошен

Also помощник = assistant

but:

училишн-а, -о, -и = school (adj.), masc.
sing. училиштен
чудовишн-а, -о, -и = monstrous, masc.
sing. чудовиштен

д is dropped in the groups здј, здн, ждн;
e.g.:—

прозје = grapes
празн-а, -о, -и and празен = empty
нужн-а, -о, -и " нужен = needed, necessary

But notice the literary words:—

бездна = abyss
свезден, свездн-а, -о, -и = starry

The combination -је- is foreign to Macedonian, as it is to Bulgarian. Therefore, in contrast to Serbo-Croatian, Russian and other Slavonic languages, there is no j before e in words like:—

е = is ткае = weaves
еден = one = which (neut.), cf.
езеро = lake Socr. које
предпријатие = undertaking, company

6. Epenthetic н always appears in the Personal Pronoun of the 3rd person, when used in its full, non-enclitic form in the two oblique cases, e.g.:—

Acc. sing. masc.: него = him
Dat. plur. all genders: ним = to them

Also in:—

внимавам = I pay attention
внимание = attention

Notice the prothetic в in вистина = truth, and its derivatives.

FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF MACEDONIAN

Exclusively Macedonian features are the following:—

1. C.S. *o* (O.S. *ж*) represented by *a* in most words:—

рака = hand, O.S. *ржака*
пат = road, O.S. *пѣтъ*

According to the latest orthography (1970), in the following words and in words derived from them, original *o* (*ж*) is represented in modern literary Macedonian by *y*:—

куќа	= house	судбина	= fate
кус	= short	сушт	= real, genuine
пупка	= bud, pimple	сопруг(а)	= spouse, (wife)
суд	= law court	труба	= trumpet
гуска	= goose	гужва	= a crowd
круг	= circle	густ	= thick
мудар	= wise	желудник	= stomach
орудие	= tool	скуден	= scanty, sparse
оружје	= arms	нуди	= to offer
отсутен	= absent	су-	= as a verbal prefix, e.g. <i>супеди</i>
присутен	= present		= to put in order

2. C.S. *tj*, *dj* represented by *ќ*, *ј* respectively, e.g.:—

свеќа = candle
меѓа = boundary

A few words have -шт-, -жд-; e.g.:—

горешт = hot
свештеник = priest
пештера = cave
нужда = need, etc.

Similarly C.S. *ktj* becomes *ќ*, e.g.:—

ноќ = night

3. C.S. *ž* (O.S. *џ*) represented everywhere by plain *e* (phon. *ɛ*) without differences of length (as in Slovenian and Serbo-croatian) and without palatalization of the preceding consonant. E.g.:—

место = place
век = century, age
дело = a work

4. C.S. *ch* (O.S. *x*) replaced by *v* in ordinary, not specifically literary Macedonian words,

(cf. p. 148, No. 5), e.g.:—

мов = moss (cf. Russ. *мох*, Socr. *max*)
грав = pea
мува = a fly
видов (Aor.) = I saw
можев (Imperfect) = I was able

But (lit.) *успех* = success, *дух* = spirit. Final *в* is pronounced *ф* [f].

5. The change of *с*, *з*, *ч*, *ж*, *ш* and *ј* to *в* (pron. *f*) before -*че* and, rarely, before -*ци*, -*ца*, -*це* (see p. 152-153); e.g.:—

гувче = gosling (< *гуска*)
мавче = kitten (< *мачка*)
глушец = mouse, plur. *глушци*
мавца = fat (< *маст*)
мевце = a bit of meat (< *месо*)

6. Fixed accent on the third syllable from the end. (See p. 144-145.)

7. Three forms of the definite article (see Morphology below), e.g.:—

вол (= ox), волот (= the ox), волов (= the ox here),
волон (= the ox there)
пака (= hand), паката (= the hand), пакана (= the hand there); etc.

8. The regular use of double Personal and Interrogative Pronouns, and of corresponding enclitic pronouns when the object is definite. E.g.:—

Hero *го. носам* = I am carrying him
Фатете *ја мачката* = Catch the cat!

Cf. the Bulgarian use of double Personal Pronouns for emphasis.

9. The generalization of the ending -*ам* for the 1st pers. sing. Pres. of verbs of all classes, e.g.:—

идам	= I come, 2nd pers. sing.: <i>идеш</i>
носам	= I carry, " " : <i>носиш</i>
викам	= I call, " " : <i>викаш</i>

10. The use of a Past Tense formed with the verb 'I have' + Past Participle *Passive* similar to the usage in Modern Greek, e.g.:—

имам работено = I have worked

11. The use of *ќе* + Pres. Pfve. or Impfv. to express the Future tense (cf. Bulg. *ще*), e.g.:—

ке викам = I shall call (Impfve.)
 ке паднам = I shall fall (Pfve.)

12. The use of *ke* with the Imperfect and Compound Past (Indefinite Past) tenses to express unfilled conditions in the past (cf. Bulgarian), e.g.:—

јас ќе викав, да дојдеше татко.

= I would have shouted, if father had come

тој ќе дојдел тогаш, ако го пуштеле.

= He would have come then, I hear, if they had let him.

13. Past Participle Active plural in *-ле* for all genders.

FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF MACEDONIAN AND BULGARIAN

In common with Bulgarian, Macedonian has the following features:—

14. C.S. initial *je* (O.S. *ĭe*) becomes *e*, e.g.:—

езеро = lake

e = is

еден = one

15. The loss of the declensions (see Morphology below).

16. The formation of Comparative adjectives by prefixing *по-*, e.g.:—

пубав = more beautiful

17. The preservation in conversation (see Morphology below) of the Aorist and Imperfect tenses. (Cf. also Lusatian.)

18. The loss of the Infinitive, replaced by finite verbs in the Present preceded by *да*.

19. The ending *-ат* for 3rd pers. plur. Pres. of all verbs, e.g.:—

викаат = they call

носаат = they carry

идат = they come

20. The development of new compound tenses: for examples see No. 12 above,—*ке* *викав*, *ке* *дојдел*, etc.

FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF MACEDONIAN AND SERBOCROATIAN

In common with Serbo-croatian, Macedonian has the following features:—

21. The clear pronunciation of all vowels, whether stressed or unstressed, as also in West Slav.

22. The loss of *x*, as is frequent in East Serbo-croatian dialects, e.g.:—

леб for хлеб = bread

23. The development of *ч* into *ц* before vocalic *p* (*р*), e.g.:—

црн = black

црв = worm

Notice *цврст* = firm, cf. Socr. *чврст*

24. The preservation of vocalic *p*, as in Serbo-croatian, Czech, and Slovak.

25. In common with Serbo-croatian, (Slovenian), Polish and Lusatian, Macedonian has the ending *-ше* (phon. *ше*) for (Imperfective) Verbal Nouns, e.g.:—

пишување = writing

седење = sitting

FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF ALL SOUTH SLAV LANGUAGES

In common with all South Slav languages, Macedonian has the following features:—

26. C.S. *ę* (O.S. *а*) develops into *e*, e.g.:—

месо = meat

пет = five

27. C.S. *у* (O.S. *и*) becomes *и*, e.g.:—

син = son

ти = thou

28. Soft *р*'s are hardened,¹ e.g.:—

море = sea

29. Dentals are dropped before *-л* in the Past Participle Active, as also in East Slav, e.g.:—

плел = woven

повел = lead

¹For Bulgarian see p. 95, No. 20.

30. C.S. *kv* becomes *џв*, e.g.:—

цвет = flower

OTHER FEATURES

31. On the other hand, C.S. *gv* becomes *св-* as in:—

свезда = star

Other words with original *zv* in C.S. have been changed to *dzv* (*св*) by analogy. This *dzv* is also found in Polish, cf.:—

свонец = bell, Pol. *dzwonek*

свечи = rings, Pol. *dźwięk* = sound

but—

свеп = wild animal, Pol. *zwierzę*

also—

свиждук = a whistle, Pol. *gwizdnąć* = to whistle

32. As in South and East Slav, palatal and formerly palatal consonants are followed by front vowels, e.g.:—

возови = trains, but *ножеви* = knives

33. C.S. vocalic *ǝ* develops into -ол- as in Slovenian, East Slav and Lusatian, e.g.:—

волк = wolf

долг = long

34. C.S. semivowels *ъ*, *ь* develop into *о*, *е* respectively, cf. Russian and Bulgarian, e.g.:—

сон (O.S. *сънь*) = dream

пес (O.S. *пъсь*) = dog

35. The fill-vowel is *а* or *е*, e.g.:—

ветар or *ветер* = wind

оган (also: *огин*) = fire

добар (masc. sg.) = good

(see "Pronunciation: The Vowels".)

36. The metathesis of liquids occurs without further development, as in other South and West Slav languages. (See "Slavonic Characteristics", No. 1.)

MORPHOLOGY

THE TREATMENT OF NOUNS

In Macedonian the full declension of nouns has been lost, as in Bulgarian.

Most nouns have a singular and a plural form. Masculine and feminine nouns that represent persons that can be addressed, also distinguish the Vocative from the Nominative in the singular. Masculine names and masculine nouns denoting relationship, if they end in a consonant, *can* also distinguish an Oblique singular from a Nominative singular. (Nouns with the definite article, see below, only distinguish number but not case, in contrast to Bulgarian.) The other cases which are used in other Slavonic languages, are replaced analytically by prepositions, viz.:—

The Genitive is expressed by *од* = from, of,
на = of

The Dative " " *на* = to, *кај* = by,
near, *кон* =
to (wards),

до = to, *при* = to
near

The Instrumental " " *со* = with

The Locative " " *в(о)* = in, *на* = on,
при = near

(See also under "Prepositions").

In the *masculine nouns* we have therefore the following types of declensions:—

1. Proper names ending in a consonant have three cases:—

Nom. sing. *Гроздан*

Obl. sing. *Гроздана* or *Гроздан*

Voc. sing. *Гроздано* or *(еј) Гроздан*

2a. Proper names ending in -o, however, do not have a separate Vocative sing.:—

Nom./Voc. *Марко*

Obl. *Марка*

2b. Proper names in -e also have no Vocative sing. The Obl. is formed with the addition of the syllable -ra, e.g.:—

Nom./Voc. *Диме*

Obl. *Димера*

3. Proper names in -a do not decline at all, e.g.:—

Nom./Voc./Obl. *Илија, Методија*

4. Nouns denoting a male relation or member of a family and ending in a consonant such as: *брат* (= brother), *зет* (= brother-in-law, or son-in-law),

маж (= husband), син¹ (= son), distinguish a Nom., a Voc., and an Obl. in the singular when they have no article, like proper names under No. 1, and in addition they have a plural form. The Oblique form is often followed directly by a Dative enclitic pronoun (see "Pronouns" below) to indicate the "possessor" and define the noun more closely. The nouns човек (= man, person), Бог (= God) (Voc. sg. Боже!, with 1st Palatalization), Господ (= Lord) (Voc. Господи! as well as Господе!) are declined in the same way, except that the plural of човек is irregular: луѓе (= people). E.g.:—

Sing.: Nom.	зет
Obl.	зета (ми, ти, ви, му, etc.) or зет (ми, etc.)
Voc.	зете! or зету!
Plur.: (all cases)	зетови

Other masculine nouns ending in a consonant, when personified, can also be declined like this, e.g.:—

леба ми така е = By my bread, it is so!
лежи лебе, да те јадам = lie bread, let me eat you!
Likewise:—

јунак = hero, Voc. sg. јуначе!

5. Nouns denoting a relation and ending in -o, -e or -a, such as: татко (= daddy), вујко (= uncle), дедо (= grandad), чиче or чичо (= uncle (familiar)), тате (= dad), have no separate Voc. sing., and distinguish only Nom. and Obl. in the singular. Those ending in -e form Obl. sing. in -ета. Notice the special plural forms. E.g.:—

Sing.: Nom./Voc.	татко	тате	чиче
	татка	татета	чичета
Obl.	татковци	татчевци	чичевци
Plur.:			

6. Nouns ending in -a have no separate Obl. sing., e.g.:—

Sing.: Nom./Obl.	војвода	= commander, duke
	војводо or војводџ	
Voc.		
Plur.:	војводи	

7. Nouns ending in a consonant and denoting an occupation, such as: овчар (= shepherd), орач (= ploughman), воловар (= oxherd), поп (= priest),

¹Voc. sing.: сине, сину, or синко!

only distinguish a Voc. sing. and have no separate Obl. sing. The same rule applies to masculine names of animals. The plural of most of these nouns usually ends in -ови, e.g.:—

Sing.: Nom./Obl.	поп	коњ = horse
Voc.	попе!	коњу!
Plur.:	попови	коњи

Notice:—

Sing.: Nom./Obl.	сват = bride- groom's companion	вол = ox
Voc.	свате! or свату!	волу! or воле!
Plur.:	сватови	волови
Sing.: Nom./Obl.	пес = dog	волк = wolf
Voc.	песу!	волче! (with 1st Pal- atalization)!
Plur.:	пси	волци (with 2nd Pal- atalization)

The plural of most monosyllabic masculine nouns ends in -ови after hard consonants and sometimes in -еви after formerly soft consonants. (The forms retaining -в- are from the Eastern Macedonian dialects and have been adopted as standard in literary Macedonian). E.g.:—

леб = bread	Plur.	лебови = loaves
град = city		градови
број = number		бројеви
грош = small coin, groat		грошеви
цар = king		цареви

ден is treated as a hard stem in modern Macedonian: plur. денови, but also дни.

A few monosyllabic masculine nouns and all other masculine nouns have or may have a plural in -и. E.g.:—

прст = finger	пост = fast	крст = cross
прсти	пости or постови	(крсти or) крстови
Plur.:		

Some nouns ending in -ен and -ел drop the vowel e in forming their plural, e.g.:—

старец = old man,	Pl. старци
скакулец = grasshopper,	" скакулици
петел = cock,	" петли
орел = eagle,	" орли

¹Cf. Бог = God, Voc. sg. Боже!; Власт from Влак = Aromun, Voc. sg. Влаше!

Notice also:—

ветер or ветар = wind, pl. ветрови
оган = fire, " огнови or огневи

Nouns ending in -ин and denoting an inhabitant of a country, town, etc., drop this syllable in the plural,¹ e.g.:—

граѓанин = citizen, pl. граѓани
Бугарин = Bulgarian, " Бугари
Notice Турчин = Turk, " Турци

Similarly some nouns in -нец also denoting an inhabitant, drop the final -ец but not the н in the plural, e.g.:—

селанец = peasant, pl. селани
скопјанец = inhabitant of Skopje, pl. скопјани
But: Македонец = Macedonian, pl. Македонци
Германец = German, pl. Германци

Some nouns in -ар lose the -а- in the plural, e.g.:—

метар = metre центар = centre
Plur.: метри центри

Nouns ending in velars г, к undergo the 2nd Palatalization in forming their plural, e.g.:—

белер = sign Plur.: белези
бубрег = kidney " бубрези
волк = wolf " волци

Nouns ending in -в from -х either have a plural with the 2nd Palatalization of the original х to с, or they have a plural in -(во)ви, cf. p. 156, No. 3. e.g.:—

Влав = a Wallachian or Aromun, Plur.: Власи
страв = terror " стравови

Like страв:—

прав = dust грав = pea, haricot bean

A few monosyllabic nouns have a (neuter) plural in -ишта, e.g.:—

пат = road, plur. патишта
сон = sleep, dream, plur. соништа or сништа
крај = end, region, plur. краеви or краишта
град = city, plur. градови or градишта
сид = wall, plur. сидови, сидје or сидишта

¹Exception: домаќин = host, pl. домаќини.

After the numeral два = two, and after неколку = some, a plural in -а can be used for masculine non-personal nouns, cf. Bulgarian. This is a remnant of the old Dual form. With other numerals either this or the ordinary plural may be used. E.g.:—

два коња = two horses два метра = two metres
обата вола = both the oxen неколку дена = a few days

Masculine personal nouns are more often used in the plural after *Collective Numerals*:—

двајца синови = two sons

The ordinary plural is used if the noun *precedes*, e.g.:—

Си прегна коњи четири = He harnessed four
(poet.) horses.

Feminine nouns

Feminine nouns ending in -а only distinguish Nom. and Voc. sing., and have no Obl. form. Feminine nouns ending in a consonant only have one form in the sing. In the plural all feminine nouns end in -и.

We thus have two types:—

1. Hard:—

Sing.: Nom./Obl. жена = woman, wife
Voc. жено
Plur.: жени

Soft:—

Sing.: Nom./Obl. Марија = Mary
Voc. Маријо

Sing.: Nom./Obl. боја = colour, идèja = idea
Plur.: бои идèи

So also—

песна = song, plur.: песни
мисла = thought, " мисли

2. Sing.: ноќ = night радост¹ = joy
Plur.: ноќи радости

рака = hand, has an irregular plural: паце (from the old Dual)

нога = foot, " " " нозе (from the old Dual)

Neuter nouns

These distinguish only singular and plural.

¹Fem. nouns in -ст are often colloquially pronounced without the final -т.

1. Those ending in -o have plural in -a.
 2. Most of those ending in -e, except those in -иште, -је, -це, -ие and Verbal Nouns, have plural in -иња, including diminutives in -е.

1. Sing.: село = village езеро = lake писмо = letter
 Plur.: села езера писма

2. море = sea; поле = field; име = name; прасе = pigling; куче = dog

Sing.: море поле име прасе куче¹
 Plur.: мориња полиња² имиња прасиња кучиња

But, e.g.—

Sing.: чудовиште = monster решение = decision
 Plur.: чудовишта решенија
 Sing.: лозје = vineyard орање = ploughing
 Plur.: лозја орања

Sing.: лице³ = face, person
 Plur.: лица

дете = child, has an irregular pl.: деца, or affectionately: дециња

ОКО	= eye,	"	"	"	"	Очи
УВО	= ear,	"	"	"	"	Уши
животно	= animal,	"	"	"	"	животни
чудо	= marvel,	"	"	"	"	чудеса (also чуда)
небо	= sky,	"	"	"	"	небеса (also неба)
рамо	= shoulder,	"	"	"	"	рамена, рамења or рамиња

Nouns of all three genders can form *collective* plurals in -је, which (except for feminine nouns) have a further plural in -ја. E.g.:—

Masc.	лист	камен	сноп	друм
	= leaf	= stone	= sheaf	= highway
coll.	лисје	камење	снопје	друмје
plur.	лисја	камења	снопја	

¹ кутре = puppy.

² poet. поља.

³ Diminutives in -енце, e.g. детенце = little child, have no plural form.

срце = heart, plur. срца, and јајце = egg, plur. јајца, have affectionate plural diminutives: срциња, јајциња.

Fem. Coll./Pl.

планина = mountain планиње
 ливада = meadow ливаѓе
 трева = grass тревје
 година = year годиње

Neut.	Coll.	Plur.
крило = wing	крилје	крилја
дрво = tree	дрвје	дрвја
перо = feather,	перје	перја
pen		
гумно = threshing floor	(гумење)	гумења

These collective plurals take the *neuter* (sing. and plur.) articles, e.g. лисјето, лисјата, but adjectives and verbs in agreement are in the *plural* in Macedonian. (See below for these parts of speech.)

Nouns borrowed from other languages take their gender according to their ending in Macedonian, irrespective of their gender in the language of origin, e.g.:—

ниво	neut.	= level (Fr. le niveau)
кино	neut.	= cinema
радио	neut.	= wireless
метод	masc.	= method
or		
метода	fem.	
адреса	fem.	= address

THE ARTICLES

The definite article in Macedonian has three alternative forms, each with a different meaning—a peculiarly Macedonian feature. They have the form of suffixes and are derived from Demonstrative Pronouns.

In contrast to Bulgarian, nouns of masculine gender with the article suffixed, do *not* distinguish a Nom. from any other case.

The ordinary form of the article is:—

Sing.:	Masc. -от	Fem. -та	Neut. -то
Plur.:	Masc./Fem. -те	Neut. -та	

E.g.:—

Sing.	Plur.
волот = the ox	волските
мечката = the bear	мечките
селото = the village	селата

Masc. nouns in -изам, lose the -а- when the definite article is used, but foreign nouns in -ар keep the -а-. E.g.:—

романтизам = romanticism, with article: романтизмот
центар = centre " " центарот

Notice that feminine nouns in -ст lose one т when the definite article -та is used. E.g.:—

радост = joy радоста = the joy

All other feminine nouns retain the -та in full, and the unvoicing of voiced consonants before this article is not indicated in the spelling. E.g.:—

пролет = spring, with art.: пролетта
смрт = death, " " : смртта
заповед = order, " " : заповедта
(pron. заповед-та)

The form of the article with -в- instead of -т- indicates someone or something near the persons speaking:—

Sing.: Masc. -ов Fem. -ва Neut. -во
Plur.: Masc./Fem. -ве Neut. -ва

E.g.:—

волов ќе треба да го нараниме = We shall have to feed
the (this) ox here
волониве = the oxen here

On the other hand, the form of the article with -н- refers to someone or something at a distance from, but visible to, the persons speaking:—

Sing.: Masc. -он Fem. -на Neut. -но
Plur.: Masc./Fem. -не Neut. -на

E.g.:—

Џовекон врви по мостон = The man there is going over
the (that) bridge (there)
Планините = the mountains yonder

Notice that masculine nouns in -а, take the feminine article, e.g.:—

судијата = the judge

All (neuter) plurals in -а also take -та:—

морињата = the seas
патиштата = the roads

Some nouns can have either masculine or feminine gender as indicated by the article, e.g.:—

песокот or песокта = the sand
лојот " лојта = the tallow
потот " потта = the sweat
жарот " жарта = the red-hot coal
животот " животта = the life

The definite article can be attached to an adjective qualifying a noun instead of to the noun itself (see p.175 for "Adjectives"), e.g.:—

белиот¹ вол = the white ox
арната книга = the good book
белото пиле = the white chicken

Also—

белиов¹ вол = the white ox here
белион¹ вол = the white ox there, etc.

In the plural the article is -те, -ве, or -не for all genders when it is attached to the adjective, e.g.:—

белите петли = the white cocks
белите кокошки = the white hens
белите пилиња = the white chickens
and—
белите пилиња = the white chickens here

When two or more adjectives qualify and precede a noun, only the *first* has the article suffixed, when there is no special emphasis expressed:—

брзата планинска река = the fast-flowing
mountain river

With inversion of order the noun takes the article:—

Гората густа и висока беше преминаџа = The thick,
tall forest was passed.

Notice the irregular behaviour of the articles with луѓе (= people). When луѓе is not qualified by an adjective, it takes the neut. sing. article, e.g.:—

луѓето = the people

But with an adjective, we have—

првите луѓе = the first people

with the regular plural -те. Likewise with: -во/-ве and -но/-не. (Compare the note on collective plurals, p. 170 (bottom) and p. 171 (top).)

¹See p.175 concerning the -и- of the masc. sing. adjective with the article.

The article is used with certain geographical names, e.g.:—

Охридско(то) езеро = Lake Ohrid; Алпите = the Alps

But it is *not* used in adverbial expressions, e.g.:—

на пазар = to market; на пролет = in spring
со глава = with one's head

ADJECTIVES

Adjectives in Macedonian vary according to gender in the sing. In the plur. one form serves for all genders. They do not decline.

The masculine form ends in a consonant except for adjectives ending in -ски, which denote belonging to something or somebody. But in address (i.e. as a Vocative) the masc. form ends in -и: драги татко = dear father!

E.g.:—

	SING.	PLUR.
Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
кус	куса	куси
црвен	црвена	црвени
бел	бела	бели
сплескан	сплескана	сплескани
златен ¹	златна	златни
		= of gold, golden
длабок	длабока	длабоки
селски	селска	селски
		= (of the) village
козји	козја	козји
		= goat's

Notice that adjectives formed from nouns in -ст lose the -т, e.g.:—

радост = joy радосен, радосна, радосно, радосни = joyful

чест = honour чесен, чесна, etc. = honourable, honest

пост = fast посен, посна, etc. = (of a) fast (day, food)

But from место = place, we have местен, месна, etc. = local

Negative adjectives with the prefix не-, including those formed from participles, are always written in one word, e.g.:—

¹With movable -е-.

неубав = not beautiful
негепелив = impatient
невиден = not seen (before)
неуен = unheard of

Possessive adjectives end in -ов, -ова, etc., when formed from masculine nouns, and in -ин, -ина, etc., when formed from feminine nouns, e.g.:—

Петров Петрова Петрово Петрови = Peter's
Верин Верина Верино Верини = Vera's
мајчин¹ мајчина мајчино мајчини = mother's

The article can be used attached to the adjective, instead of to the noun qualified, as already mentioned under "The Article". Notice that the masc. sing. form of the adjective with the article then ends in -и, e.g.:—

белиот, црвениов, златнион перел = the white, this red, that golden cock

белата кокошка = the white hen
црново пиле = the black chicken

белите, црните петли = the white, the black cocks

црнине прасиња = the black piglings here

Notice: новиот судија = the new judge, although one says: судијата = the judge (cf. p. 172).

The Comparison of Adjectives

This is very simple in Macedonian, as in Bulgarian. The Comparative degree for *all* adjectives that can logically be compared, is formed by prefixing по- to the Positive degree, and the Superlative by prefixing нај- also to the Positive degree. Both forms vary in gender and number like ordinary adjectives. E.g.:—

	Comparative	Superlative
голем = big	поголем, -а, -о, -и	најголем, -а, -о, -и
висок = high	повисок	највисок
арен = good	поарен, поарна, etc.	најарен
силен = strong	посилен, посила, etc.	најсилен
бел = white	побел	најбел
низок = low, small in stature	понизок, пониска, etc.	најнизок

¹From мајка (= mother), with 1st Palatalization.

Comparative Superlative

лош = bad полош најлош
убав = beautiful поуубав најубав

In Macedonian certain nouns, pronouns, adverbs, prepositions and verbs may also be compared, e.g.:—

Тој е арен мајстор = He is a good (master) craftsman
Стојан е помајстор = Stoyan is more of a craftsman
Милан е најмајстор од сите = Milan is the best craftsman of all
Тој ми е посвој = He is nearer to my heart
Дојди повам = Come more this way, nearer here
Дојди по кај нас, по до него = Come more towards us, more up to him
Никола работи = Nicholas works
Вера по не работи од него = Vera does not work as much as he does
Пецо нај не работи = Pete does the least work of all

Very = многу, мноше
Than = од (before a noun), отколку, одошто
Rather better = нешто поарен
Much better = многу поарен
Rather good = прилично арен, доста арен
Less than = помалу отколку
The bigger...the better... = што поголем...(to) поарен...
As (good) as = исто така (арен) колку
As soon as possible = што поскоро; што порано
As fast as possible = што побргу (побргу колку можеш)
The (very) best of all = најарен од сите
Too = многу, прекалено; прекумерно (= excessive-ly)
The same as = исти како
In the same way as = исто така како
Notice: престар = 1. too old; 2. very old, but: пристар = rather old.

THE NUMERALS

The *Cardinal* numerals do not decline in Macedonian, and only "one" and "two" vary according to gender. "Two" onwards count as plurals and are fol-

lowed by nouns in the plural. Masculine nouns after the numeral "two", as already mentioned, can have a special plural in -a (the old Dual ending),¹ cf. Bulgarian. Adjectives qualifying nouns with numerals are also in the plural, except with "one". Numerals ending in "one" take the noun in the singular, e.g. сто и една година = a hundred and one years. Едни, plural of "one", means "some". All simple numerals can take the article -те, (though some only rarely): e.g. дванаесетте апостоли = the Twelve Apostles. Compound numerals prefer the demonstrative тие = those, e.g. тие сто и педесет динари = the 150 dinars (already mentioned). Notice: шесте (with one r) = the six. Cf. радоста (= the joy).

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
1	еден	една	едно
2	два ²		две ²
3	три		
4	четири		
5	пет		
6	шест		
7	седум		
8	осум		
9	девет		
10	десет		
11	единаесет		(pronounced -најсе ³)
12	дванаесет		" "
13	тринаесет		" "
14	четиринаесет		" "
15	петнаесет		" "
16	шеснаесет		" "
17	седумнаесет		" "
18	осумнаесет		" "
19	деветнаесет		" "
20	дваесет	(	" двајсе)
26	дваесет и шест		
30	триесет		
40	четириесет		
50	педесет		
60	шеесет		
70	седумдесет		
80	осумдесет		
90	деведесет		

¹The plural in -a may also be used after the other numerals. See p. 169.

²обата (masc.), обете (fem. and neut.) = both, always have the article.

³Pronounced with the article: единајсетте, etc., (with double r!)

100	сто
150	сто и педесет ¹
200	двесте
300	триста
400	четирестотини
500	петстотини
600	шестотини
700	седумстотини
800	осумстотини
900	деветстотини
1,000	илјада
1,000,000	милион

The *Ordinal* numerals are adjectives and vary in gender and number. 1-4 have alternative forms for the masculine. The ordinary form ends in a consonant, the form ending in -и is used with the article. E.g.:—

Кoj е прв по успех во класот? = Who is first (in success) in class?
 Првиот ученик е Стојан. = The first pupil is Stojan.
 or:—

Стојан е прв во класот. = Stojan is first in class.

Notice below the double -rr- in the endings of most numerals, whose cardinal form ends in -r.

		Fem.	Neut.	PLUR.	All Genders
1st	прв -и	-а	-о	-и	-и
2nd	втор -и	-а	-о	-и	-и
3rd	трет -и				
4th	четврт -и				etc.
5th	петти				
6th	шести				
7th	седми				
8th	осми				
9th	деветти				
10th	десетти				
11th	единаесетти, ² etc.				
19th	деветнаесетти ²				
20th	дваесетти, ² etc.				
50th	педесетти, etc.				
90th	деведесетти				
100th	стоти or стотен				

¹Pronounced: stoјпедесет.

²In the ending -аесетти ae is contracted to aj in pronunciation and the stress falls on the a: pronounce единајсетти, etc.

200th двестотен
 500th петстотен
 1,000th илјаден

1,000,000th милионен or милионски (pron. мѝлјонски)

Collective numerals ending in -ина are used in Macedonian to indicate the approximate¹ number of things in a group, e.g.:—

Имам десетина овци, стотина динари.

= I have about ten sheep, about a hundred dinars

Collective numerals or "Numeral Nouns" ending in -ца or -мина are used only of groups including male persons,² and can have the article attached.

2 двајца = a pair, обајцата = both (always with article)

3 тројца
 4 четворица
 5 петина or петмина
 6 шестина or шесмина
 7 седмина or седуммина
 8 осмина or осуммина
 9 деветмина
 10 десетмина
 20 двајсемина
 50 педесемина
 100 стотина
 1,000 илјадамина

With article, e.g. тројцата = the three; also седумтемина = the seven.

Numeral Adverbs

Once = еднаш

The other numeral adverbs are formed with the suffix -пати, e.g.:—

двапати = twice
 трипати = thrice
 стопати = a hundred times, etc.

¹Approximate numbers can also be expressed by using *some* two consecutive numbers pronounced together as a group, e.g. два - три = two or three. In the teens, tens and hundreds the second part of the numeral is not repeated: два - тринаесет = 12 or 13, три - четириесет = 30 or 40, три - четири стотини = three or four hundred. пет - шест is pronounced пeчec (phon. 'pečes). 1-2, 4-5, 6-7, 8-9 and the corresponding teens, tens and hundreds are not usually expressed in this way.

²I.e. groups exclusively of, or containing, men.

Notice also: двојно = doubly
тројно = trebly
etc.

вудве = two by two, in twos
вутри = in threes
надве = (divided) into two
натри = (") into three

Fractions

половина = half
третина = a third
четвртина = a quarter

Distributive Numerals are expressed by по + Cardinal or Collective Numeral, e.g.:—по три = three each; по десетина сливи = ten plums each.

THE PRONOUNS

The Pronouns in Macedonian constitute a group of words many of which have a distinctive form when compared with the corresponding words in other Slavonic languages, e.g. some of the Personal Pronouns, the Relative Pronoun, the Demonstrative Pronouns, and the word for "all", below. In Macedonian, the word for "who" (interrog.) and its compounds decline in the Acc. and Dat. sing. masc.,¹ as do also the Personal Pronouns (which latter in Bulgarian are the only pronouns that ordinarily decline). The other pronouns only vary in gender and number. After prepositions the *Accusative* form is used.

The following is a list of the main pronouns in Macedonian:—

Demonstrative:—

Masc.	SING. Fem.	Neut.	PLUR. All Genders
ОВОЈ	оваа	ова	овие = this here (near me or us)
ТОЈ	таа	тоа	тие = that (near you)
ОНОЈ	онаа	она	оние = that (yonder)

This pronoun can have a special form for the Acc. sing. masc.: овера.

¹Only when used independently, i.e. not with a noun following.

Interrogative:—

Masc.	SING. Fem.	Neut.	PLUR. All Genders
КОЈ ¹	која	кое	кои = who?
Dat.: кому му or на кого (му)			which?
Acc.: кого го			= to whom?
			= whom?

што (Nom. and Acc.) = what?
A Dat. form exists in the expression: чуму ти е тоа?
= what do you need it for?

каков каква какво какви = what kind
of?
колкава колкаво колкави = how great?
of what size? of how many?
чиј чија чие чии = whose?
(interrogative only, rare)

Relative:—

кој (што) која (што) кое (што) кои (што) = who, which
Dat.: кому (што) or на кого
Acc.: кого (што)
што²
чиј што чија што чие што чии што = that
= whose
(rare)

Definitive:—

секој секоја секое = every,
everyone

Dat.: секому or на секого
Acc.: секого

сигот	сета	сето, сѐ ³	сите
сигов	сева	сево	сиве
сигон	сена	сено	сине
цел	цела	цело	цели
исти	иста	исто	исти
			исти

= all
= all this
= all that
= (the)
whole
= the same

¹кој and its compounds decline only when they are used independently and when they do not qualify nouns.

²This is the commonest relative pronoun and for the Accusative and Dative cases it is amplified by the enclitic pronouns Acc. s. m., n. го, f. ja; Dat. s. m., n. му, f. ѝ; Acc. pl. ги, Dat. pl. им (see p. 184); e.g. Дојде човекот што го видовме вчера = The man whom we saw yesterday has come.

³сѐ is written with an accent to distinguish it from се, the Reflexive Pronoun, and also from the 3rd pers. plur. Pres. of the verb "to be". It is used by itself and means "everything" or "all": сѐ знае = he knows everything.

<i>Masc.</i>	<i>SING. Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>PLUR. All Genders</i>
друг сам	друга сама	друго само	други сами
ваков	ваква	вакво	вакви
таков	таква	такво	такви
онаков	онаква	онакво	онакви
инаков	инаква	инакво	инакви
секаков	секаква	секакво	секакви
олкав	олкава	олкаво	олкави
толкав	толкава	толкаво	толкави
онолкав	онолкава	онолкаво	онолкави

Indefinite:—

некој	некоја	некое	некои	= some, someone
некому or на некого				= any (you like)
некому or на некого				= anybody
кој да е				= any you like
кој годе				= something
некаков	некаква	некакво	некакви	= anything
				= some kind of
некој	некоја	некое	некои	= no, none
				= one

Negative:—

некому or на некого				= nothing
некому or на некого				= no, none
некаков	некаква	некакво	некакви	= nothing
				= no, none
мој	моја	мое	мои ¹	= my, mine
твој	твоја	твое	твои ¹	= your(s)
				(familiar)

¹These plural forms are often pronounced мој, твој, but are spelt with -и to distinguish them from the masc. sing., cf. the colloquial and dialectal pronunciation -oj of the plur. ending -ои for lit. -ови of masc. nouns.

<i>Masc.</i>	<i>SING. Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>PLUR. All Genders</i>
свој	своја	свое	свои ¹
наш	наша	наше	наши
ваш	ваша	ваше	ваши
негов	негова	негово	(pl. and polite)
нејзин	нејзина	нејзино	негови
нивни	нивна	нивно	нејзини
			нивни

These are frequently used with the article:

МОЈОТ, ТВОЈОТ, НАШИОТ, ВАШИОТ, НЕГОВОТ, НЕЈЗИНОТ, НИВНИОТ
 брат, коњ, etc. (= my, your, our, your, his, their
 brother, horse, etc.) (Notice the added и under-
 lined.) Fem. мојата, neut. моето, pl. моите; etc.
 (regular).

Personal:—

The Personal Pronouns in Macedonian are characterized by three alternative forms in the Dat. and Acc. cases.

1. The *double* form is frequently used with verbs, especially but not only for emphasis, and is a distinctive feature of Macedonian. Its use is spreading at the expense of the other forms.

2. The short "enclitic" form can also be used with verbs when there is no emphasis, and is then a *proclitic* preceding the verb. But with the Imperative and Present Gerund it follows after and is enclitic. It is also used to repeat a definite object which itself occurs in the sentence. These two usages are also distinctively Macedonian. It is also used after the demonstrative adverbs: еве = here is (are), ете = here is, ене = there is.

3. The *full* form is used mainly after the negative не, after the conjunctions а = but, и = and, after prepositions, in answers to questions, and in curses. It consists of the first, longer half of the double form.

The third person Personal Pronoun in the Nom. (sing. and plur.) is тој, таа, тоа, тие, which are also Demonstrative pronouns meaning "that". Cf. Bulgarian forms beginning with т for the 3rd pers. pro-

¹This plural form is often pronounced свој, but is spelt with -и to distinguish it from the masc. sing., cf. the colloquial and dialectal pronunciation -oj of the plur. ending -ои for lit. -ови of masc. nouns.

noun, differentiated, however, from the Demonstratives. Alternative forms, used only in poetry, are: он, она, оно, они.

Nom. јас = I	ние = we	ти = you (fam.)	вие = you (pl. and polite ¹)
Dat. мене ми, ми	нам ни, ни	тебе ти, ти	вам ви, ви
Acc. мене ме, ме	нас нѐ, нѐ ²	тебе те, те	вас ве, ве
Nom. тој (он)	таа (она)	тоа (оно)	тие (они)
= he	= she	= it	= they
Dat. нему му, му	нејзе ѝ, ѝ ³	нему му, му	ним им, им
Acc. него го, го	неа ја, ја	него го, го	нив ги, ги

Reflexive:—

Dat. себе (себеси) си, си	= -self
Acc. себе (себеси) се	

Examples of the use of the Personal Pronouns:—

1. The double form:—

Мене ми рече	= He told (me)
Мене ме виде	= He saw me
Тебе ти реков	= I told you
Вас ве најдов	= I found you
Нему му е арно	= He is fine, all right, in a good position
Го видов денеска на ручек	= It was <u>him</u> I saw at lunch today

2. The short form (*proclitic*):—

(a) with verbs:—

Ми рече Никола оти ќе	= Nicholas told me that
дојде	he would come

¹The polite use of вие in Macedonian is copied from other languages and is not used in the speech of ordinary people; hence one meets some variations of agreement. According to Koneski, with вие verbs, including the participle in the compound tenses, go in the plural but an adjectival complement goes in the singular if one person is addressed. E.g. Вие сте станале нервозен = (We hear that) you became ill at ease. See B. Koneski: *Граматика на македонскиот литературен јазик*, (1967), p. 332, §213.

²The Acc. plur. нѐ (= us) is written with an accent to distinguish it from не (= not).

³Dat. sing. ѝ (= to her) is written with an accent to distinguish it from и (= and).

Ме најде брат ми ¹	= My brother found me
Удри ме по глава!	= Hit me on the head!

(b) repeating a definite object:—

Фатете ја мацката!	= Catch the cat!
Го видов Гроздана	= I saw Grozdan
Трудбениците ја манифестираа својата готовност....	= The workers demonstrated their readiness....

Младинага...со чест ќе ги исполни тие задачи....	= The young people will carry out those tasks with distinction
--	--

Барајќи го волкот, ја намола лицата	= Looking for the wolf, he found the fox
Кого го виде?	= Whom did he see?

(c)

Еве ме, идам	= Here I am, I'm coming
Еве ви	= Here you are! (giving something)
Ене му	= There! He's got it!
Еве ти ја	= Here it (f.) is (for you)! ²

3. The full form (alone):—

(a) after a negative:—

Не тебе, а нив ги видов	= I did not see you, but them...
Не вам, а на Стојана му реков	= I did not tell you, but Stoyan

¹Here we also have an example of the Dative short form, used enclitically, to indicate the "possessor", instead of the Possessive Pronoun-adjective—a common usage in Serbo-Croatian and Bulgarian too, but in Macedonian used only with nouns indicating relations and close associates, e.g.:—

мајка му	= his mother
сестра ми	= my sister
со другара ти	= with your friend, comrade
мајстор си	= his master (referring to the subject)

Notice the omission of the article with nouns indicating relationship and close ties.

²The Dative of interest, expressed by a short pronoun, is commonly used in Macedonian. Notice: си одам = I am going away. See p. 184.

(b) after prepositions (the Accusative form):—

Со мене дојде = He came with me
 Во нас е клучот = The solution lies in us
 Од тебе и од него глава не можам да кренам
 = Because of you and him
 I can't budge, move an
 inch (lit. lift my head)

(c) as an answer to a question:—

(Кого го најде?) Него. = (Whom did he find?) Him.

(d) in curses and imprecations:—

Тешко тебе = Woe to you!

ADVERBS

Adverbs formed from adjectives end in -o and are identical in form with the neut. sing. of the adjective, e.g.:—

арно = good (neut. adj.) and
 = well (adv.)
 убаво езеро = a beautiful lake
 тој пее убаво = he sings beautifully
 криво = wrong (adj. крив)
 лесно = easily (adj. лесен)
 мачно = with difficulty (adj.
 мачен = difficult)
 кусо = short, lacking

Other adverbs have the most various forms and are sometimes the petrified remains of nouns with old case endings, prepositional expressions, verb roots with adverbial endings, etc. E.g.:—

зимуе = in winter дома = at home,
 лете = in summer home(ward)
 горе = above ноќе = by night
 долу = below дење = by day
 збогум = good-bye пеш = on foot
 всоне = in one's sleep прекусила = with great
 квечерум = towards evening efforts, with difficulty
 вкүйи = at home сосила = by force;
 with difficulty

Peculiarly Macedonian adverbial endings are:—

1. -ица, -ница, e.g.:—

бодинаница = at a gallop
 вјаваница = on horseback
 турканица = pushing(ly)
 трчаница = (in a) running (manner)

2. -ум, for adverbs formed from verbs, e.g.:—

викум = shouting
 кутејкум = silently

3. -ана, e.g.:—

препинана = stumbling
 рипана = jumping
 со куцана = limping
 на трчана = running

Notice the compound, hyphenated adverbs, such as:—

лека-полека = quietly, gently
 згора-згора = superficially
 пошто-зашто = for a trifle, for a song; somehow
 надве-нагри = somehow
 криво(-)лево = all the same, whatever it is

The Comparison of Adverbs

The Comparison of Adverbs is made in the same way as the comparison of adjectives. For the Comparative degree по- is prefixed to the Positive adverb, and for the Superlative degree нај- is prefixed also to the Positive adverb. E.g.:—

тивно = quietly потивно = more најтивно = most
 арно = well поарно = better најарно = best
 quietly quietly

The only irregular comparison of an adverb in Macedonian is:—

многу = much повеќе = more најмногу = most

We give below some of the commonest adverbs, mostly those not formed from adjectives, and classified according to their meaning.

Place:—

овде(ка), тука = here, hither
 ваму = on this side
 таму = there, thither
 онаму = over there
 онде(ка) }
 одовде = hence, from here
 оттаму = thence
 секаде = everywhere
 другаде }
 на друго место = elsewhere
 некаде = somewhere
 никаде = nowhere
 внатре = inside
 надвор = outside, out

Place:—

однадвор	= from outside
дома	= home (ward)
вкуќи	= at home
горе	= above, upstairs
долу	= below, downstairs
наместа	= here and there
надолу	= down
близу <i>or</i> блиску	= near
одблизу	= from near
далеку	= far
оддалеку	= from afar
назад	= back
напред	= forward
дома, в земја	= at home (not abroad)
в туѓина	= abroad
напреку	= opposite
преку	= across
отстрана	= aside
понатака	= further
(на) лево	= to the left
(на) десно	= to the right
среде	= in the middle
преку трупа	= straight, cross country
сега	= now
тогаш	= then
денеска	= to-day
утре	= to-morrow
вчера	= yesterday
некни	= the day before yesterday
веќе	= already
уште	= still
не...веќе	= no longer
уште не	= not yet
часум	= in a moment
веднаш	= immediately, at once
начас	= always
секогаш (ш)	= daily
секојдневно	= just
току, баш	= in the morning
на утро	= during the morning
изутрина	= in the morning,
сабајле	tomorrow morning
утринава	= this morning
квечер (ум)}	= towards evening
приквечер	= this evening
вечерва	

Time:—

Time:—

сношти, синоќа	= last night, last evening
досега	= up to now
отсега	= from now, henceforward
навреме	= in time
пак	= again
одново	= never
никогаш	= at no time
никојпат	= sometimes
понекојпат	= once (upon a time)
понекогаш	= all the time
некогаш	= every time
постојано	= later, subsequently
секојпат	= late
отпосле	= early
доцна	= often
рано	= seldom
често	= afterwards
ретко	= long ago
потоа, после	= first
одамна	= lastly
првин, првен	= finally
најсетне	= at last, finally
окончателно	= only
најпосле	= last summer
само, дури	= just recently
летоска	= in future
префе (ска)	= recently
во иднината	= this year
скоро, неодамна	= last year
годинава	= the year before last
лани	= at the same time,
оломили	simultaneously
истовремено	= soon
набргу	= meanwhile
(на) скоро	= in winter
во исто време	= in summer
зиме	= by day
леге	= by night
дење	= all night
ноќе	= further (in time)
са ноќ	= still, further
потака	= to this day
понатаму	= for ever
ден-денес (ка)	= at midday
довека	= at dinner time
нападне	= at dawn
наручек	
призори	

Manner:—

бака	= so, thus, in this way
така	= so, in that way
инаку	= otherwise
(на)опаку	= the wrong way round
полека }	= slowly
бавно }	= quickly
бргу	= suddenly
наеднаш	= immediately
веднага	= on purpose
намерно }	= in vain
нарочно }	= exceptionally, unusually
залудо }	= usually
напусто }	= by chance
необично	= somehow
обично	= in no way
случајно	= really
некако	= certainly
никако	= unexpectedly
вистински	= en route
навистина	= silently
неочекувано	= stealthily
патем	= galloping
молкома	= likewise
назорум	= excessively
грабаданица	= including
исто така	= together
прекумерно	= in turn
вклучително	= prone
наедно	= upright
редум	
ничкум	
простум	

Degree:—

многу }	= very
мошне }	
малку }	= a little
трошка }	
толку }	= so much
олку }	
неколку	= some
малку	= little
одвај	= hardly
доста	= enough
најмногу	= mostly
наполно, исцело	= fully
сосем(а)	= quite
навистина	= indeed, really, definitely

Degree:—

бар(ем)	= at least
може би	= perhaps
особено }	= especially
нарочно }	= a great deal
едночудо	= for no reason, just so
тукутака	= just a little
тронса }	
трошйчка }	= sufficiently
доволно }	
достаточоно }	
само	= only
туку	
саде, сал	
(colloq.)	
скоро }	= nearly, almost
готово }	
еднакво }	= equally
горе (-) долу }	= roughly
околу }	= in general
воопшто }	
тамам }	= just
баш }	
токму }	= even
дури	= almost
речиси	= up to a point
донекаде	= chiefly
воглавно	= so to speak, maybe
тукуречи	= partly
делум	= certainly
непремено	

Interrogative:—

кога?	= when?
каде?	= where? whither?
откаде?	= whence?
зошто? зашто?	= why?
како?	= how?
колку?	= how much?
...ли...?	enclitic interrogative particle
дали...?	interrogative particle introducing a question (rarer)
зар....?	interrogative particle expressing incredulity
нели...?	interrogative particle expecting the answer "yes";
	= surely, don't (you)...?, e.g.
	Нели знаете сè? = Don't you know everything?

Not = не; no = не, (jok); yes = да

догледате = au revoir
збогум = good-bye

CONJUNCTIONS

Many Macedonian conjunctions have forms slightly different from those of Bulgarian and Serbo-croatian, but the tenses used after them are the same in the main. The following conjunctions are important:—

Coordinating:—

и and
па and then, and (in enumeration), well
та and (so)
пак yet, but (usually enclitic)
потоа then, after that
затоа therefore
ни nor
ни (ту)...ни (ту) neither...nor...
(или...) или (either...) or...
а and, but (contrasting)
ама however, but
сепак still, nevertheless
туку only, but (after a negative)
но but
ами but (in remonstrance)
ту...ту now...now
де...де namely, i.e.
то ест to est
имено for example, e.g.
на пример apart from that, besides
освен тоа anyhow, by the way, actually
впрочем likewise, also
исто (и) only (that)
само (што) not only
не само let alone
камо ли on the other hand, however
меѓутоа at the same time, in addition
при тоа maybe
белики certainly
без друго of course
секако
нема збор
се разбира

Note: ем...ем = both...and, ja...ja = either...or, are both dialectal.

Subordinating:—

кај, каде што where
кога (што)¹ when
штоа as soon as, (also штомуку and тукушто)
едно hardly, as soon as
тамам while
до каде (кај) until, while
дури (да) till, while
додека since
откако as, because
откога after
одошто before
пошто (in order) that
пред но што so that (of consequence), usually preceded by:—
пред да така = so, толку = so much
да so that
за да that (after verbs of saying, thinking, etc.); (also што and да)
да that, to (after verbs of commanding, requesting, etc.)
така што because, as
дека since
оти because, since
како as (after така = so, in main clause)
да as much as
ако (што) as if
колку што although
божем even if
како да without (doing)
иако whether (in indirect questions) (ako)² ..., (or...)
макар да
макар и да
без да
дали (...дали)
ако² (ли) if; лели = once, if, when
...ли (enclitic)

¹Notice кога да + Imperfect of Pfve. verb = whenever,

e.g. Кога да дојдеш = whenever he came.

²When stressed, ако means 'although' - a rare use.

да = if (in unfulfilled conditions),
e.g.:—
Јас би ти кажал, да знаам = I
would tell you if I knew

да + Pres. Imperfective or Perfective is regularly used in Macedonian to replace the lost Infinitive, which in Bulgarian and other Balkan languages has also largely been lost, e.g.:—

сакам да читам = I want to read

PREPOSITIONS

The prepositions in Macedonian are always followed by nouns in the Nom. case (of such nouns as have a rudimentary declension). No special form (Oblique case) is used after prepositions for masculine nouns with the definite article, in contrast to the usage in Bulgarian.

Thus we have:—

на Рацин = of Racin
со Рацин = with Racin
со син ми = with my son
кај жарленарот = to (at) the charcoal burner's

Pronouns after prepositions are put in the Acc. full (non-enclitic) form, e.g.:—

во нас = in us

Most of the prepositions in Macedonian are easily recognizable to those knowing other Slavonic languages. In the list below we give the majority of the most important prepositions, italicizing those which are peculiar in form or meaning.

Prepositions corresponding to cases in Slavonic languages with full declensions

To replace:—

Genitive	од	= of (used more frequently in this meaning than in Bulgarian); from
	на	= of; also for Dative: to, for
Dative	до	= to: писмо до... (= a letter to...)
	(на) кај ¹	= to (like Serbo-Croatian код + Gen. = to [someone])
	кон	= towards
	при	= (to) near

¹Alternative forms to кај are: накај, докај, каде.

Instrumental: со (always with -o) = with (also of an instrument), e.g.:—

со нож = with a knife
со таа форма = with this form

Locative { на = at, in, on (on to), e.g.:—
на масата = on (to) the table, or
врз масата
= on
при = near, by (also: кај)
в (во) = in, into

The form в is used with nouns without the definite article:—

в град = in (a) town
в река = in (a) river

(But see 2 and 4 below.)

The form во is used:—

1. with nouns with the definite article, or other defining word (adjective, adverb, numeral or demonstrative pronoun), e.g.:—

во градот = in the city
во реката = in the river
во литературниот = in the literary language
јазик

2. before nouns beginning with в and ф even without the definite article, e.g.:—

во Велес = in Veles
во вода = in water
во фурна = in an oven

3. before pronouns:—

во мене = in me
во кого? = in whom?
во нив = in them

4. with nouns without the definite article, when emphasized or contrasted, e.g.:—

Јас во река сум се капел, а во море не.
= I have bathed in a river, but not in
(any, Eng. "the") sea

5. to avoid agglomerations of consonants, e.g.:—

во Скопје = in Skopje (Skoplje)

In folk poetry, в is found also with nouns with the definite article, e.g.:—

в полето = in the field, lit. во полето
 Notice (with the days of the week):—

во среда = On Wednesdays, every Wednesday
 во средата = on (last) Wednesday
 в среда = on (next) Wednesday
 but: вторник = on (next) Tuesday (omitting в)

Other prepositions

до = by, next to, against, as far as, till, e.g.:—

до страницата = as far as the station
 до сидот = by the wall
 близу до = near

без = without
 освен = except
 од = off, out of
 против = against
 спроти (с) = opposite, on the eve of
 преку = through, by means of, over (also of numbers)

за = for; about, concerning; by; after; in

низ = through, down
 над = over, above
 под = under

пред = in front of; before (of time), ... ago

зад = behind

меѓу, помеѓу = between, among

по = after; over; in respect of

покрај = near, with, along; past; besides

спрема = according to

во врска со = in relation to

поради = because of

заради = because of, for the sake of

околу = near, about, around

надевор = outside

внатре = inside

во време на = during

место, наместо = instead of

далеку = far from

близу = near

одзиди = beyond

крај = near by, next to

вопреки = in spite of

Notice also:

врз = on, after
 покај = about, towards (of time)
 накај = to, towards; about
 накрај = at the edge of
 искрај (rarer)}
 наспроти = against, despite; as regards; on the eve of
 наспред }
 (посред)} = in the middle of
 одавде }
 оданде } = this side of
 отаде } = beyond
 откај = from, since, about
 порем (rare) = after, in (of time)
 през (rare) = during
 сосе = together with
 според = according to, compared with
 спрема = to, towards, according to, compared with, on the eve of
 сред(е) = in the middle of
 у (rare) = kaj = at, etc.
 kaj also means: at, approximately

Double prepositions also occur, e.g.:—

од пред = from before
 од под = from under
 од одавде = from this side of
 до кај = to (a person)
 до под = to under

на or од (= of) is omitted in certain cases, as in:—

чаша вода = a glass of water
 разни видови врвеша на глаголското дејствие

(lit. = different kinds of performance of the action of the verb)

The following verbal prefixes are not used as prepositions in Macedonian:—

о(6)-, пре-, про-, раз-, воз-

THE CONJUGATION OF VERBS

Macedonian verbs are most like verbs in Bulgarian in their classes, number of tenses and use. The use of tenses consisting of an auxiliary verb and a Past Participle Active in -н for "Renarration" (Mac. прекажаност, repeating other people's reports, etc.) is also to be found in Macedonian, though there are fewer such tenses in the literary language. Mace-

donian also lacks Future Perfect tenses and a Present Participle Active (corresponding to the variable forms in -ем, -ам in Bulgarian).

Four uniquely Macedonian features in the verbs are:—

1. the generalization of the ending -ам for the 1st person singular Present of *all* classes of verbs, both of the -е- and the -и- type;

2. the use of the verb имам (= I have) with the Past Participle Passive in the neuter (or съм = I am, for intransitive verbs, with Past Partic. Pass. in the gender of the subject) to express a Perfect (Active) tense on the model of Modern Greek and the Romance languages. Thus:—

имам работено = I have worked
јас сум дојден¹ = I have come

3. the ending of the Past Participle Active in the plural for all genders, which is -ле, e.g.:—

тие биле = they have been (I heard)

4. Many verbs, which are intransitive in other Slavonic languages, are used transitively in Macedonian, and transitive verbs can be used intransitively. E.g.:—

Тој шета = he goes for a walk
Го шета детето = (She) takes the child for a walk
Приближи го прстот до уста = bring your finger near your mouth
Приближавме до село = we approached a village
Тој ги седна = he sat them down
Тој ги умре = he killed them
Го загинав саатот = I have lost my watch
Ме смееш = you make me laugh

In other respects Macedonian and Bulgarian largely agree. Macedonian has no Dual number and no Infinitive at all (not even a "truncated" one!).

The Present tense has -ме in the 1st pers. plur. and -ат in 3rd pers. plur.

The Imperative has no 1st pers. plur.

The Aorist and Imperfect tenses survive in Macedonian and also the Compound Past and the Pluperfect.

The Future is formed by an *invariable* ќе + Pres. Pfv. or Impv. Its negative form is mostly

¹Note this Passive form which is Active in meaning. This is typical of Macedonian and there are many such particles from intransitive verbs, e.g. even умрен = dead.

нема да + Pres. The auxiliary ќе is also used to express habit and to make one form of Conditional (apart from that with би).

Macedonian has only one Gerund—Present, and two Participles—Past Part. Active in -н, Past Part. Passive with -н or -т.

The classification of verbs is also similar to that for Bulgarian despite the generalization of -ам in the 1st pers. sing. Pres. There is no separate class of "athematic" verbs. The Aorists, in Macedonian too, point to the subdivisions.

The Present, the Aorist and the Imperfect are the only simple tenses in Macedonian.

The Passive Voice is rendered in Macedonian in three ways:—

1. By using the verb "to be" followed by the Past Part. Passive, e.g.:—

Тој е тепаан многу често = He is beaten very often
Тој беше истеран од училиште = He was expelled from school

2. By using a reflexive verb,¹ e.g.:—

тој се вика = he is called (lit. calls himself)
тоа не се знае = that is not known

3. By using an "impersonal" 3rd pers. plur., e.g.:—

го викаат = he is called (lit. they call him)
го отепале = he was killed (lit. they killed him)

The Present

The personal endings of the Present for all types of verb (of both aspects) stems:—

Sing.	1	-(a)м	Plur.	1	-ме
	2	-ш		2	-те
	3	-		3	-(a)т

In the 1st pers. sing. the joining vowel between the ending -м and the stem of the verb is always -а-.

In the 3rd pers. plur. the ending -ат can be preceded by a consonantal stem, e.g.:—

¹The reflexive verb in Macedonian is formed with the separable enclitic *or proclitic* Acc. Reflexive pronoun ce used with an Active verb.

N.B.—As in Bulgarian, the negative he is separated from its verb by ce and other enclitic pronouns, as in the example above. (See "Word Order with Enclitics".)

идат = ,they go,

or a vowel stem, e.g.:—

стоат = they stand

The *Classification of verbs in Macedonian* is based on the joining vowel in the remaining four persons.

I. The modern -e- group includes all verbs of Classes I and II of Old Slavonic and all verbs of Class III except most a- (vowel) stems. (-e- is always pronounced e, not je!), e.g.:—

Old Class I:

Sing. 1 идам можам земам = I изберам = I
= I come = I can take¹ (Pfve.) choose¹ (Pfve.)
2 идеш можеш земеш избере¹
3 иде може земе избере

Plur. 1 идеме можеме земеме избере¹
2 идете можете земете избере¹
3 идат можат земат избера¹

Old Class II:

Sing. 1 викнам = I call¹ паднам = I fall¹
(Pfve.) (Pfve.)

2 викнеш паднеш
3 викне падне

Plur. 1 викнеме паднеме
2 викнете паднете
3 викнат паднат

Old Class III:

Sing. 1 добијам* = I get¹ покажам = I show¹
(Pfve.) (Pfve.)

2 добиеш покажеш
3 добие покаже

Plur. 1 добиеме покажеме
2 добиете покажете
3 добијат покажат

*So also пеам (= I sing), преживеам (= I live through, Pfve.), дочеујам (= I hear, Pfve.).

¹The Pfve. Present is not used in main clauses, and does not have a future meaning as in East and West Slav. It is used, as in other South Slav languages, in subordinate clauses after да, кога (= when), or other introducing conjunction.

II. This class consists of all verbs with -и- joining vowel.

Old Class IV:

Sing. 1 носам* = I стоам = I видам = I see¹ (Pfve.)
carry stand
2 носиш стоиш видиш
3 носи стои види
Plur. 1 носиме стоиме видиме
2 носите стоите видите
3 носат стоат вида¹

*So also: сторам, сториш, etc. = I do¹ (Pfve.)

III. This class consists of verbs with -a- joining vowel and, as in Bulgarian and other South and West Slav languages, is a new class produced by coalescence of -a- stems with -e- endings. To this class now belong all verbs in -увам, -уваш, etc., -уваат which until the orthographical reform of 1948 were conjugated -уам, -уеш, -уат (i.e. modern Class I), e.g. купувам, below.

викам = I shout, call (Impfve.); пливам = I swim (Impfve.); добивам = I get (Impfve.); купувам = I buy (Impfve.)

Sing. 1 викам пливам добивам купувам
2 викаш пливаш добиваш купуваш
3 вика плива добива купува

Plur. 1 викаме пливаме добиваме купуваме
2 викате пливате добивате купувате
3 викаат пливаат добиваат купуваат

So also: напаѓам (= I attack, Impfve.), земам (= I take, Impfve.*), берам (= I run, Impfve.), изберам (= I run out, Pfve.).

Like купувам:—

кажувам = I tell, пишувам = I write, зборувам = I talk

Notice the double -aa- in the 3rd pers. plur.

*The student will observe that the ending -ам in the 1st pers. sing. is no guide as to the class of the verb. This depends on the endings in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. and 1st and 2nd pers. plur.

The Aorist

This tense is formed from Pfve. verbs and indicates a completed action in the Past witnessed by the

¹See footnote on p. 200.

speaker, more precisely "a moment of an action, whether it be its beginning or full performance".

In literary Macedonian the original x in the endings has become unvoiced в (i.e. ф, = f) and has been generalized for the 1st and 2nd pers. plur., as in Bulgarian. In the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. the x form ends in a vowel, and in the 3rd p. plur. the x before -a becomes j only after и and y or after two consecutive vowels. After other vowels x is dropped before the final -a.

The formation of the Aorist corresponds to the Infinitive in other Slavonic languages, as originally the Aorist was formed from the Infinitive. The Infinitive being lost in Macedonian, the Aorist is now the only other guide left for subdividing the three modern main classes of verbs.

Modern Class I.

Old Class I:—

PRESENT	AORIST	
2nd sg. Sg.: 1	2 and 3 Pl.: 1	2
дојдеш	= you come (Pfve.)	дојдов
дојдов	дојде	дојдовме
донесеш	= you bring (Pfve.)	донесов
донесов	донесе	донесовме
земеш	= you take (Pfve.)	зецов
зецов	зеде	зецовме
избереш	= you choose (Pfve.)	избрав
избрав	избра	избравме

Old Class II:—

паднеш	= you fall (Pfve.)	паднав
паднав	падна	паднавме
паднав	падна	паднавте

Old Class III:—

дочуеш	= you hear (Pfve.)	дочув
дочув	дочу	дочувме
преживееш	= you live through (Pfve.)	преживев
преживев	преживе	преживевме
покажеш	= you show (Pfve.)	покажав
покажав	покажа	покажавме
покажавте	покажавте	покажаа

Modern Class II.

Old Class IV:—

сториш	= you do (Pfve.)	стори
стори	стори	стори
сторив	стори	сторивме
сторивте	сторивте	сторија
претрпиш	= you suffer (Pfve.)	претрпи
претрпи	претрпи	претрпи
претрпел	претрпе	претрпелме
претрпелте	претрпелте	претрпеа

PRESENT	AORIST	
2nd sg. Sg.: 1	2 and 3 Pl.: 1	2

видиш = you see (Pfve.) [irregular]
 видов видѐ видовме видовте видоа
 постоиш = you stand for a moment (Pfve.)
 постоав постоа постоавме постоавте постоаја

Modern Class III.

избегаш = you run out (Pfve.)
 избегав избега избегавме избегавте избегаа

The Imperfect

The Imperfect normally indicates a continued action in the past witnessed by the speaker and is therefore usually formed from Imperfective verbs only.

Its personal endings are the same as those of the Aorist except in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing., which end in -ме. But in this tense these endings are added to the Present stem. Verbs of modern Classes I and II have -e- as the joining vowel, and verbs of modern Class III have -a- as the joining vowel. In the 3rd pers. plur. -j- is used before the final -a when two vowels precede.

Class I.

Sing. 1 идѐв	= I was going	можев	= I was able
2 идеше		можеше	
3 идеше		можеше	врнеше = it was raining.
Plur. 1 идевме		можевме	(Pres. врне)
2 идевте		можевте	
3 идеа		можеа	

Sing. 1 пеев = I was singing

2 пееше	
3 пееше	

Plur. 1 пеевме	
2 пеевте	
3 пееја	

Class II.

Sing. 1 носев = I was carrying

2 носеше	
3 носеше	

Plur. 1 носевме	
2 носевте	
3 носеа	

Class III.

Sing. 1	бегав	= I was running	викав	= I was shouting	купував ¹	= I was buying
2	бегаше		викаше		купуваше	
3	бегаше		викаше		купуваше	
Plur. 1	бегавме		викавме		купувавме	
2	бегавте		викавте		купувавте	
3	бегав		викав		купував	

An Imperfect in form only, is formed from Pfve. verbs in conditional constructions. Thus:—

дојдам	= I come (Pfve.)
да дојдеше	= if he had come (if he would have come)
паднам	= I fall (Pfve.)
ќе паднеше	= he would have fallen

The Imperative

Separate Imperative forms exist in Macedonian only for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 2nd pers. plur. They are formed from the Present stem.

Verbs of modern Classes I and II with 2nd pers. sing. Pres. in -еш and -иш respectively, have the endings:—

2nd pers. sing. -и	if they are consonant stems
2nd pers. plur. -ете	
and—	
2nd pers. sing. -ј	if they are vowel stems
2nd pers. plur. -јте	

E.g.:—

Sing. иди ²	= носи!	BUT: стој!	= stand!	пиј!	=
go!	carry!	stop!	stop!	drink!	
Plur. идете!	носите!	стојте!	стојте!	пијте!	

All verbs of modern Class III are treated as vowel stems; verbs with Pres. in -увам, etc., use either -у- or -ува- as the stem; hence we have:—

Sing. берај!	викај!	купуј!	ор купувај!	= buy!
= run!	= shout!			
Plur. берајте!	викајте!	купујте!	ор купувајте!	

¹So also: кажував = I was saying.

²Velar stem verbs of old Class I keep the stem with 1st Palatalization in the Imperative:

речам	= I say, Imper. речи!	речете!
помоажам	= I help, " поможи!	поможете!

³The j is not pronounced after и.

For the 1st and 3rd pers. sing. and plur. periphrases with да or нека + Pres. (Pfve. or Impfve.) are used, e.g.:—

да викам	= let me shout!
да викаме	= let us shout!
нека вика	= let him shout!
нека викаат	= let them shout!
да пееме	= let us sing!

Prohibitions are expressed by не + Imperfective Imperative or by немој(те) да + Pres. (Impfve. or Pfve.), e.g.:—

не смејте се	or	немојте	да се смеете	= do not laugh!
немој(те)	да мислите	(дека...)		= do not think (that...)

Notice the idiomatic use of the Imperative in narration:—

Ние кинисавме по патот: оди, оди; одвај ставме в село.

= We started along the road; we walked and walked; with great difficulty (lit. hardly) we reached a village.

Тамо имаме многу свет пред вратата: едни влезу, други излезу.

= There, there were many people at (in front of) the door: some were going in, others were going out.

The particles ама before the Imperative and де after it are used to express urgency:—

Ама брзај кога ти велам = Hurry up when I tell you!
Побрзај де! = Well, hurry up then!

The Present Gerund (Active)

In Macedonian this is the only Gerund (verbal adverb), as in Bulgarian. It is invariable and refers to the subject of a sentence. It describes an action contemporary to that of the main verb (in any tense) and is formed only from Impfve. verbs. The stress falls always on the penultimate syllable.

For Verbs of Classes I and II the Gerund ends in -ејќи, and for verbs of Class III it ends in -ајќи. It can be regarded as being formed from the 1st pers. sing. Imperfect tense by dropping the final -в and adding -јќи. E.g.:—

Imperf. идев	= I was пеев	= I was носев	= I was carrying
Gerund идејќи	= going пеејќи	= singing носејќи	= carrying

Imperf. берав = I купував = I кажував = I
 was running was buying was saying
 Gerund берајќи = купувајќи = кажувајќи =
 running buying saying

The Participles

Macedonian has only two kinds of participles: the Past Participle Active in -л and the Past Participle Passive in -н or -т.

1. The Past Participle Active ends in:—

Sing. masc. -л fem. -ла neut. -ло
 Plur. all genders -ле

For Imperfective verbs it is formed from the Imperfect tense (as in Bulgarian) by substituting the above endings for the final -в of the 1st pers. sing. E.g.:—

Imperf.

можев	= I was able	можел	= been able
пеев	= I was singing	пеел	= been singing
носев	= I was carrying	носел	= carried, been carrying
викав	= I was shouting	викал	= shouted, been shouting
купував	= I was buying	купувал	= been buying
кажував	= I was saying	кажувал	= been saying

For Perfective verbs it is formed from the Aorist tense (also as in Bulgarian) by substituting the same endings for the final -в of the 1st pers. sing. E.g.:—

Aorist

донесов	= I brought	донесол ¹	= brought
паднав	= I fell	паднал	= fallen
доучув	= I heard	дочул	= heard
покажав	= I showed	покажал	= shown
сторив	= I did	сторил	= done
избегав	= I ran out	избегал	= run out
напишав	= I wrote	напишал	= written

As Imperfective verbs do not have an Aorist tense in literary Macedonian (in contrast to Bulgarian and Serbo-Croatian), Macedonian as opposed to Bulgarian has no Past Part. Act. formed from Aorists of Impfve. verbs (e.g. *писал does not exist in Macedonian). Thus the two Past Participles Active cor-

¹Verbs with Past Part. Act. masc. sing. in -он drop the -о- in the other genders and plur., e.g. fem. донесла, neut. донесло, plur. донесле.

respond to the aspects.

On the other hand to form a *direct* and also the Reported Past Conditional or Future in Renarration (see the Compound Tenses below under these headings) Imperfective Past Participles Active have to be formed from Perfective verbs, e.g.:—

паднал = fallen

The Past Part. Active is very important in Macedonian as it is used to form the compound tenses (see below) which express a reported event not witnessed by the speaker but recounted to him by some one else and related by the speaker to a third person (i.e. in Renarration).

2. The Past Participle Passive with a passive meaning is formed from transitive verbs and ends in:—

Sing.	masc. -т	fem. -та	neut. -то	all genders -ти
or				
Sing.	masc. -н	fem. -на	neut. -но	all genders -ни

The same endings can be used to form a Past Participle which is Passive in form but Active in meaning and which is used with имам (= I have) and cum (= I am) to form a peculiarly Macedonian Past tense (already mentioned under "The Conjugation of Verbs"; see also "The Past Definite" under "Compound Tenses" below).

The endings with -т- are used for verbs with stems ending in -н or -в. These endings with joining vowel -е-, where necessary, are added to the Aorist stem. E.g.:—

Passive				
in meaning:	заколнат	= slaughtered		
	ранет	= wounded		
	скаменет	= fossilized		
	соединети	= united (pl.), cf. Socr. сједињени		
	изменет	= changed		
	бават	= bathed		
Active				
in meaning:	тргнат	= started off, set off		
	минат	= passed, past		
	загинат	= died		
	овената трева	= faded grass		
	настанат	= become, happened		

The endings with -н- are used for all other verbs of modern Classes I, II, and III. Verbs of

Class I and II (except for those with Aorist in -ав) have the vowel -e- preceding these endings, while verbs of Class III and those of Class I with Aorist in -ав have -a- before them. E.g.:—

Passive Class I:

in meaning: донесен = brought (Pfve.)
избран = chosen (Pfve.)
убиен = killed (Pfve.)

Class II:

носен = carried (Ipive.)
стопен = done (Pfve.)
крпен = patched (Ipive.)

Class III:

тепан = beaten (Ipive.)
купуван = bought (Ipive.)
изорана и посеана нива = a field
ploughed and sown
венчана жена = a married woman

Active

Class I:

in meaning: дојден = come (irreg.—see below,
"Verbs of going and conveying") (Pfve.)
умрен = dead (Pfve.)

Class II:

спан = slept (Ipive.)

Class III:

беран = run (Ipive.)

There is no yotation before the endings -ен, -ена, etc., as also in Bulgarian. Only velar stems undergo the 1st Palatalization, e.g.:—

испеков = I baked, Past Part. Pass. испечен

Verbal Nouns are formed from Past Participles Passive by changing the final -н to -ње for Impfe. verbs and to -ние for Pfve. verbs. The latter group are mainly literary words expressing more abstract notions and processes. E.g.:—

носен = carried, носење = carrying
одење = going, walking
кажување = saying
купување = buying
тепање = beating
бегање = running
орање = ploughing

but—

издание = publishing
образование = forming, education
решение = decision
соопштение = announcement
уверение = assurance

COMPOUND TENSES

The Future

The Future of verbs of *both* aspects is formed with the *invariable* auxiliary ќе (cf. Bulg. ме) and the Present (Impfe. or Pfve.). Thus:—

Ние ќе викаме = We shall shout (be shouting), Impfe.
Ние ќе го викнеме = We shall call him (Pfve.)

This form is also often used to express habits, e.g.:—

Ќе свири и ќе пее поручек = He plays and sings after dinner

The Future can also be expressed by the *invariable* има да + Pres. (Impfe. or Pfve.), e.g.:—

Има да носим = you will carry (Impfe.)

The negative form of this is the regular way of expressing a negative Future in Macedonian, e.g.:—

Нема да носим = you will not carry

The Reported Future in Renarration

The auxiliary ќе is used with the Compound Past (see below) to express a Future in Renarration, i.e. a future action about which we have heard from others that it is going to take place. The auxiliary verb е or се is always omitted with the 3rd persons sing. and plur. E.g.:—

ќе си викал = they say you will be shouting
ќе сум паднел¹ = they say I shall fall
утре ќе оделе другарите = To-morrow the chaps will go to (the) village, I hear.
Другиден ќе дојдел Спиرو = Spiro will come to market the day after tomorrow, they say.

¹Special Impfe. Past Partic. Active formed from Pfve. verb,—see p. 207. The use of the *Imperfective* P.P.A. is more usual in this tense.

The forms are the same as for the *Reported Past Conditional*, q.v. (pp. 215, 216).

The Compound Past

The Compound Past tense (by natives called the Indefinite Past tense—минаго неопределено време) is formed in the 1st and 2nd pers. sing. and plur. with the Present of the verb "to be" always preceding a Past Part. Active of either aspect. In the 3rd pers. sing. and plur. there is no auxiliary verb, and this tense consists of the Past Part. Active in the appropriate gender and number by itself. Thus:—

Impfve.:—

сум бегал (-ла, ло) = I have been running
 си бегал = You have been running
 бегал = he has been running
 сме бегале = we have been running
 сте бегале = you have been running
 бегале = they have been running

So also: сум купувал (-ла, -ло) = I have been buying; сум носел = I have been carrying.

Pfve.

сум сторил (-ла, -ло) = I have done
 си сторил etc.
 сторил
 сме сториле
 сте сториле
 сториле

The meaning of the tense in the 2nd and 3rd persons.—1. This tense expresses a past action without reference to any particular time in the past, or a fact freshly observed, e.g.:—

Гледам, гората се свршила
 = I see, the forest has finished
 Карпата се надвисила над патот, ти се чини ќе падне
 = The rock hangs over the road;
 it seems to you it will fall

2. (Reported Past (sometimes Present) in Renarration): This tense is used to express an action about which the speaker has heard from someone else, but which he has not witnessed himself. E.g.:—

Тој работел цел ден = he worked all day (they say)
 (Ipfve.)

Ти си паднал од дрво = I have heard you fell off a tree, or You are supposed to have fallen off a tree (Pfve.)

Вие сте направиле куќа, а нам не сте ни кажале
 = You have built a house (we hear), and have not told us

In the 1st person this tense has the meaning of:—

1. a past action not connected with any particular point in time, e.g.:—

Јас сум го правел тоа, и пак ќе го правам
 = I have been doing this and shall do it again

2. a statement in Renarration as if quoting another person's false statement, e.g.:—

Ами! Сум зел, како не?
 = What! I have taken it, of course?
 (It isn't true what you say!)

3. a statement about an action by the speaker, done unconsciously and only subsequently noticed, e.g.:—

Леде, сум го загубил кесето!
 = Oh dear, I have lost my purse!
 (I have only just noticed it)

Ноќеска на сон сум станал, сум излегол надвор, и пак сум се вратил, и ништо не сум сетил што сум правел.

= Last night I got up in my sleep, I went outside, and came back again, and I did not feel anything of what I was doing.

Further uses of the compound Past:—

1. Referring to the Future:—

Берај оттука, дури не сум те отепал!
 = Run away from here, while I haven't killed you!

Си пропаднал, ако не дојдем!
 = You are lost (will perish), if you do not come.

2. To express a command:—

Да не си мрднал од местото, оти тешко ти тебе!
 = Don't budge from the spot, or you will get it!

3. In proverbs and sayings:—

Ни лук си јал, ни лук мирисал
 = I don't like to take the risk (lit. (If) you have not eaten onion, you have not smelt of it)

4. In wishes:—

Ристос ти помогнал! = May Christ help you!

The Past Definite or Perfect

In direct contrast in meaning to the Compound Past is the peculiarly Macedonian Perfect tense constructed with the Past Participle "Passive", already mentioned. Such forms state facts definitely known by the speaker as performed.

Intransitive verbs use the Past Part. "Passive" in the appropriate gender preceded by the verb "to be" in the Present. E.g.:—

Јас сум дојден *or* = I have come (here I am)

Дојден сум

Тој е сега заспан = He is now asleep (has fallen asleep)

This construction is widely used.

Constructions with имам: Transitive and intransitive verbs are used with the Past Part. Passive in the neuter preceded by the auxiliary verb имам (= I have). имам can be used in all its forms and tenses with the corresponding changes of meaning. This also is a common Macedonian construction and virtually creates a whole parallel series of tenses in which the completeness of an action is stressed. E.g.:—

Ние имаме пратено едно писмо дури до Белград
= We have sent a letter as far as Belgrade

Тој нема видено такви луѓе
= He has not seen such people

(As a Pluperfect:)

Немав чуено такви работи
= I had not heard (of) such things

Јас имам слегувано многупати овде
= I have often been (lit. come) down here

The Pluperfect

The Pluperfect tense is formed with the Imperfect of "to be" + the Past Participle Active of either aspect, though the Perfective is more frequently used. It expresses an action in the past preceding another action also in the past. Thus we have:—

Impfve.: бев викал (-ла, -ло) = I had been shouting
беше викал = you had been shouting
беше викал etc.

бевме викале
бевте викале
беа викале

pfve.: бев викнал, etc. = I had called out,
shouted, etc.

Тие беа дошле, кога го пишував писмото
= They had (already) come (pfve.),
when I was writing the letter

Бевме си легнале, кога некој затропа на порта
= We had (already) gone to bed,
when someone knocked on (the) door

A rarer form of this tense with the same meaning is:—

беше сум викал беше сме викале
беше си викал беше сте викале
(беше викал) беше викале

The Conditional Mood

The ordinary Conditional referring to Present, Future, or Past in main clauses is constructed with the invariable auxiliary verb би + Past Participle Active in -л, -ла, etc.¹ With such forms the Nom. Personal Pronoun is required to indicate the person, if the subject is not otherwise expressed or understood.

A less frequently used form has the Present of "to be" in the 1st and 2nd persons after the би, thus indicating the person meant (cf. Slovak), e.g.:—

Јас би дошол, = I would come, or (јас) би сум
дошла дошол, -ла
ти би дошол, = you would come, " (ти) би си дошол,
дошла -ла

тој би дошол = he would come, " (тој) би дошол
таа би дошла = she would come, " (таа) би дошла
ние би дошле = we would come, " (ние) би сме дошле
вие би дошле = you would come, " (вие) би сте дошле
тие би дошле = they would come, " (тие) би дошле

Examples:—

Јас би го зел, да имам пари
= I would take it if I had (the) money

Ти би дошол вчера, да знаеше дека имавме работа
= You would have come yesterday, if
you had known that we had work

Тале би го направил тоа, ако се сетел²
= Tale would have done (or: do)
this, if he had remembered

¹Perfective Past Participles Active are most usual for perfective verbs in this mood, and imperfective P.P.A.—for imperfective verbs.

²Special Impfve. Past Partic. Active formed from pfve. verb, mentioned under the "Past Participle Active".

Јас би сум се скарал со него, да знаев за тоа
= I would have quarrelled with
him, had I known about this

Тој би се орепал во барање, да не му *кажес*¹
= He would have killed himself with
searching if I had not told him

The Conditional is also used to express a doubt,
e.g.:—

Јас би рекол, дека ти тоа не го правиш од срце
= I would say that you are not doing
this sincerely (lit. from the heart)

To express the *Past Conditional* ("would have"), more commonly *ќе* is used with the Imperfect of Impfve. verbs in the main clause, followed by the Imperfect after a suitable conditional conjunction in the "if" clause. For Pfve. verbs a special "hybrid Imperfect" is constructed for both clauses, by adding the Imperfect endings to Aorist stems. (See under "The Imperfect".)²
Examples:—

Јас *ќе* земеv (Pfve.) пари, да дојдеме (Pfve.) татко
ми
= I would have taken (the) money, if my father had come

Тој *ќе* викаше (Impfve.) по мене, ако се забавев
(Pfve.)

= He would have called for me, if I had been late

Јас *ќе* паднев (Pfve.), ако не ме придржеше (Pfve.) ти
= I would have fallen, if you had not held me

Ќе ја виделв таа работа, ако имав време
= I would have seen this thing, if I had had time

This form of the Past Conditional is also used to express intention in the past and also habit in the past, e.g.:—

Ќе одев = I was going to walk, go.
Ќе влезев = I was going to go in.

Ќе седнеше, *ќе* ја земеvе тамбурата и *ќе* свиреше убави
песни, а ние тогаш *ќе* го слушавме
= He would sit down, take his tambura (kind of mando-
line) and play lovely songs, and we would then

¹Special Conditional Imperfect formed from Pfve. verb, mentioned under "The Imperfect".

²Negative form: *немав* да одам (влезам) = I would not have walked (gone in), *ор* = I was not going to walk (go in).

listen to him

Поручек *ќе* ја земеv книгата и *ќе* читав
= After lunch I would take the book and read

There is a further indirect or *Reported Past Conditional* in Macedonian in Renarration to express conditions heard about by the speaker from others. This is formed by *ќе* followed by the Compound Past tense. To form this Reported Past Conditional from Pfve. verbs a special "hybrid Past Part. Active" is formed by adding the Impfve. endings -ел, -ела, etc., to the Aorist stems of Pfve. verbs of Classes I and II. Pfve. verbs of Class III have no special endings. The aux. verbs *е* or *се* are omitted in the 3rd persons, as in other Renarration tenses. E.g.:—

Impfve.:—

Ќе сум викал, -а = I would have been shouting, they say etc.

Ќе си викал

Ќе викал

Ќе сме викале

Ќе сте викале

Ќе викале

Pfve.:—

Ќе сум паднел, -а = I would have fallen, they say

Ќе си паднел

Ќе паднел

Ќе сме паднеле

Ќе сте паднеле

Ќе паднеле

These forms are also used for the *Reported Future*, q.v. above.

Examples:—

Тој *ќе* дојдел тогаш, ако го пунтеле

= He would have come then (they say), if they had let him

Тие *ќе* купеле жито, ами немале пари

= They would have bought (some) wheat (I hear), but they had no money

Петре *ќе* стасал на време, да не беме му се поболел
коњот

= Peter would have arrived in time (I am told), if his horse had not gone sick

This form can also be used to express past habits not witnessed by the speaker, e.g.:—

Спи́ро ќе земе́л леб и ќе о́дел на нива
= (They say) Spiro would take some bread and go into
(the) fields

As this form is also used to express the Reported Future, the last example could also mean: They say Spiro will take (some) bread and go into the fields (but I don't believe it, or: I don't think so).

Irregular and Noteworthy Verbs

Of the old "athematic" verbs, modern Macedonian has preserved only: *сум* (= I am). *јадам*, *јадем* (= I eat) and *дадам* (or *дам*), *дадеш* (= I give, Pfve.) are now regular verbs of Class I with dental stem in the Present. The Imperative of *дадам* is *дај!*, Aor. *дадов*. Past Part. Act. *дал* (Pfve.), *дадел* (Impfve.), Past Part. Pass. *даден*; Impfve. *давам*, regular. *јадам* has Past Part. Act. *јадел* (Impfve.), Past Part. Pass. *јаден*.

сум = I am

	Present	Imperfect	Future ¹	Imperative
Sing. 1	<i>сум</i>	<i>бев</i> (or <i>бидев</i> , etc., reg.)	<i>ќе бидам</i>	—
2 си		<i>беше</i>	<i>ќе бидеш</i>	<i>биди</i>
3 е ²		<i>беше</i>	<i>ќе биде</i>	<i>нека биде</i>
Plur. 1	<i>сме</i>	<i>бевме</i>	<i>ќе бидеме</i>	—
2 сте		<i>бевте</i>	<i>ќе бидете</i>	<i>бидете</i>
3 се		<i>беа</i>	<i>ќе бидат</i>	<i>нека бидат</i>

Present Gerund: *бидејќи*

Past Participle: Sing. masc. *бил*, fem. *била*, neut. *било*; Plur. (all gend.) *биле*.

Past Participle (Impfve.): Sing. masc. *бидел*, fem. *бидела*, neut. *бидело*; Plur. (all gend.) *биделе*

The form *би*, originally an Aorist of this verb, is now only used as an *auxiliary* for forming the Conditional mood: *јас би бил*, etc. = I would be, etc. The negative form of *сум*, etc. is *не сум*, *не си*, etc., written separately in Macedonian.

"I know" is *знам* or *знаам* (Impfve.), Pres. *знаеш* etc., 3rd p. plur. *знаат*

Imperfect: *знаев*, Past Part. Act. *знаел*

"I find out" is: *дознам* or *дознаам* (Pfve.)

¹A Future composed of *ќе* + Present is also occasionally to be found in modern texts.

²Pronounced *je* when emphasized and after an accented word ending in a consonant.

Notice also:—

2nd pers. sing.

можам	= I can	можеш	3rd p. pl. можат, Cl. I. Imperfect можев, P.P.A. можел
сакам	= I wish, I love	сакам	regular Class III.
чујам	= I hear (Pfve.)	чуеш	The negative form of <i>сакам</i> — <i>нејќам</i> , <i>нејќеш</i> , is sometimes used in dialects and idioms with -и- endings: <i>сакате</i> , <i>нејќите</i> (= <i>nolens, volens</i>). P.P.A. <i>нејќел</i>
успеам	= I manage, succeed (Pfve.)	успееш	irreg. Cl. I, Aor. <i>чув</i> , <i>чу</i> , P.P.A. <i>чул</i>
спијам	= I sleep	спиеш	irreg. Cl. I, Aor. <i>успеев</i>
видам	= I see (Pfve.)	видиш	reg. Class I
гледам	= I see (Impfve.)	гледаш	irreg. Cl. II, Aor. <i>видов</i> , P.P.A. <i>видел</i>
пулам	= I look at	пулиш	reg. Cl. III
барам	= I look for	бараш	reg. Cl. III
паѓам	= I fall	паѓаш	reg. Cl. III
земам	= I take (Impfve.)	земаш	reg. Cl. III
земам	= I take (Pfve.)	земеш	irreg. Cl. I, Aor. <i>зедев</i> , <i>зеде</i> , etc., P.P.A. <i>зел</i> , P.P. <i>земен</i> , -а
имам	= I have	имаш	reg. Cl. III
разбирам	Negative form: <i>немам</i> (= I have not), Imperfect: <i>немав</i> , <i>немаше</i> , etc.; <i>нема</i> = there is no(t) etc.; <i>нема</i> = I understand	разбираш	reg. Cl. III, has Pfve. <i>разберам</i> , <i>разбереш</i> , Cl. I, Aor. <i>разбрав</i> , P.P.A. <i>разбрал</i>
кревам	= I lift up (Impfve.)	креваш	reg. Cl. III

2nd pers. sing.

кренам	= I lift up (Pfve.)	кренеш	reg. Cl. I
стасам	= I arrive (Pfve.)	стасаш	reg. Cl. III
на(в)оѓам or најдувам	= I find (Impfve.)	-аш	reg. Cl. III
најдам	= I find (Pfve.)	најдеш	irreg. Cl. I, Aor. најдов, P.P.A. нашол (Ipfve. најдел)
кинисам	= I start out (Pfve.)	кинисаш	reg. Cl. III
кинисувам	= I start out (Impfve.)	кинисуваш	reg. Cl. III
бендисам	= I please, satisfy	бендисаш	reg. Cl. III
клавам	= I put down (Impfve.)	клаваш	reg. Cl. III
кладам	= I put down (Pfve.)	кладеш	reg. Cl. I, Aor. кладов, P.P.A. кладыл
вела́м	= I say (Ipfve.) ¹	велиш	
реча́м	= I say (Pfve.)	речеш	Aor. реков, рече, etc., P.P.A. рекол
кажа́м	= I say, show (Pfve.)	кажеш	Aor. кажав

Verbs of Going and Conveying

To come =			
Impfve. and Freq.:			
Pres. идам	идеш	идеш	идеш
идеш ²	идеш	идеш	идеш
To go (off) =			
Pfve.:			
Pres. појдам	појдов	појдов	појдов
појдеш	појде	појде	појде

¹You speak = зборуваш or говориш, both reg.²The form идвам, -аш, etc., is now considered bad style and is no longer used in good writing.

To come =

Impfe. and Freq.:		
Pres. доаѓам	Imperfect доаѓав	P.P.A. доаѓал
доаѓаш		
Pfe.:		
Pres. дојдам	Aorist дојдов	P.P.A. дошол m. (Pfve.)
дојдеш		дошла f. дојдел (Ipfve.)

Imper. дојди! дојдете! or ела! елате!

To go (away), to walk =

Impfve. and Freq.:		
Pres. одам	Imperfect одев	P.P.A. одел
одиш	одеше	
(одам is often used for 'to go')		

To go away (only) =

Pfve.:			
Pres. отидам	отидов	P.P.A.	отишол m. (Pfve.)
отидеш			отишла f. отидел (Ipfve.)

To go out =

Impfve.:	
Pres. излегувам	излегуваш
Imperfect	излегував Р.Р.А. излегувал

Pfve.:

Pres. излезам	излезеш	P.P.A. излегол (Pfve.) излезел etc.
---------------	---------	--

3rd p. pl. излегоа

So also: влегувам (Impfve.) = to go in, (Pfve.) влезам

To lead =

Impfve. and Freq.:		
Pres. водам	Imperfect	P.P.A. водел
водиш	водеше	
Pfve.:		
Pres. поведам	Aorist	P.P.A. повел
поведеш	поведе	(Pfve.)

To bring (a person) =

Impfve.:

Pres. доведувам Imperfect доведував P.P.A. доведувал

Pfve.:

Pres. доведам Aorist доведов P.P.A. довел
 доведеш доведе (Pfve.)
 доведел (Ipfve.)

To carry, to convey =

Impfve. and Freq.:

Pres. носам Imperfect носев P.P.A. носел

носиш

Pfve.:

Pres. понесам Aorist понесов P.P.A. понел
 понесеш понесел (Pfve.)
 понесел (Ipfve.)

To bring (or convey in a vehicle to a place) =

Impfve.:

Pres. донесувам Imperfect донесував P.P.A. донесувал

Pfve.:

Pres. донесам Aorist донесов P.P.A. донесол¹
 донесеш донесе (Pfve.)
 донесел
 Imperat. донеси!
 донесел (Ipfve.)

For "to convey" we also have:

Impfve. and Freq.: Pres. возам, возиш, рег. Cl. II,
 Pfve.: Pres. повезам, повезеш, Aor. повезов,
 P.P.A. повезол (Pfve.), повезел (Ipfve.)

and for "to bring (in a vehicle)" we also have:

Impfve.: Pres. доведувам, Cl. III,
 Pfve.: Pres. доведам, Cl. I, (like повезам)

The Aspects

The formation of aspects in Macedonian is similar to that in other Slavonic languages.

1. Pfve. from simple Impfve. verbs by means of prepositional prefixes, e.g.:—

Impfve.		
прашам	= I ask	Pfve.
пишувам	= I write	запрашам
молам, -иш	= I request	напишувам
		замолам, -иш

¹ In poetry also: донел.

2. Impfve. from Pfve. verbs by lengthening the root, e.g.:—

Pfve.

дадам, or дам	= I give	Impfve.
купам, -иш	= I buy	давам
донесам, -еш	= I bring	купувам
помогнам, -еш	= I help	донесувам
		помагам

3. Impfve. from Pfve. verbs by changing the ending of the Present, e.g.:—

Pfve.

викам, -еш	= I shout	Impfve.
земам, -еш	= I take	викам
фагам, -иш	= I seize, start	земам, земаш
		факам, -аш

4. Different forms of the same root or occasionally different roots are used to express a difference of aspect, e.g.:—

Impfve.

разбирам	= I understand	Pfve.
излегувам	= I go out	разберам, -еш
доаѓам	= I come	излезам, -еш
		дојдам, -еш

The Pfve. Pres. is only used in subordinate clauses.

A special feature of Macedonian in connection with the aspects is the formation of the Aorist tense from Pfve. verbs only, and a corresponding Pfve. Past Participle Active, and an Imperfect tense from Impfve. verbs only with a corresponding Impfve. Past Participle Active, e.g.:—

Impfve.	доаѓам	= I come	Pfve.	дојдам
Imperfect	доаѓав,	= I used to	Aor.	дојдов,
	доаѓаше	come, or was		дојде,
	etc.	coming		etc.

= I came

P.P.A. дошол

P.P.A. доаѓал

Impfve.	разбирам	= I understand	Pfve.	разберам
Imperfect	разбирав,		Aorist	разбрав
	разбираше			
P.P.A.	разбирал		P.P.A.	разбрал

The Aorist is not formed from Impfve. verbs in Macedonian, nor the Imperfect from Pfve. verbs, in contrast to Bulgarian.

WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS

A peculiar feature of Macedonian is that its short, unemphatic forms of the Personal Pronouns are

more often treated as proclitics preceding the verb than as enclitics following it.¹ As already mentioned in "The Pronouns", they are often repeated by an emphatic pronoun in the same case earlier or later in the sentence.

Се разбира

= It is understood; of course. Cf. Bulg. *раз-бѣра се*, Socr. *разѹме се*

Ми ја дава мене книгата

= He gives me the book

Земи ја

= Take it (fem.)!

Удри ме

= Hit me!

Дај му го

= Give it to him!

The proclitic negative *не* precedes other proclitics, cf. Bulg. E.g.:—

Не се прави тоа никогаш

= That is never done

The auxiliary verb *ќе*, used for forming the Future tense and a form of Conditional, etc., is always proclitic; it precedes pronominal proclitics, e.g.:—

Ќе дојде

= He will come

Ќе му речам нему

= I will tell him

The interrogative particle *ли* is always enclitic (only) and precedes other enclitics, e.g.:—

Работи ли Петар?

= Is Peter working?

Ви дава ли леб?

= Does he give you bread?

The verb *сум* when used as an auxiliary verb is always enclitic or proclitic, e.g.:—

Сте биле

Вие сте биле

= (They say, or we hear) you have been

The negative *не* is usually proclitic; it sometimes takes the stress, e.g.:—

Не разбирам

= I do not understand

but—

не сакам

= I do not want

When *не* occurs with an auxiliary verb, the interrogative particle *ли*, and two proclitic pronouns, the order is: negative, aux. verb, *ли*, Dat. pronoun, Acc. pronoun. E.g.:—

Не сум ли му се јавил?

= Did I not let him know?

Не сум ли му го дал?

= Have I not given it to him?

¹See pp. 183-186.

Monosyllabic conjunctions and prepositions are usually proclitic; but they may also attract the accent—the prepositions¹, before Personal Pronouns and before nouns without the article in adverbial expressions, e.g.:—

Удри ме силно по глава = Strike me hard on (the) head

Еден ден дошла кај него = One day the bear came to him

Јагленарот немал што да = The charcoal burner had no choice (lit. had not what to do)

(See Text No. II—accented.)

TEXTS

(Printed as in the source used)

I. Од Лука, VIII.

5. излезе сејач да сее семе; и кога сееше, едно падна покрај патот и беше изгазено, и птиците небески го исколваа;

6. а друго падна на камен, па штом никна се исуши, оти немаше влага;

7. едно пак падна меѓу трње; и израснаа трњето, па го задушија;

8. а друго падна на добра земја, и кога изникна, донесе стократен плод. Зборувајќи го ова, извика: кој има уши да слуша, нека чуе.

II. Folk tale (народна приказка) accented by K. Кепески

ЈАГЛЕНАРОТ И МЕЧКАТА

Си бил еден јагленар и живеел в планина. Еден ден дошла кај него една мечка што си ја набрдила ногата на глбогов трн. Ногата на мечката ѝ била гнојбсана од трнот. Кога дошла кај јагленарот, почнала да ја крџа болната нога како да сака да му каже: ја боли ногата и го моли да ѝ помогне. Јагленарот разбрал што сака мечката, се приближил до неа и ѝ го извадил трнот. На мечката ѝ поминала ногата. Оттогаче спријателиле јагленарот и мечката и живееле заедно.

¹co and vo only take the accent when written together with a noun and forming an adverb: *сџила* = by force, *вџвор* = outside.

Една ноќ, како што опiele мечката и јагленарот зједно, јагленарот ќе ѝ рече на мечката: "Их, мори мецо, колку ти смрди здиот". Мечката ништо не му одговорила, туку му рече: "Зема ја сега секирана и удри ме силно по глава. Ако не го сториш тоа, ќе те изедам". Јагленарот немал што да прави и го стори она што му рече мечката. На главата на мечката ѝ направил голема резанка. После, мечката си отишла и не се вратила за долго време кај јагленарот.

Поминале многу години. Еден ден се среле пак мечката и јагленарот. Тогаш мечката го натерала јагленарот да види по главата дали се познава некаква трага од секирата. Јагленарот погледал и рекол дека ништо не се познава. А мечката ќе му рече тогаш: "Ете, видиш, секирата трага не остави; ами што ми рече дека ми смрди здиот, уште го думам". Тогаш скбна и го изеде јагленарот.

III. Folk poem (народна песна)

"Рачај, порачај, бела Бојано:
сега сум овде, утре ќе одам,
утре ќе одам туѓа туѓина.

Рачај, порачај, што да ти пратам,
ал' пари сакаш, ал' книга сакаш?"

"Ни пари сакам, ни книга сакам,
и јас си сакам овде што нема,
овде што нема таму што има,

таму што има до три бибиља,
до три бибиља рано што пеат:

првиот пее за вечерање,
вториот пее за легнување,
третиот пее за станување!

"Ај вечерајте, две луди млади,
две луди млади, две неженети!"

"Ај легнете си, две луди млади,
две луди млади, две неженети!"

"Ај станете си, две луди млади,
две луди млади, две неженети!"

Ах, да би знала тој што ми пее,
рано што пее за вечерање,

јас ќе го ранев со толен шеќер.
Ах, да би знала тој што ми пее,

рано што пее за легнување,
јас ќе го ранев со суво грозје.

Ах, да би знала тој што ми пее,
рано што пее за станување,

јас ќе го ранев отров и катран!"

IV. Константин Миладинов (*modernized spelling*)

ТАГА ЗА ЈУГ

Орелски крилја как' да си метнех,
и в наши страни да си прелетнех!
На наши места ја да си идам,
да видам Струга, Кукуш да видам;
да видам дали сонце и тамо
мрачно угрева, како и вамо.

Ако как' овде сонце ме стрети,
ако пак мрачно сонцето свети;
на пат далечни ја ќе се стегнам,
и в други страни ќе си побегнам,
каде сонцето светло угрева,
каде небото ѕвезди посеваат.

Овде е мрачно, и мрак м' обвива,
и темна магла земја покрива;
мразои и снегои, и пепелници,
силни ветришта, и вијулици;
околу магли и мразои земни,
а в гради студои, и мисли темни.

Не, ја не можам овде да седам:
не, ја не можам мразои да гледам;
дајте ми крилја ја да си метнам,
и в наши страни да си прелетнам,
на наши места ја да си идам,
да видам Охрид, Струга да видам.

Тамо зората греи душата;
тамо дарбите—природна сила
со сета раскош ги растурила:
бистро езеро гледам белеи
и си од ветер сино темнеи;
поле погледниш или планина,
сегде божева е хубавина.

Тамо по срце в кавал да свирам,
сонце да зајдва, ја да умирам.

V. Венко Марковски

АЛТАНА

Кој не ја видел Алтана?

Кому не памет свртела,

Алтана — алтан на грло,

Алтана — жива приказна!

Една е мома Алтана,
на лице — пупка трендафил,
на снага — стројна калина,
на мерак — огин разгорен!

Седи ли — гори земјата,
гледа ли — рани отвара,
мине ли — луѓа планинска,
пее ли — мртви скорива!

Кога се Алтана родила,
три пати зора зорила,
три пати светот се менил,
три пати рајот с' отворил.

Пролет ѝ била постела,
горска ја срна доила,
ангели песни пеале,
над неа солнце греало!

Кој не ја видел Алтана?
Кому не срце однела? —
Женети венец фрлаат,
ергени горат за неа!

VI. Коста Рацин

ТУТУНОБЕРАЧИТЕ

На кантар студен со туч го мерат
и можат ли да го измерат
нашиов тутун — нашава мака,
нашава солена пот!

Од темни зори на утрини летни
до никоја доба на вечери зимни
тој гладно пие тагата наша
и потта и крвта и снагата ни.
Жолт — жолти прави лицата бледни
и жолта гостинка у градите носи.

По утрини росни, по мугрите пресни
наведени ничкум по полињата родни
зачмаени ние го береме.

Лист по лист кини,
лист по лист нижи,
лист по лист превртуј, притискај,
лист по лист мило, таговно реди
и на долга низа од капки пот
и надеж со клетва и зелена јад,
со корав поглед на очите матни
по кревките лисја жолтозлатни
прикаска горка на живот клет
нанижи безгласна а така јасна.

Та не знаеш ли?

Денот ли дојде тој да се мери —
мерка му нема, а в градите длаби
без да се запре, без дно да најде
не тага а клетва, и в очите матни

и не сакајќи сама се дига
фуријата.

Кантарот носи лисјето златно
а в гради луто далгите беснат
на жолтата мака — на жолтиот тутун
на жолтата пот на раците ни!

VII. Коле Неделковски

ВРАКАЊЕ

О страдна земјо јунашка,
одбради образ набразден,
одви и срце поврати
од лути рани вековни.

Еве ти чеда, погледни,
радоста твоја, мајчице,
со очи полни правдини,
гордост за свет и светлина.

Зошто, ох, така немееш,
уште ли не си веруеш,
или ти сила истина,
мајчински да нè погледнеш?

Разбрав, о прозна грешнице,
мајка на црни сираци,
земја на коски прснати
од борци — млади јунаци.

А за нас, мајко, не прашам —
гладни и голи скитници —
колку си горка тлеала,
колку си отров голтнала.

Ај нека тија останат —
темни и стари времиња,
а сега гради разгрни,
својте си чеда прибери.

И викни, мајко, извикај,
радост и песни истури
за твојте гладни сираци,
за твојте клети скитници.

VIII. Гого Ивановски

ВО СЕЛСКАТА СОБА

Миризма топла од пченичен леб
на сачот што се пече,
те гали во гради, те опива сет,
во тиха, заспана вечер.

Во ламбата мижи, потрепнува плам,
на софра грав се пари,
а селанец корав започнува пак,
приказни стари, стари.

Расправа како во нивјето клас
при ветрец тих се лушка,
а топол ко оран неговиот глас,
чинш божем те гушка.

И петлите дури не запеат пак,
тој збор по збор ќе ниже —
приказна јасна ко дневниот зрак,
жива ко мајчини грижи.

IX. Славко Јаневски

СВАТОВСКА

Во село ми, во село ми
ситно оро виловито,
надвишило класје класој,
срп се сплеткал в тешко жито.

Натежнале зрели цреџни,
искршиле сочни гранки,
и прокапал мед од саќе
на момини топли дланки.

Грозје зрее, сокој лее,
сонце-свадбар дели злато,
закитува бели дреи
на жетвари, селски сватој.

Во село ми, во село ми
свадбената песна снови,
нараснале над јасики
двокатници наши нови.

Се сокриле бели сидој
под тутунски низи тешки,
од погачи, од погачи
вршниците раснат жешки.

Гиздав младич по лозјата
натокува рујно вино,
бело моме дарој ткае
в леново поле сино.

Блеат трла, амбар стежал,
свадба слави село збрано,
под сватовско крилно знаме
мине оро разиграно.

Х. Блаже Конески

ОХРИД

1.
Ој разбуди се, росо девојче,
ти да погледаш долу полено,
како е поле раззеленето,
и по полето бели сватови —
коњи виловни што разиграле,
песна сватовска што запеале.
— Ој та не ми е поле широко,
поле широко раззеленето.
Ој туку ми е сино езеро,
сино езеро разлелеано.

Ој та не ми се бели сватови,
ој туку ми се бели бранови.
Ој та не ми е песна сватовска,
ој туку ми е песна жалосна.

Шуми езеро, играј езеро,
летај, галепче белокрилесто,
летај долетај мене на рака,
да те затоплам на бели гради!

2.
Три дена веќе езерото,
три ноќи пее бурна песна,
како во чуден занес сето,
како во игра страсна и бесна
бучи и јачи,
клика и плачи!

О таква сила! Да можеш така
во занес бескрај сет да тонеш!
Да можеш таков глас да имаш,
над бурни водје да зазвони,
од сури ридје да се рони!

XI. Блаже Конески

ЗА МАКЕДОНСКАТА ЛИТЕРАТУРА

Кога треба кратко да се определи состојбата на македонската литература, првата мисла ми е да побарам формулација за едно чувство што не е само мое субјективно, ами претставува вистински плод на нашиот литературен процес. Тоа е чувството на интимен допир со јазичната материја, чувството на податливост на јазикот, би рекол дури—на онаа галовност на говорот што не обзема во својата полнота. Не е тоа, се разбира, некое посебно откритие—секој творец го доживеал тоа во некаков вид, па макар доживувањето и да не го

подбудило да размислува за појавата. Но тоа чувство е особено изразито во почетокот на создавањето на една литература, и тогаш тоа има подлабоко значење— знак е за нејзиното зреење.

Зошто кај нас, како и другата, спонтано се почна од народната поезија? Кажувањето облагородено од силата на уметничкиот чин е онаа атмосфера што творецот треба да ја чувствува околу себе за да може и самиот да создава. Слухот на нашиот поет беше природно привлечен од звукот на единствениот извор на уметничкиот збор во нашиот јазик. Малку подалеку од него уште траеше тишината. Но на тоа блажено место можеше да се задржиме само многу кратко време. Треше да ја разбудиме тишината, со полна вера во новите созвучја што таа ни ги ветува. Тоа што ние го направивме за изминативе десетина години, нас самите не богати со животно чувство на полифонијата на нашиот уметнички јазик, нашиот слух е веќе обземен од неа. Не можеше, се разбира, за тоа време да се постигне којзнае колку, но самото тоа чувство е драгоцено, оно не се губи ами се продолжува, се предава како по законот на споените садови. Би го споредил по тоа чувство македонскиот поет со човек што, учејќи да плива, одеднаш првпат сетува дека морето го држи на површината, го сетува милувањето на брановите. Јазикот не прима, ни ги открива значи своите својства, не е мимолетен звук, ами богата сушност што не опфаќа и не исполнува со своето сунее.

Можеби ќе речат дека сум премногу опфатен од таа една мисла, кога велам дека сите различни настојувања на литературното поле кај нас за последниве неколку години вредат пред сè толку колку што беа во служба на узревањето на тоа чувство. Под непосредно влијание на литературните борби во другите југословенски центри но, се разбира, и во согласност со закономерноста на нашиот книжевен процес, се поведоа темперментни спорови, се истакнаа ознаките на "реализмот" и "модернизмот". Многу нешто во тие спорови не спаѓа во литературата. А тоа што спаѓа во неа, па и кога ќе се обележи со ознаки кои и другаде се употребуваат, не е сосем истото—зашто ѝ е потчинето и, во својата сушност, мора да ѝ биде потчинето на основната задача што неминовно ја налага овој момент од нашиот литературен развиток: постигање на споменатото чувство на полнота и податливост на јазичната материја, на она, би рекол, роеење на уметнички облагородени звуци кои го привлекуваат слухот на творецот и му овозможуваат да се откине од јазичниот прав на делничноста. Поинаку, значи, ја поставува таа работа кај нас фактот што требаше да се постигне првпат тоа чувство во еден нов литературен јазик.

XII. С. Шарски

ШАР ПЛАНИНА

Ако тргнеме од нашиот главен град Скопје кон запад со малечкото влакче, што ги соединува градовите на северна и западна Македонија—Тетово, Гостивар, Кичево, Струга и Охрид—скоро ќе навлеземе по Дервенскиот Провлак. Овој провлак ја дели Жеденската Планина од Сува Гора. Провлакот е тесен и многу пречи на погледот. Но кога ќе го минеме селото Групчин, ние ќе видиме дел од голема и висока планина. А што ќе излеземе од Дервенскиот Провлак, пред нашите очи наеднаш се открива една чудесна и неописно убава Слика. Пред нас се испречува целата Шар Планина. Нашите очи гледаат и не можат да ѝ се начудат на височината и на убавината на таа наша македонска планина, за која толку многу се пее во нашите народни песни.

Гледаш, но срцето ти тупка од радост и гордост и не знаеш на што повеќе да го задржиш својот зачуден поглед: дали на рамното како морско огледало и плодородно Тетовско Поле, што изгледа како цветна градина, дали на острите врвови Љуботен, Кобилица, Турчин, Војводица и други, што гордо се издигаат дури до облаците; или пак на прочуените шарски гори. Сите тие убавини на природата ја исполнуваат твојата душа со чиста и возвишена радост и ти не можеш да не се осетим горд оти си се родил како син на убавата и славна македонска земја....

XIII. Јован Бошковски

From the story "РАСТРЕЛ"

Надвор есенското зајдисонце ги златеше крошните од високите буки. Низ плитарите на котарот се цедеше слаба светлина, што полка се промрежуваше, толку полка, што на Иља му се чинеше дека никогаш нема да се стемни а да дојде стариот бач, кого тој со душа го чекаше да му каже што станува во планината.

Кога чкралпа вратничето, беше веќе мрак. Иљо олеснето се издиши и за миг заборави на своите тебобни мисли, постана од пламеното легало. Сламтата шушна. Во темницата одвај се назираше малата приведена фигура од старчето, но гласот јасно му го чу: тој ги тераше овците в котар.

— Ти си, стрико Танасе?

— Јас сум...Еве, сега ќе го запалам виделничено. Чкртна чкорче. Мало жолтникаво пламенче ја процепи темнината и затрепка светлина по благото лице на старецот покриено со снежно-бела брада. Сенката му заигра по сидот, голема и трепкава и кога старецот појде да го земе виделничето, сенката му порасна, се

извиши дури до исчадените, греди. После се доближи до него со запалено виделниче в рака, мил и поднасмеан како секогаш:

— Е, се крепиш ли?...

— Арен сум сега. Туку ми здодеа на едно место. И знаеш—јас не сум за седење. Уште ли се штураат наваму? Нема ли да скршат глава?... — нетрпеливо одговори Иљо и се загледа во стариот планинец, чекајќи од него да чуе нешто.

А тој спокојно се готвеше да си врши работа.

— Потрај малу, додека ги измолзам овцине... —

одговори старецот и се сврте кон котарот, од каде што допираше блеење и овците нетрпеливо подаваа глави преку плетот.

Стрико Танас отиде покроце, а со него зашега и виделото. Иљо остана пак по темница, сам, со своите мисли. Шуркањето на млекото, гласот на старецот што си збореше нешто со овците, нивното блеење, го нишкаше пријатно в сон и го враќаше со мисли далеку, во деновите на неговото детинство. Потклекнат, стариот бач ги молзеше овците покроце, без брзање, како во таа работа да се криеше некаква чудна милина. Кога сврши и пак пријде, Иљо се поткрена до половина во легалото, се протегна, а во жилите му заструи крвта. Зачека:

— Е?... —

— На, напи се. Ти, безбели си гладен? — место одговор му принесе стрико Танас каленица со пресно млеко, што уште се пенеше, шумеше и слатко мирисаше на некосена трева. Иљо го испи наеднаш, со големи голтки. Со нескриена радост сети како по снагата му се разлеа свежа струја. Полека му се враќаше старата сила.

SECTION 4. SERBOCROATIAN

INTRODUCTION

The remarkable beauty of the Serbocroatian language finds its parallel in the remarkable character of the people of Yugoslavia who speak it. By their fearless decision to resist in the spring of 1941, with no other result in prospect but that of untold suffering and certain disaster, they wrote a heroic page in the history of human courage.

Serbocroatian could be defined roughly as the language of the Slav inhabitants of the western half of the broad part of the Balkan peninsula, i.e. the greater part of modern Yugoslavia, whose inhabitants immigrated there about the sixth century A.D. Despite differences of dialect, regional names, religion, and varying historical fortunes, it should be emphatically stated that the language of Serbia, Croatia, the Voivodina (to the north of the Sava and the Danube), Bosnia, Herzegovina, Dalmatia, and Montenegro, is mutually intelligible without previous study or preparation, and for this reason alone the union of these peoples in 1918 was not a fortuitous or illogical event. Together with Slovenian, Macedonian and Bulgarian, as well as Old Slavonic, Serbocroatian forms the South Slav group of languages. Owing to the greater divergences of Bulgarian and Macedonian, some philologists class them as East S. Slav, as opposed to Serbocroatian and Slovenian, which they call together West S. Slav.

The beauty of the sound of Serbocroatian will be found in its system of five simple, clear vowels, which do not vary according to the position of the stress in the word, and in its clear consonants (only a few of which are palatalized). These give a forceful and virile impression, while the mobile "musical" accent, occurring mostly early in the word, and the varying vowel lengths give the language a unique lilt and pattern of changing pitch which charms the ear. At one of the historic Slavonic conferences, Serbocroatian was voted the most pleasant-sounding Slav tongue. Professor Jopson has also described it as "the most beautiful, yet manly, of the Slav tongues".

The purest tradition of the Serbocroatian language was preserved through historical times in the famous folk ballads and folk stories which were handed down orally but not systematically recorded till Vuk Karadžić undertook this task at the beginning of the nineteenth century. But the literary language of

the previous periods was not modelled on this tradition, being first written in a Serbianized form of Church Slavonic. During the dark days of Turkish subjugation, Dalmatia, though from 1409 largely ruled by Venice, kept the torch burning together with the reformer and counter-reformation writers of Croatia and Bosnia. One of the most outstanding writers of this period is Ivan Gundulić, 1589-1638, a native of the free city of Dubrovnik—better known in English as the Ragusan Republic. Later, in the eighteenth century, the persecution under Maria Theresa caused the Serbs under her rule to look to Russia for salvation. The influence of the Russian teachers sent out to help them brought about the strong admixture of Russian Church Slavonic to the literary language of the time, and produced the terrible hybrid "slavjanoserbski" language of the eighteenth century.

The first writer effectively to combat these corrupt tendencies in the literary language was Dositej Obradović, 1742-1811, a scholar and a widely travelled man who visited England and was a great admirer of Addison and Steele. But he was in an unfortunate position, because in combating the Russian influence on the language he seemed to be combating the one political power that was prepared to support his people during their persecution under Austria and Turkey. Despite his convictions and efforts, Obradović did not wholly succeed in freeing his own writings from the largely ecclesiastical literary traditions of his time. He prepared the way; and one can note in passing, he was the first writer to use the letter *h* for the sound *č* [tʃ].

The greatest work of linguistic and literary reform was done by Vuk Stefanović Karadžić, 1787-1864, who was taught and inspired by the "romantic" nationalist ideas of Jérnej Kopitar, the Slovene scholar and writer who worked as a censor for the Austrian government. He believed that the only genuine living language was the language of the common people, the speech of "the ploughman and the digger", and this language he regarded as the only rightful model for the literary medium of the Yugoslavs. Furthermore, he advocated that one should "write as one speaks", and to this end reformed the spelling on a purely phonetic basis, and even simplified the Serbian alphabet, abolishing certain letters and adopting finally six new ones: *đ*, *j*, *z*, *š*, *h*, *u*, thereby crystallizing the efforts at orthographical reform of such people as Sòlarić and Mìkalj. His first *Grammar of the Serbian Language*, written according to the speech

of the common people, appeared in 1814, and the first edition of his Serbian dictionary appeared in 1818, giving some 26,000 words with copious explanations, especially of expressions in folklore. Both these works were subsequently greatly expanded. He visited Russia and Germany, and lived much of his time in Vienna, and all the while was tirelessly collecting and editing the folk ballads and folk stories and proverbs of his people, encouraged and aided by Kopitar and travelling round the Yugoslav districts when his means would allow. By his reforms he made many literary enemies, but in his later years his reputation became international, although he had no academic training; and he received subsidies from the Russian and Serbian governments to carry on his work. The final edition of his folk ballads, nine volumes, did not start appearing till 1891, after his death.

In Croatia a similar work of linguistic and literary reform was carried out by Ljudevit Gaj, 1809-1872, who was inspired and encouraged by the two great Czechoslovak Slavophiles, the poet Ján Kollár and the scholar P. J. Šafárik. His aim was to create a uniform "Illyrian" language for all western Yugoslavs, to awaken their national consciousness and help the spread of education and the cultural defence of his people, dominated at the time by alien powers. In 1836, in his *Illyrian National Newspaper* and his *Illyrian Morning Star* (Dànica Ilirska) he finally chose the *je-* version of the *što* dialect as the most fitting medium for the literary language, the same dialect as that chosen by Vuk Karadžić and one of the most widely spoken in the Yugoslav lands. His orthographical reforms were based on Czech models, supplemented by the suggestions of Bábukić; using the Latin alphabet with diacritical signs, he introduced a phonetic spelling exactly corresponding to that introduced by Vuk for Cyrillic. Thus he helped the Croats to give up their local dialect as a literary medium and enter a far wider field. His movement had such a great success that in 1843 the Austro-Hungarian authorities put a ban on the name "Illyrian" and suppressed his paper and the movement it stood for. Gaj, who was not a political revolutionary but always tried to live as a law-abiding citizen, was forced to live in obscurity and poverty till his death in 1872. But his great work had already been accomplished—the literary and cultural fusion of the peoples of Yugoslavia.

The final seal to this work was set by the so-called Vienna Literary Agreement (Běcki književni

đgovor) in 1850, when all the leading Yugoslav scholars of the time, including both Vûk and Gâj, met in Vienna and agreed on the final adoption of a common literary language on the following basis: the adoption of a single dialect in its unadulterated form rather than a composite language embodying the features of several dialects; this dialect was to be the *je*-version of the *što* dialect, already mentioned above, the most widely spoken dialect except in Serbia. In it the letter *h* was to be preserved, although mute in some dialects, and the vocalic *r* sound was to be written as just *r*. Further details in the work of the *rapprochement* and unification of the Serbocroatian language were subsequently completed, most notably by the Serbian scholar, Đuro Džanić, a pupil of Vûk, and by Tóma Măretić, a distinguished professor of Zagreb University and author of a standard work on the language.

Since 1918, we have witnessed a period in which the fusion of the main dialects can be regarded, for all practical purposes, as complete: the language can be written either in the Latin alphabet or in Cyrillic, in either the *je*- or *e*-variety of the *što* dialect, which are mutually intelligible straight away; and, although the two alphabets *seem* to create a chasm of difference, these scripts can be simply and directly transcribed from one to the other. Purist tendencies have been strong, aiming at the elimination of foreign loan-words, especially those of eastern origin. But the foreigner, and especially the Slavist, cannot help observing with some surprise the fewness of the borrowings from the kindred Slavonic languages in comparison with the numerous western loan-words for the commonest things of everyday life. Some of the most meritorious work in the ordering and garnering of the language in this period has been done by the eminent Serbian scholar, Professor A. Bélič.

In recent years movements have started in favour of recognizing regional varieties of Serbocroatian as separate languages, notably Croatian, Bosnian, Montenegrin, as distinct from Serbian. At this stage we can only register the facts that all these varieties of language are mutually intelligible and that only two distinct literary variants and traditions are recognizable, the eastern one of Serbia centring on Belgrade and using the *ekavština* variant of the *što* dialect, and the western one of Croatia, centring on Zagreb, which uses the *ijekavština* variant of the same *što* dialect.

THE SERBOCROATIAN ALPHABETS—CYRILLIC AND LATIN

Cyrillic. Latin Script. Approx. English equivalent.

A a	A a	(more open and forward than) <i>a</i> ^h
Б б	B b	<i>b</i>
В в	V v	<i>v</i>
Г г	G g	<i>g</i> in "go".
Д д	D d	<i>d</i> (dental)
Ђ ђ	Đ đ	<i>đ</i> in "due" approaching <i>j</i> .
Е е	E e	<i>e</i> in "met"; long <i>e</i> = <i>ê</i> in Fr. <i>été</i> .
Ж ж	Ž ž	<i>s</i> in "pleasure", <i>žh</i> .
З з	Z z	<i>z</i>
И и	I i	<i>ee</i> in "meet".
Ј ј	J j	<i>y</i> in "yes" and "boy".
К к	K k	<i>k</i> (unaspirated)
Л л	L l	<i>l</i> in "let" (never as in "all").
Љ љ	Lj lj	<i>ly-</i> , <i>li</i> in "million".
М м	M m	<i>m</i>
Н н	N n	<i>n</i> (alveolar)
Њ њ	Nj nj	<i>ny-</i> , <i>n</i> in "new".
О о	O o	<i>o</i> in "for".
П п	P p	<i>p</i> (unaspirated)
Р р	R r	<i>r</i> rolled.
С с	S s	<i>s</i> in "see".
Т т	T t	<i>t</i> (dental)
Ћ ћ	Ć ć	<i>t</i> in "tune" approaching <i>ch</i> in "church".
У у	U u	<i>u</i> in "rule".
Ф ф	F f	<i>f</i>
Х х	H h	<i>h</i> or <i>ch</i> in "loch".
Ц ц	C c	<i>ts</i> in "bits", i.e. pronounced together.
Ч ч	Č č	<i>ch</i> in "church" with the tongue farther back.
Ш ш	Dž dž	<i>j</i> in "jam" with the tongue farther back.
Щ щ	Š š	<i>sh</i>

Latin Order:—A, B, C, Č, Џ, D, Dž, Đ, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, Lj, M, N, Nj, O, P, R, S, Š, T, U, V, Z, Ž.

It will be seen that the Serbian Cyrillic alphabet is an adaptation of the Old Slavonic with the following new letters (see above): Ђ, Ј, Ћ, Ѓ, Ї, Ў.

¹In the Latin alphabet, *đ* for *đ* has now become old-fashioned. The letters *č* for *č*, *h* for *h*, and *g* for *g* have not been generally adopted, although used in certain learned works.

All former double consonants except *jj* are reduced to single ones, and this is reflected in the spelling, e.g.: *õdani* = devoted < *õddani*, but

пале = little dog, from пале = dog

ишáрати = to colour, (<иш- > ишл- with reduction of double consonant)
 ражáрити = to make to glow (<разж- > разж- with reduction of double consonant)

2. When н changes to м before the labials б and п, e.g.:—

о́брамбен = defensive
 прѣхрамбен = nutritional
 цр̄мпураст = swarthy

This feature does not occur in many compound words, e.g.:—

једáнпұт = once
 вáнбрáчнй = illegitimate

III. Final voiced consonants are normally pronounced voiced, as in Ukrainian, e.g.:—

брѣг phon. bre:g = hill
 грáд phon. gra:d = city
 гáлeб phon. 'galeb = seagull
 мұж phon. mu:ʒ = husband
 жѣб phon. ʒe:ʒ = thirst
 вѣз phon. ve:z = embroidery

All the *vowels* have roughly the same quality, whether under the accent or not, and can all form diphthongs with *j*, e.g.:—

гáј = wood бѣј = fight
 хеј! = hey! кұпј = buy!
 бйј! = beat!

The "soft vowels" of Russian are rendered by the corresponding "hard vowel" preceded by *j* (or ѣ or ѣ), e.g.:—

бјеснѡна = fury љұт = angry јá = I
 љѣро = summer ѡкати = to bray јър = south

THE ACCENTS

(The following general rules apply to vocalic *r* as well as to all the five vowels.)

The accent (and stress) in Serbocroatian can fall on any syllable of a word except the last. Moreover, it can vary in position in the course of declension or conjugation, e.g.:

брѣг = hill плѣтѣм = I weave
 брѣгу Loc. sing. плетѣмо = we weave
 брѣгови Nom. plur. дам = I give (Pfive.)
 брегѡвима Dat. Instr. дáмо = we give(Pfive.)
 Loc. plur.

The stressed syllable or any *subsequent* one can be either long or short; while the stressed syllable can also vary by having an intonation either rising or falling in pitch. There are thus obtained four main varieties of accent, called "musical" because of the rise or fall in pitch:—

long rising, marked ' ,
 long falling, marked ` ,
 short rising, marked ˘ , also called
 spòrĭ = slow
 short falling, marked ˘ , " "
 bĭrĭ = fast

The difference between ' and ` is much more clearly audible, than between ˘ and ˘ , and consists in a definite rise or fall on the actual vowel so accented. The ˘ really indicates a considerable fall in pitch preceded by a slight rise, but this rise is observable usually only when the word is in an emphatic position in the sentence. (Sentence intonation naturally modifies the intonation of individual words.) Vondrák has pointed out that ˘ sounds stronger and more abrupt than ˘ , which latter, as also the ˘ , cause the next syllable quite naturally to be higher in pitch and more smoothly connected.

The two rising accents are intonations newly formed in Serbocroatian, and indicate a shift back by one syllable from the original Slavonic accent, the position of which is often preserved in Russian, Ukrainian, Byelorussian, Bulgarian, and Slovenian. This accent shift can be observed in about 75 per cent of Serbocroatian words. The two falling accents can occur *only* on the *first* syllable of words (and can also represent a shifted accent.¹) Therefore any word accented on any syllable but the first must have one of the two *rising* accents. Monosyllables can bear only one of the *falling* accents. There also occur unaccented words, proclitic and enclitic (conjunctions, prepositions, the negative particle не, the short Personal Pronouns and the auxiliary verbs). However the accent sometimes shifts on to a proclitic when it is followed by a word with one of the *falling* accents.

¹See pp. 329-330 for examples.

Only a demonstration by a native or a gramophone record or tape can give the learner a clear idea of what these intonations sound like in isolated words and in the flow of connected speech. They represent in part a most interesting survival of an ancient feature of Indo-European.

THE DIALECTS OF SERBOCROATIAN

Serbo-croatian is divided into three main dialects, rather arbitrarily named after the different word for "what" in each of them, namely *što*, *kaj*, and *ča*, which may be taken to represent the differences of vocabulary between them. But quite considerable differences of accent and accentuation also exist. The *kaj* dialect spoken in N.W. Croatia is a transition to Slovenian. The *ča* dialect is confined to N. Dalmatia and certain Adriatic islands, and is slightly more difficult to follow for those knowing standard Serbo-croatian (because of its more archaic accent, corresponding in position more nearly to that in Slovenian and Russian, and also because of greater differences in declensions, etc.). The reader will immediately observe that the *što* dialect is by far the most widespread of the three, for it is spoken over the rest of the Serbo-croatian-speaking area of Yugoslavia E. and S.E. of these areas.¹

The *ča* and *što* dialects are subdivided into three subvarieties according to whether the old *š* is rendered *e*, *je* (or *ije* when long), or *i*: e.g. *věra*, *vjěra*, or *vīra* (= faith). The *e* variety of the *što* dialect is used as the literary language of Serbia¹ and most of the Voivodina, while the *je* variety predominates in the rest of the *što* area, including Croatia, Bosnia, and Montenegro, and is also the language of the greater part of the older Serbian literature, including the writings and collections of Vuk Karadžić. These three sub-varieties especially are mutually intelligible without any real difficulty, just as in English the various pronunciations of *a* and the other vowels present no insuperable obstacle to understanding. It should be noted that the *kaj* dialect has only *e* for former *š* (ě), like Slovenian.

¹This includes the Kosovo-Resava dialect of E. and S. Serbia, and the more southern dialect called *torlački*, which forms a transition to Macedonian and Bulgarian.

Correspondence of the accents between the e and je sub-dialects.

Whereas both *ě* and *ē* are rendered by *je* bearing the same accent in each instance, e.g.:—

věra (= faith), *vjěra*
сѣдим (= I sit), *сјѣдим*

the two long accented *ě* and *ē* are rendered *ije* and *ijě* respectively, stressing the first or second syllable according to the fall or rise of tone, e.g.:—

сѣно (= hay), *сјѣно*
but

пéка (= river), *rijěka*

An unaccented *ě* is rendered *ijě*, e.g.:—

кòлѣвка (= cradle), *kòlijěvka*

But after a consonant + *r*, short *je* is replaced by *e*, e.g. *впріѣме* (= time), Gen. sing. *впрѣмена*. There are a number of other instances of the lack of the correspondence outlined above.

In Cyrillic *l + j* and *n + j* are rendered, of course, by *љ* and *њ*, e.g.:—

лѣто = summer, *њѣпа* = bosom

t + j and *d + j* are also sometimes (according to the western dialect) rendered by *ћ* and *џ*, e.g.:—

S. *рѣјѣ* or W. *рѣѣ* = where (*š* is the literary form.)

Before *o*, *j*, and *љ*, *њ* is used in the *je* dialect instead of *je*, e.g.:—

хтѣо je = he wanted
смѣјати се = to laugh
бѣмер = mark

It should be noted that all three sub-varieties of the *što* dialect can be written in either the Cyrillic or the Latin alphabet in various parts of Yugoslavia, and that the dialects do not generally correspond to the boundaries of the republics or to religious boundaries. The *alphabet* used, on the other hand, is usually an indication of religion, the Cyrillic being preferred by the Orthodox as a matter of tradition.

VOWEL GRADATION AND VOWEL LENGTHENING

The familiar features of vowel gradation or Ablaut and vowel lengthening are both fully alive in

Serbo-croatian, e.g.:—

1. Ablaut:—

смѣрт = death умѣрти = to die умѣрити = to kill, exhaust
 дѣх = breath дѣх = spirit
 вѣти = to wind вѣнац = wreath
 звѣти = to call звѣм = I call позив = invitation

2. Lengthening:—

одговѣрити = to answer (Pfive.) одговѣрати = to answer (Impfve.)
 умрем = I die (Pfive.) умirati = to die (Impfve.)

SLAVONIC CHARACTERISTICS

1. The Metathesis of liquids of O.S. is also a feature of modern S. Slav languages, as well as of W. Slav, in which no "Polnoglasié" exists. Thus:—

влáда = government брѣг = hill
 млáд = young млéко = milk
 гра́д = city ра́бота = labour

2. The 1st Palatalization: к, г, х changing to ч, ж, ш before и, е, е.г.:—

пѣкѹ = they bake Бѣг = God стрѣх = terror
 пѣче = he bakes Бѣже = Voc. sing. стрѣшити = to terrify

2a. ч and ж when originating from к and г respectively, also change to ч and ж, as in the 1st Palatalization, e.g.:—

кнѣз = prince зѣц = hare
 кнѣже Voc. sing. зѣче Voc. sing.
 кнѣжев Possessive adj. зѣчица = female hare

The Poss. adj. from the name Мѣлица is Мѣличин just as мѣйка (= mother) has the Poss. adj. мѣжчин.

3. The 2nd Palatalization: к, г, х changing to ц, з, с before и, when originating from I.E. diphthongs oi, ai, e.g.:—

рѹка = hand кнѣга = book
 рѹци Dat., Loc. sing. кнѣзи Dat., Loc. sing.
 вѹк = wolf сирѣмах = a poor man
 вѹци Nom. plur. сирѣмáси Nom. plur.

4. The influence of the ж element, called in Serbo-croatian *jotovanje*.¹ In this language the Comparative adjectives in -ји among other forms afford good examples, e.g.:—

¹In English: votation.

к, г, х + ж change to ч, ж, ш:—

жáк = strong дѣг = dear тѣх = quiet
 жáчи Comp. дѣжи Comp. тѣши Comp.

т, д, + ж change to ѣ, ѣ':—

лѹт = angry вѣдети = to see
 лѹни Comp. вѣден = seen

с, з + ж change to ш, ж:—

пѣсати = to write брѣз = quick
 пѣше = he writes брѣжи Comp.

вѣзати = to bind
 вѣже = he binds

л, н + ж change to љ, љ':—

вѣлети = to like брáнити = to defend
 вѣлен = liked брáвен = defended

N.B.:— р remains unpalatalized:—

обѣрити = to overthrow
 обѣрен = overthrown

п, б, в, м + ж add љ':—

лѹбити = to kiss стáвити = to put
 лѹблен Past Part. Pass. стáвлен Past Part. Pass.
 мáмити = to entice тѣпити = to melt
 мáмлен Past Part. Pass. тѣплен Past Part. Pass.

ц + ж changes to ч:—

бáчити = to throw бáчен Past Part. Pass.

ст, эд + ж change to ш, ж':—

лѣст = leaf свѣтлост = light
 лѣше collective plur. свѣтлѣшу Instr. sing.

грѣзд = a bunch of grapes

грѣже = (coll.) grapes

But in older words ст + ж becomes шт:—

крѣтити = to baptize крѣтен Past Part. Pass.

ск, зг + ж change to шт, жд':—

искати = to demand мѣзак = brain, Gen. sing. мѣзга
 ѣшем = I demand мѣждани = of the brain, adj.

хт + ж becomes шт':—

¹The form of these changes is peculiar to Serbo-croatian.

вѣзѣти = to convey, cf. вѣжа = travelling
(in a vehicle)

~~плела~~ = she was weaving (*<pletla*)

нѣга = him (emphatic), Acc., also Gen.

(Those marked * are exclusively Serbocroatian characteristics.)

2.2. $\hat{y}_\Gamma = \text{debt}$
 $\hat{y}_K = \text{wolf}$

лъ нѣт f. = human flesh, skin
лъ сѣза = tear

C.S. vocalic *r*, *r'*, as well as C.S. *ръ*, *рь*,
all develop into Serbocr. vocalic *p* (*r*): e.g.:—

ръ трѣ = market
ръ пѣст = finger
ръ крѣв = blood
ръ крѣст = cross

Vocalic *r* is also to be found in Macedonian,
Slovenian, Czech and Slovak.

11. Final voiced consonants are normally pro-
nounced voiced, as in Ukrainian, e.g.:—

брѣг, phon. bre:g = hill
грѣд, phon. gra:d = city

See p. 240.

12. Regressive assimilation of consonants (the
Serbocroatian phonetic spelling brings this much more
into prominence in writing than the orthography of
other Sl. languages, in the *pronunciation* of which
this feature is prominent):—

**poveŕsti* is spelt повѣсти = to convey
**svatba* is spelt свѣдба = wedding
**obŕatan* is spelt обрѣпан = exhaustive
cf. Србија = Serbia српскѣ = Serbian

13.* The Infinitive endings -*gti*, -*kti* become
-*hi*:—

мѡхи = to be able
пѣхи = to say

Likewise C.S. *ктъ*, *гтъ* become *h*: нѡh = night,
мѡh = power

14. Contraction of vowels with sometimes the
first one predominating:—

mojera > мѡра = my (Gen. sing. masc.)
neimam > нѣмам = I have not
nehoxu > нѣху = I will not

But more frequently the second vowel predomi-
nates:—

zaječ > зѣч = hare
pojas > пѣс = girdle
ovamo > ѡмо = hither

15.* *a*—the "fill-vowel" in agglomerations of
consonants:—

ѡравъ = fire, O.S. ѡгнѣ
ѡбравъ = good (masc. s.), O.S. ѡбрѣ

16. As in other Sl. languages, palatalized con-
sonants generally require to be followed by front
vowels, e.g.:—

грѡдови = cities

but

цѣлѣви = aims

Serbocroatian in common with O.S., E. Slav,
Slovenian and Slovak, has changed original *k* after
the *chuintantes* ж, ш, ч, into *a*:—

бѣжати = to flee

Cf. Czech *běžeti* = to run, but Slovak *bežat* =
to run.

17.* *h* (phon. *x*) prefixed—this is a character-
istic of *spoken* Socr.

*x*рѣав for рѣав = bad, *x*ѡлав for ѡлав = greedy.

18.* *въ* develops into syllabic *y*, also as a pre-
fix:—

y = in
ѡзѣти = to take
ѡнѣти = to carry in

The original preposition *y* is generally rendered
код (= by, at the house of, etc.) + Gen.

19. Original palatalized *r* becomes hard, as in
Macedonian, Slovak and Byelorussian:—

цѡра = of the king, originally царѣа
мѡре = sea, O.S. морѣ

20. Final *je* becomes *pe* and then *p* (cf. Sloveni-
an -*r* for Relative Pronouns, etc.):—

O.S. *jeje*: *je*p = because

21.* Final (in words and syllables) *ŕ* (ŕ—"dark
ŕ") becomes *o*:—

кѡпио = bought, fem. кѡпила
веѡма = very
бѡо = white, Nom. sing. masc., fem. бѡла
Бѡград = Belgrade

22. * *h* lost in pronunciation and sometimes in spelling, sometimes replaced by *в* or *ј*,—an E. Yugoslav characteristic:—

(х)лѡд = shade	(х)лѡдан = cold
мѡва = fly	(х)лѡб = bread
снаја = daughter-in-law	(х)ѡу = I will, shall, want

23. Initial *ц* where other Sl. languages have *ч* before original vocalic *ѣ*, as also in Macedonian:—

црн = black	Russian: чёрный
црв = worm	Slovenian: črн, Slovak čierny
црв = worm	Czech: červ
црвен = red	Russian: червѡк
	Polish: czerwony
	Bulgarian: червен

MORPHOLOGY

Peculiarities of Serbocroatian Morphology (Summary):

(*Denotes features shared with Slovenian.):—

1. Instr. sing. fem. *і*-declension in -и, as an alternative ending to -ју:—

кѡсти = with a bone

*2. Gen. sing. and Nom. Acc. plur. fem. *a*-declension in -е, Dat. Loc. sing. in -и:—

жѡнѣ = of a woman, etc., but жѡне = women
жѡни = to a woman, etc.

(Cf. also the West Slav languages.)

3. Instr. sing. fem. *a*-declension in -ѡм:—

жѡнѡм

also in Instr. sing. fem. of adjectives, even after soft consonants:—

врѡћѡм (врѡдѡм) = with hot (water)

4. Voc. sing. fem. hard and soft *a*-stems both in -о:—

жѡно = woman!
зѡмљо = o land!

(In masc. nouns Voc. sing. has -е for hard stems and -у for soft stems:—

цѡре = emperor!
кѡжу = horse!)

*5. The Acc. plur. of masc. *o*-stems in -е, always distinguished from their Nom. plur. in -и:—

Nom. pl. прѡзори = windows, Acc. pl. прѡзоре
" " кѡжи = horses

6. Gen. plur. in -ѡ for practically all nouns except fem. *і*-stems:—

нѡрѡдѡ = of nations
сѡлѡ = of villages
жѡнѡ = of women

7. Dat., Instr., and Loc. plur. of declensions of all genders always in -ма, -има for all masc. and neut. *o*-stems (and fem. *і*-stems) and all adjectives, -ама for *a*-stem nouns:—

прѡзорима = windows
сѡлима = villages
ствѡрима = things
лѡпима = beautiful
жѡнама = women

*8. Extended plur. in -ѡви for masc. hard stems, and in -ѡви for masc. soft stems:—

сѡнови = sons
врѡлови = oxen
крѡљеви = kings

9. Collective plural ending -ѡд (*і*-stem singular declension) used for neuter nouns in -е, denoting human and animal young:—

ѡнуѡд = grandchildren
пѡлѡд = chickens

10. Survival of the declension of the Indefinite Adjectives (See pp. 269-270 and 272.)

*11. Generalization of the forms with *n* prefixed for the emphatic (non-enclitic) 3rd person Personal Pronoun (not necessarily with a preposition):—

нѡра Gen. sing. = of him
нѡх Gen. plur. = of them

12. Metathesis of consonants in the word for "all" and cognates:—

Sing. сѣв, свѣ, свѣ, Plur. свѣ = all;
свѣкѣ = every

*13. Gen. sing. masc. and neut. of Definite Adjectives and pronouns in -a, viz. -ora (Slovenian -ega):—

дрѣвора = dear

14. The possibility of dropping (under certain conditions) the final vowel of adjectives and adjectival pronouns in the Gen., Dat.-Loc. and Instr. sing. masc. and neut. (Definite form for all adjectives), and in the Dat., Instr. and Loc. plur. of all genders (Definite and Indefinite forms for adjs.) (See pp. 264-268, 272-273), e.g.:—

Gen. s. m., n.	дрѣвора(a) = dear
" " "	мѣр(a), мѣр(a) = my
Dat., Loc. s. m., n.	дрѣвом(e) or (-y) = dear
" " "	мѣм(y) or мѣм(e) or (-y) = my
Instr. s. m., n.	тѣм or тѣм = that
Dat., Instr., Loc. pl.	тѣма or тѣм = that
" " "	дрѣгом(a) = dear
" " "	мѣжм(a) = my

*15. 1st pers. sing. Pres. Ind. for all verbs but two in -м (cf. also Slovak and Macedonian):—

пѣшем = I write

*16. Loss of final *t* in 3rd p. sing. Pres. (in common with all S. and W. Slav languages, as well as partly in Ukrainian for *e*-verbs):—

судѣ = he judges

*17. 1st pers. plur. Pres., Aor. and Imperf., as well as Imperative in -мо (cf. Ukrainian):—

благословимо = we bless

*18. 3rd pers. plur. Pres. also without final *t*, as in W. Slav and Slovenian:—

судѣ = they judge
иду = they go

19. Future tense compounded with (xò)hу, (xò)hеш, (xò)he; (cf. Bulg. ще, Mac. ќе):—

пѣшау = I shall write

20. Survival of Aorist and Imperfect tenses, as in Bulgarian, Macedonian and Lusatian.

*21. Loss of declinable Pres. and *Past Active¹ and *Pres. Passive² participles.

22. Frequent replacement of Possessive Adjectives by Dat. of corresponding enclitic Pers. Pronoun (so also in Bulgarian and Macedonian):—

брату му = his father
пѣка ми = my hand

THE DECLENSIONS IN SERBOCROATIAN

Nouns

As in Russian, owing to the disappearance of the *ŷ*- and *ŷ*-stems, four main types of noun declensions remain:—

i-stems—all feminine.
consonant stems—neuter, except for two.
(This group, however, in Serbocroatian has taken over the *endings* of the *o*-stems).
a-stems—mostly feminine.
o-stems—masc. and neuter.

The three genders are preserved and all the seven cases of O.S. including the Vocative, which has a form distinct from the Nominative for masc. and fem. nouns in the singular. In the plural, however, the Dat., Instr., and Loc. are identical for each declension. The Dual number, preserved as a grammatical category only in Slovenian and Lusatian of all the modern Slavonic languages, survives in Sbc. only in isolated examples:—

ѡчи = eyes
ѡши = ears, etc.

1. *i*-stems, feminine.

(The masc. *i*-stems have been lost except for the isolated example of пѣтем = along the road, by means of, special Instr. sing. of пѣт = road, otherwise declined as an *o*-stem.)

ствѣп = thing

Sing.

Plur.

Nom. ствѣп
Gen. ствѣпи

ствѣпи
ствѣпи

¹Surviving in Russian, Byelorussian, Czech and Slovak.
²Surviving only in Russian.

Dat.	ствѣри	ствѣри
Acc.	ствѣр	ствѣри
Instr. ¹	ствѣри or -ју	ствѣри
Loc.	ствѣри	ствѣри
Voc.	ствѣри	ствѣри

It will be noted that the Dat., Instr., and Loc. plur. have taken over the old Dat. and Instr. Dual ending, generalizing it for the plural of all nouns. The form of the Instr. sing. in -*ju* is preferred when the noun is used by itself, without any qualifying word to indicate the case.

Notice:—

мисао (f.) = thought, Gen. s. мисли, but
смисао (m.) = sense, Gen. s. смисла (Declension No. 4a)

Notice the alternative Genitive plurals of:

кѡкѡш = hen, Gen. pl. кѡкѡшију
кѡст = bone, Gen. pl. кѡстију
уш (or вѡш) = louse, Gen. pl. ушију

2. Consonant stems in *n* and *t*, neuter, as in Russian. (*o*-stem endings!)

плѣме = tribe

	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Nom., Voc.	плѣмѣ	плѣмена
Gen.	плѣмене	плѣмена
Dat.	плѣмену	плѣменима
Acc.	плѣме	плѣмена
Instr.	плѣменом	плѣменима
Loc.	плѣмену	плѣменима

¹Fem. nouns in -ост have the alternative Instr. sing. form ending in -ишу owing to the coalescence of the *j* with the -ст, viz. свѣтлоишу = with light, кѡишу = with a bone. Similarly, with yotation:—

глад	= hunger, Instr. s. глађу
крв	= blood, " " крвљу
сѡ	= salt, Gen. s. сѡли, Instr. s. сѡљу
зѣлѣн	= herbs, Instr. s. зѣлѣну
любав	= love, " " лубављу

and with *j* dropped after palatals:—

ноћ	= night, Instr. s. нѡћу
жеђ	= thirst, " " жеђу
обитељ	= family, " " обитељу

Likewise:—

дѣте (= button), Gen. sing. дѣтмета; дѣте (= child), Gen. s. дѣтера, Plur. (irreg.) дѣца f. sing. *a*-stem. нѣбо (= sky) (now an *o*-stem) has an *s*-stem plur.: нѣбеса. Also чѣдо = a wonder, pl. чудеса; тѣло = body, pl. телѣса or тѣла.

Most nouns in -e denoting young animals have a feminine collective plural in -ад:—

тѣле = calf, Gen. sing. тѣлера, Plur. N.V.A. тѣлад, G.D.I.L. тѣлади, D.I.L. also тѣладма, but also N.V.A. plur. тѣлићи or тѣоци.

вѣчѣ = evening, is an irregular *r* consonant stem, usually neut. in the sing., declined like плѣме—Gen. s. вѣчера. But sometimes in the sing. and *always* in the plur. it is feminine and declined like стѣп; Gen. s. and Nom. pl. вѣчери. Only in the greeting can one say: добѣр вѣчѣ (p) (masc.) as well as добро вѣчѣ (neut.) = good evening!

дрѣво = tree, Gen. s. дрѣвера, has plur. Nom. дрѣвѣта, Gen. дрѣвѣтѣ, or collective дрѣвѣне which is a neut. sing. *o*-stem; while дрѣва = wood (as material). jaje = egg, Gen. s. jajera, etc. in sing., but plur. N.V.A. jajja, Gen. jajja, D.I.L. jajjima.

N.B.—Nom., Voc., and Acc. for all neuter nouns are identical in each number.

The only two surviving fem. consonant stems (*r*-stems) can be regarded as irregular, and are declined as follows:—

	<i>Matr</i> = mother ¹	<i>Kh</i> = daughter
	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>
Nom.	мѣти	кѡи
Gen.	мѣтере	кѡери
Dat.	мѣтери	кѡери
Acc.	мѣтер	кѡери
Instr.	мѣтерѡм	кѡери, кѡерју
Loc.	мѣтери	кѡери
Voc.	мѣти	кѡери

3. *a*-stems, mostly feminine, a few masc. It will be noticed that in Serbo-cr. as opposed to E. and W. Slav, the endings of the old -*ja* declension (soft *a*-stems) have predominated and become generalized, except in the Instr. and Voc. sing.

¹More commonly: mājka (*a*-stem)

SERBOCROATIAN

жена = woman

Nom.	жѐна	жѐне
Gen.	жѐнѣ	жѐнѣ
Dat.	жѐни	жѐнама
Acc.	жѐну	жѐне
Instr.	жѐном	жѐнама
Loc.	жѐни	жѐнама
Voc.	жѐно	жѐне

Polysyllabic nouns in -ица have Voc. sing. in -це:—

гѣспѣице = Miss! мѣлице! (girl's name), but
disyllabic nouns and also disparaging appellations
have -цо: птѣцо! = bird! пѣјаницо! = drunkard!
кѣкавицо! = coward!

Of proper names other than those in -waa only those of two syllables with 'accent have Voc. sing. in-o:—

Jélo! but Rădōjka! (girls' names) Илија! (man's name)

Masc. nouns in *-a* have either *-o* or *-a*, except
 слѣдѣ:—

владыка! or владыко! = bishop!
but only слуго! = servant!

Nouns in *-a* denoting relations have Voc. sing. in *-a* more usually, and for certain nouns—exclusively:—
мắма! or **-o** = mummy! but **тѣ́тка!**(only) = aunt!

Nouns with stems ending in groups of consonants other than *cr*, *mr*, *sr*, *xr*, *wh*, *xb* have a Gen. plur. either in *-ā*, in which case the elements of the group are usually separated by a second long *ā*, e.g.:—

děvojka (= girl), Gen. plur. děvojākā
or else they can have a Gen. plur. in -ī on the analogy of the *i*-stems, e.g.:—

бръсква = peach, Gen. pl. бръски or бръсѧка
 бърбѧй = of struggles (or бърба)
 мѧлбѧй = of petitions (or мѧлба)

pýka = hand, hòga = leg, have irregular Gen.

plur. (from old Dual forms): pûkŭ, nõrŭ. Similarly:
slŭga = servant, G. pl. slŭgŭ or slŭgā.

All common nouns with *a*-stems ending in a velar not preceded by another consonant, change this velar according to the 2nd Palatalization before the final -*n* of the Dat., Loc. sing., e.g.:—

кыӡга	(= book),	Dat.	and Loc.	sing.	кыӡэи
mājka	(= mother),	"	"	"	mājci
péka	(= river),	"	"	"	péci

But *к* and *г* are retained before *и* after *ч*, *н*, *т*, *ц*, *с*, *з* and in all proper and affectionate names: hence, *тѣтки* = to an aunt, *сѣки* = to little sister, *дѣбри* (name); *тѣчки* (= dot), *вѣчки* (= fruit tree), *коцки* (= dice); *дѣски* (= plank), *мѣзги* (= mule).

N. B.—Masc. nouns in *-a* are feminine in gender in the plural.

the plural.

4a. *o*-stems, masculine. Here the hard *o*-stem endings predominate, except in the Acc. plur. Nouns ending in the palatalized or formerly palatalized consonants ж, б, ж, й, б, в, г, д, and н retain the soft (*j*o) endings in the Voc. and Instr. sing.

Proper nouns and names ending in -o and -e in the Nom. and Voc., such as Мѣрко, Мѣроже, ѡтро, рѣдо, also follow these models. But in western regions affectionate names and nouns, such as Ёро, Яво, пѣро (= pal) are declined like *a*-stems.

HARD STEMS

прѣзоръ = window

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Nom.	прѣзор	прѣзори	кѣъ
Gen.	прѣзора	прѣзора	кѣѡѣ
Dat.	прѣзору	прѣзорѣма	кѣѡѣма
Acc.	прѣзор	прѣзоре	кѣѡѣ
Instr.	прѣзором	прѣзорѣма	кѣѡѣма ¹
Loc.	прѣзору	прѣзорѣма	кѣѡѣ
Voc.	прѣзоре		кѣѡѣма

Many monosyllables and some other nouns insert the syllable -ob (-eb after soft consonants) before the endings of all the cases of the plural:—

сѣчѣнѣ = sons. Gen. pl. сѣчѣнѣ, Dat. Inst.

Т.ОС. СИНОВИМА

ножѢи = knives

Velar stems not inserting this syllable change their final consonant according to the 2nd Palatalization before *u*, e.g.:—

во́їнк = soldier, Nom. pl. во́їни, Voc. pl. во́їничи! Dat. pl. во́їнича.

¹ Some nouns with e in the root syllable and stem ending in a palatal consonant nevertheless have Instr. sing. in -OM by a kind of vowel dissimilation, e.g. ХМЕЛОМ (=with hops), ПАДЕХОМ (= by a grammatical case).

цврѣчак = a cricket; N. pl. цврѣчи
 брах = walnut, N. pl. браси
 ковчег = coffer, N. pl. ковчежи

In the Voc. sing. their final consonant changes according to the 1st Palatalization or they have the ending -y:—

војниче! but цврѣчку!

(See also "Slavonic Characteristics," No. 2a.)

Nouns ending in -ин, denoting people belonging to a nation, place or profession, drop the syllable -ин in the formation of the plural (in *all* cases):—

Срѣбин = Serb Nom. pl. Срѣби
 Турчин = Turk Nom. pl. Турци
 Београђанин = Belgrader Nom. pl. Београђани
 чобанин = shepherd Nom. pl. чобани

Peculiar to Sbcrl. are the masculine nouns ending in -о, in which the lost final *l* reappears in the oblique cases:—

вѣ (= ox), Gen. sing. вѣла.

The characteristic *a* movable vowel appears in many masc. nouns in the Nom. sing. and Gen. plur. only:—

пѣсао = business, Gen. s. пѣсла, Nom. pl.
 пѣслови or пѣсли, Gen. pl. пѣсловѣ, пѣсѣла
 or пѣсѣла
 лѣнац = chain, Nom. plur. лѣнци, Gen. plur.
 лѣнѣца
 мѣменат or мѣмент = moment, Gen. plur. мѣмѣнтѣ
 слѣшалац = listener, G.s. слѣшаоца, N.pl. слѣ-
 шаоци, G. pl. слѣшалаца

When the movable vowel *a* is dropped in declension before *ц* or *ч*, a final *т* or *д* in the stem disappears before them:—

ѣтац = father, Gen. s. ѣца, Voc. s. ѣче,
 Nom. pl. ѣчеви or ѣчеви
 жѣлуцац = stomach, Gen. s. жѣлуца
 задѣтак = task, Gen. s. задѣтка
 Pl. Nom. задѣци, Gen. задѣтѣка, Dat. Instr.
 Loc. задѣцима

But notice with *long ā* retained in declension, e.g. јунак = hero, Gen. s. јунака.

чѣвек = man, Gen. чѣвѣка, Voc. чѣвече, has a special plural:—

Nom. Voc. људи, Gen. људи, Acc. људе,
 Dat. Instr. Loc. људима

1. Other masc. nouns with a Gen. pl. in -й are:

хвѣт = fathom, G. pl. хвѣтй or хвѣтѣвѣ
 мрѣв = ant, G. pl. мрѣвй or -ѣ
 црѣв = worm, G. pl. црѣвй or -ѣ
 мѣсѣц = month, G. pl. мѣсѣцй or -ѣ
 сѣт = hour, G. pl. сѣтй or сѣтѣвѣ
 пѣр = pair, G. pl. пѣрй

2. Notice the alternative forms of Gen. pl. in -й and in -ију (from the old Dual) for рѣст = guest, G. pl. рѣстй or рѣстију; нѣкат = nail, G. pl. нѣкатѣ or нѣктију; пѣст = finger, G. pl. пѣстй or пѣстију or пѣстѣ.

брѣт = brother, and гѣспѣдин = gentleman, Mr., have special fem. sing. collective plurals:—

Nom. брѣћа Gen. брѣће, etc.
 " гѣспѣда " гѣспѣде, etc., Voc. гѣспѣдо!

цвѣт = flower, has a neuter (sing.) collective plural:—

Nom. цвѣће, Gen. цвѣћа, etc.

дѣн = day, is regular in Serbo-croatian: Gen. s. дѣна, Nom. pl. дѣни, Gen. pl. дѣнѣ.

4b. *o*-stems, neuter. Here the soft stems differ from the hard stems only in the Nom.=Acc.=Voc. sing. and Instr. sing.

HARD STEMS		SOFT STEMS	
сѣло = village		пѣље = field	
Nom. Voc.	Sing. сѣла	Sing. пѣље	Plur. сѣла
Gen.	сѣла	сѣла	пѣља
Dat.	сѣлу	сѣлима	пѣљу
Acc.	сѣло	сѣле	пѣља
Instr.	сѣлом	сѣлима	пѣљима
Loc.	сѣлу	сѣлима	пѣљима

A few relics of the old Dual survive, e.g.:—

The *plurale tantum*:—пѣси or пѣса = breast
 Gen. пѣсий
 or пѣсију
 Dat. Instr. Loc. пѣсима

ѡко (= eye) neuter sing. Likewise: ѡхо (ѡво)
 = ear, neut. sing.
 ѡчи *fem.* plur. Nom., Acc., Voc. ѡши
 ѡчијѹ or ѡчи plur. Gen. ѡшијѹ or ѡшй
 ѡчима plur. Dat., Inst., Loc. ѡшима
 but plur.: ѡка = holes (of a
 net) The form ѡмеса
 is contemptuous.
 плѣни (= shoulders)—has Gen. plur. плѣнѧ or
 плѣнй.

The movable vowel a can also occur in the neut.
 Gen. plurals:—

јѹтро = morning, acre Gen. pl. јѹтрѧрѧ
 вѣсло = oar Gen. pl. вѣсѧла

Velar stems undergo the 2nd Palatalization before
 the ending -има of the D., I., L. pl., e.g. клѹпо
 = ball (of wool), клѹпима; пѧзухо = armpit, пѧзусима.

Note the indeclinable neuter nouns: лѡба = period
 of time; пѡдне = midday.

The Numerals

Cardinal: 1 is declined and treated as a Definite
 adjective, agreeing with the noun it defines in gen-
 der, number (*sic*) and case. 2, 3, and 4 govern what
 looks like the Gen. sing. (originally the Dual) and
 the qualifying adjective is in the Gen. sing. of the
indefinite declension.¹ 5 onwards govern the Gen.
 plur., and usually take the verb in the (neuter) sin-
 gular, e.g. in the Past tense. Only 1-4, 100, 1,000,
 and 1,000,000 decline. After prepositions, declension
 is generally avoided. Compounds of 1-4, e.g. 21, 22,
 etc., govern the case of the final figure.

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
1	Nom. јѣдан Gen. јѣдног(а) Dat.Loc. јѣдном(е)	јѣдно	јѣдна јѣдне јѣдној, etc.
(See "The Adjectives" below.)			
2	Nom.Acc. двѧ Gen. двѧ Dat.Inst.Loc. двѧма or двѧма	двѧ	двѧ двѧјѹ двѧма or двѧма

¹After prepositions this numeral is usually left undeclined.
 ѡба, ѡбе = both, is declined like двѧ, but Dat., Inst.,
 Loc. is ѡбѣма for *all* genders.

The corresponding verb is in the plur., but the Past
 Partic. Act. ends in -a for masc. and neut.nouns and -e for fem.

Nom.	Acc.	<i>All Genders.</i>	Gen.	<i>All Genders.</i>	Dat.	<i>Inst. Loc. All Genders.</i>
3	три					трима
4	чѣтири			*тријѹ		чѣтирма
5	пѣт			*чѣтиријѹ		
6	шѣст					
7	сѣдам					
8	ѡсам					
9	дѣвѣт					
10	дѣсѣт					
11	јѣдѧнаест					
12	двѧнаест					
13	тринаест					
14	чѣтрнаест					
15	пѣтнаест					
16	шѣснаест					
17	сѣдѧмнаест					
18	осѧмнаест					
19	дѣвѣтнаест					
20	двѧдесѣт					
21	двѧдесѣт (и)	јѣдан				
30	тридесѣт					
40	чѣтрдесѣт					
50	пѣдесѣт					
60	шѣздесѣт					
70	сѣдамдѣсѣт					
80	осамдѣсѣт					
90	дѣведесѣт					
100	стѡ or стѡтина					
101	стѡ (и) јѣдан					
200	двѣста or двѣ стѡтине					
300	триста or три стѡтине					
400	чѣтиристѡ or чѣтири стѡтине					
500	пѣгстѡ or пѣт стѡтѧнѧ					
600	шѣстстѡ or шѣст стѡтѧнѧ					
700	сѣдамстѡ or сѣдам стѡтѧнѧ					
800	ѡсамстѡ or ѡсам стѡтѧнѧ					
900	дѣветстѡ or дѣвѣт стѡтѧнѧ					
1,000	хйљада or тйсућа					
2,000	двѣ хйљале					
5,000	пѣт хйљадѧ					
1,000,000	милйјѹн, Gen. Sing. милијѹна or милйон, Gen. Sing. миллиѡна					

*After prepositions these numerals are generally left
 undeclined:

са три пријатеља = with three friends

The Ordinal Numerals—

1st	први	= first
2nd	други	= second
3rd	трећи	= third
4th	четврти	= fourth
5th	пети	
6th	шести	
7th	седми	
8th	осми	
9th	девети	
10th	десети, etc., obtained by adding -и to the Cardinals.	
100th	стот	= 100th
1,000th	хиљадић	or тисућ
1,000,000th	милијунт	or милионт

are declined like Definite Adjectives (see below, "The Adjectives"). Only трећи is a soft stem. The rest follow the hard stem declension. In compound Ordinals only the last figure is made ordinal, e.g.:—

сто први = 101st

There are also three sets of *Collective Numerals*:

1. Plur. Collective (adjectival) Numerals, varying in gender, used with nouns used in the plur. only or implying pairs (verb in plur.):—

двоје чарапе	= 2 pairs of stockings
трoje новине	= 3 newspapers
четвора or четвора кола	= 4 cars
двоји волови	= 2 pairs of oxen

2. Neuter sing. Collectives used for living things of mixed gender (sometimes absolutely).¹ These can also be used with nouns which have fem. sing. collective plurals instead of normal ones. (The verb can be either masc. plur. or neut. sing.):—

Било је у врту двоје деце, трoje пјлади и четворо одраслих = There were in the garden two children, three chickens, and four adults.

3. Substantival fem. Collectives indicating a number of men (only, and not always specifying at that point who they are), with the ending -ица. The

¹These are (occasionally) declined: Nom.Acc.Voc. двоје, Gen. двога or двојера, Dat.Inst.Loc. двома, Dat.Loc. also двоме or двојему; Nom.Acc.Voc. четворо, Gen. четворга, Dat.Inst.Loc. четворма, Dat.Loc. also четворбме; or with четвер- throughout.

verb is in the plural, though the participle may be in the fem. sing.:—

Трдојица су дошли or дошла = Three men have come.

The noun or pronoun after this kind of numeral, if expressed, goes in the Gen. pl. when the numeral is in the Nom., Voc., or Acc.: нас двојица = we two. Otherwise it agrees in case with the numeral: њима двојици = to them two.

Distributive Numerals are expressed by the preposition по + Acc.: e.g.:—

Вј узмите сваки по три главе кјупуса
= Each of you take three cabbages (lit. heads of cabbage) each

The Pronominal Declension

Besides the Personal Pronouns

ја = I он = he
ти = thou ми = we, etc.

this category includes the Demonstratives

овај = this тај = that

the Interrogatives

ко = who што, шта = what

the Indefinite Pronouns such as

неко = someone
који ... год¹ = whoever, whichever
ма који = any
који било = any you like
њко = anyone (used after без = without, него = than, ниш = not even)

the Negative pronouns such as

њко = no one ништа = nothing

the Possessive Pronoun-Adjectives such as

мој = my, mine наш = our(s)

the Relatives such as

који = which што = that

¹The two words can be separated by enclitics, if these occur.

and the Definitives, e.g.

сав = all сав = -self њстї = the same

From the tables below it will be seen that except for the Personal Pronouns of the 1st and 2nd person, all these Pronouns follow roughly the same lines in declension, with the familiar variation of hard and soft endings, e.g. Gen. sing. masc. -ora hard, -era soft, Loc. s. masc., neut. -om(e) hard, -em(e) soft. Note that the endings are often short in contrast to those of the definite adjectives (see below p.273).

SING.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	tāj	tō	tā
Gen.	tōg(a)		tē
Dat.	tōm(e) or (-y)		tōj
Acc.	* tō	tū	
Instr.	tīm, tīme	tōm	
Loc.	tōm(e) or (-y)	tōj	
PLUR.			
Nom.	tī	tā	tē
Gen.	tīx		
Dat.	tīma,	tīm	
Acc.	tē	tā	tē
Instr.	tīma,	tīm	
Loc.	tīma,	tīm	

Soft: њн = he, њна = she, њно = it

SING.	њн	њно	њна
Nom.	њга, ¹	га	ње, је
Gen.	њму, ¹	му	њј, јој
Dat.	њга, ¹	га, ²	њу, је, ју ³
Acc.	њм, ⁴	њме	њом, ⁴ њоме
Instr.	њму, ¹		њј
Loc.			

*Acc. sing. masc. = Nom. sing. masc. for inanimates,
= Gen. sing. masc. for animates.

¹These forms can also have the short falling tone: њњга, њњму.

²Used only after prepositions: На њ = on to him.

³Acc. sing. fem. ју is used when је as auxiliary verb occurs in the same sentence, or after a word ending in -је.

⁴The short form is used after prepositions.

PLUR.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	њни	њна	њне
Gen.	њих, их		
Dat.	њм(a), им		
Acc.	њих, их		
Instr.	њм(a)		
Loc.	њм(a)		

According to the hard model are declined:—

the Demonstratives, њвāj = this
њнāj, њнā, њнō = that

the Interrogatives: књ = who? (see below)
какав*, -ква = what kind of?

the Indefinite Pronouns:

нњко = someone, Gen. нњкога
нњкї = some
нњкакав* = some kind of

the Definitives:

јњдан = one, јњднога
сам = -self, самога
њстї = the same, њстњга
такав*, -ква = such
овāкав*, -ква = like this
онāкав*, -ква = like that
толїкї = so great

the Possessives:

њњгов* = his
њњин* or њњн* = her(s)
њњхов* or њњн* = their(s)

*These pronouns can also be declined like indefinite adjectives (see below, p. 272), especially in the western literary tradition centred on Zagreb. To them should be added сам, fem. сама, neut. само, in the sense of 'alone', and the forms тњлик = so great, овњлик, онњлик. See the declension of њњгов below.

According to the soft model are declined:—

the Interrogative: штā or штњ (Nom. and Acc.)
with the stem ч- in the other cases (see below)

the Possessives: мњј (= my), Gen. s. masc.

neut. мњјњга generally contracted to мњга, Dat. Loc.
s. m. and n. мњме (see below)

твњј = thine, your нāм = our (see below)
свњј = my, your or њāм = your
his own

the Possessive Relative and Interrogative:

чјиј = whose, Gen. s. m., n. чјијера

the Relative and Interrogative:

кѡји = who, which, кѡјера (see below)

and the Definitive: сав = all, which was originally soft in the Nom. sing. masc., Gen. s. m. n. свѣра, Gen. pl. свѣх or свѣју (see below).

As in the declension of тѣј above, the Accusative sing. masc. for all the declensions below except што is the same as the Nom. sing. masc. for inanimate nouns and the same as the Gen. sing. masc. for animate nouns. Note the important differences of vowel length in the endings.

мѡј = my, mine

SING.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	мѡј	мѡје	мѡја
Gen.	мѡјег(а), мѡг(а)		мѡјѣ
Dat.	мѡјем(у), мѡм(у,-е)		мѡјѡј
Acc.	= Nom. or Gen.	мѡје	мѡју
Instr.	мѡјим		мѡјѡм
Loc.	мѡјем(у), мѡм(у,-е)		мѡјѡј
PLUR.			
Nom.	мѡји	мѡја	мѡје
Gen.		мѡјих	
Dat.		мѡјима, мѡјим	
Acc.	мѡје	мѡја	мѡје
Instr.		мѡјима, мѡјим	
Loc.		мѡјима, мѡјим	

Like мѡј: тѡј = your(s) (fam.), свѡј = own (referring to subject of sentence).

наш = our(s)

SING.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	наш	наше	наша
Gen.	нашег(а)		наше
Dat.	нашем(у)		нашој
Acc.	= Nom. or Gen.	наше	нашу
Instr.	нашим		нашѡм
Loc.	нашем(у)		нашој

PLUR.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	наши	наша	наше
Gen.		наших	
Dat.		нашима, нашим	
Acc.	наше	наша	наше
Instr.		нашима, нашим	
Loc.		нашима, нашим	

Like наш: ваш = your(s), (polite sing. and familiar and polite plur.). The fuller forms with the final vowel of the Gen., Dat., Instr., and Loc. sing. and the Dat., Instr., and Loc. plur. of all pronouns such as тѣј, мѡј, наш and кѡји are used when the pronoun occurs by itself or follows the noun it qualifies: Рѣкао сам твојима = I told your people. Поштуј ѡца свога = Honour your father! Говѡрио сам о томе = I have spoken about that.

сав = all

SING.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	сав	свѣ	свѣ
Gen.		свѣга	свѣ
Dat.		свѣму	свѡј
Acc.	= Nom. or Gen.	свѣ	свју
Instr.		свѣм(е)	свѡм
Loc.		свѣм, свѣму	свѡј
PLUR.			
Nom.	свѣ	свѣ	свѣ
Gen.		свѣх, свѣју	
Dat.		свѣм, свѣма	
Acc.	свѣ	свѣ	свѣ
Instr.		свѣм, свѣма	
Loc.		свѣм, свѣма	

кѡји = which (relative and interrogative)

SING.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	кѡји	кѡје	кѡја
Gen.		кѡјѣга, кѡга	кѡје
Dat.		кѡјѣму, кѡму	кѡјѡј
Acc.	= Nom. or Gen.	кѡје	кѡју
Instr.		кѡјим, кѡм	кѡјѡм
Loc.		кѡјѣму, кѡме	кѡјѡј

PLUR.	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	кòјј	кòјā	кòјē
Gen.		кòјјх	
Dat.		кòјјм(а)	
Acc.	кòјē	кòјā	кòјē
Instr.		кòјјм(а)	
Loc.		кòјјм(а)	

Like кòјј: чòјј = whose (relative and interrogative)

	кò, ткò = who? (animate)	штò, штā = what? (inanimate)
Nom.	кò, ткò	штò, штā
Gen.	кòга (кòг)	чèга (чèг), штā
Dat.	кòме, кòму, кòм	чèму
Acc.	кòга (кòг)	штò, штā
Instr.	кòм, кòме	чòм, чòме
Loc.	кòме, кòм	чèму, чèм

According to these models are declined all compounds of these pronouns: e.g. нòко = no one, нèшто = something. Prepositions come between the prefix and the pronoun; e.g. ни зā што = for nothing, to no purpose, no good.

It is important to distinguish кòга? = (of) whom?, from кòга? = (of) which...?, кòму? = to whom?, from кòму? = to which...?, о кòме? = about whom?, from о кòме? = about which...?.

	кòгов = his	
SING.	Masc.	Neut.
Nom.	кòгов	кòгово
Gen.	кòгова ¹	кòгове
Dat.	кòгову ¹	кòговој
Acc.	=Nom. or Gen.	кòгово
Instr.	кòговим	кòгову
Loc.	кòгову ¹	кòговом
PLUR.		кòговој
Nom.	кòгови	кòгова
Gen.		кòгових
Dat.		кòговим(а)
Acc.	кòгове	кòгова
Instr.		кòговим(а)
Loc.		кòговим(а)

¹But see "The Adjectives," p. 270, fourth paragraph.

Like кòгов can be declined кòзин, кòн = her(s), кòхов, кòн = their(s), сām, fem. сāма, neut. сāмо = alone, the group of pronouns in -ав such as тāкав = such, and in -ик (western form), such as тòлик = so big.

Personal Pronouns

The Personal Pronouns of the 1st and 2nd person have special declensions of their own:—

јā = I мй = we тй = you (fam.) вй = you(pl. and polite)

	јā	мй	тй	вй
Nom.	јā	мй	тй	вй
Gen.	мène, ¹ ме	нāс, нас	те	вāс, вас
Dat.	мèни, ¹ ми	нāма, нам	ти	вāма, вам
Acc.	мène, ¹ ме	нāс, нас	те	вāс, вас
Instr.	мнòм, ² мнòме	нāма	тòбòм	вāма
Loc.	мèни ¹	нāма	тèби ¹	вāма

сèбе (acc.—no Nom.!) is declined like (тй) тèбе, and means "self", for all persons sing. and plur. when referring to the subject of the sentence. In literary Serbocroatian there is no Dat. enclitic form *си, only Acc. се.

The shorter, enclitic forms of the Pers. Pronouns for all three persons are retained in full use in Serbocroatian, in contrast to Russian. They are used where there is no emphasis on the pronoun in the sentence. (See section on "Word Order with Enclitics"). The Accusatives ме, те, се can be used after prepositions which then take the accent, e.g. нā ме = on to me, зā се = for oneself, by itself.

The Adjectives

In Serbocroatian the category of the Indefinite Adjectives has survived (cf. pp. 47-48 and 56-57 in the chapter on Old Slavonic) beside that of the compound Definite Adjectives. The latter, especially in the

¹In the disyllabic forms the accent (tone) can also be

²The form мнòм is used after prepositions: сā мнòм = with me.

masc. and neut. singular, are more similar in their declension to the "long form" adjectives in other Slavonic languages, such as Russian, Czech, and Polish: cf. Socr. Nom. s. m. бѣли = the white..., Gen. бѣлѡра, Russ. бѣлый, бѣлѡро, Cz. bílý, bílého, Pol. biały, białego.

The Indefinite Adjectives are characterized by *o-* and *a-* stem substantival endings with *short* vowels in the Nom. (except in the masc. sing.) and Acc. of both numbers and all three genders, e.g. sing. f. Nom. бѣла = a white..., Acc. бѣлу, neut. Nom., Acc. бѣло, plur. m. Nom. бѣли, Acc. бѣле, f. N. A. бѣле, n. N. A. бѣла, and by distinctively substantival endings in the masc. and neut. s. Gen. бѣла, and Dat. and Loc. бѣлу.

The masculine Nom. sing. Indefinite Adj. ends in a consonant or *-o* (from a final *-l*): e.g. врѹх = hot, jāk = strong, млѧд = young, бѣо = white, зѧо = bad, wicked (fem. злѧ), дѣбео = fat (fem. дѣбела). movable *-a-* can appear before a final consonant or *-o*: e.g. дѣбар = good, fem. дѣбра, хлѧдан = cold, fem. хлѧдна, тѣпао = warm, fem. тѣпла.

All Possessive adjectives such as Пѣрѣв = Peter's, прѣјатељ = (my, etc.) friend's, мѧјчин = mother's, originally followed the Indefinite declension and, particularly in the modern western tradition, still often do so. But colloquially, both in eastern and western Yugoslavia, the Indefinite endings are often replaced by the Definite endings, just as they are replaced in the third person Possessive Pronouns, so one hears, and also sees in writing, Пѣтровѣр Gen. s. masc., like хѣровѣр, etc.

There is no separate Vocative sing. form distinct from the Nominative for Indefinite Adjectives.

Many adjectives also distinguish the Indefinite form from the Definite by a difference of accent (tone)—rising (except in the Nom. s. masc.) in the Indefinite, and falling in the corresponding Definite, e.g. Nom. s. fem. Indef. млѧда, Def. млѧдѧ = young; and also in trisyllabic words, by the *position* of the accent (tone)—on the *second* syllable for the Indefinite form (except in the Nom. s. masc.) and on the *first* syllable for the Definite form, e.g. Nom. s. fem. Indef. црвѣна, Def. црвенѧ = red (see the declensions below).

When both forms have the same tone, as in лѣм (Nom. s. masc. Indef.) = bad, Def. лѣми, the other forms, for the Nom. and Acc. s. fem. and neut. and the Nom. and Acc. plur. for all genders, are distinguished only by the length of the vowel ending, the Indefi-

nite forms having *short* vowels and the Definite forms all having *long* vowels.

The Definite Adjectives are characterized by a long vowel in their endings in *all* cases, on the *first* syllable in the characteristic disyllabic endings of the Gen. and Dat., Loc. sing. masc. and neut.: e.g. Nom. s. дѣбрѣ м., дѣбрѧ ф., дѣбрѣ н. = the good..., Gen. s. м., n. дѣбрѣра, Dat., Loc. s. м., n. дѣбрѣм (-e or -y). These endings, as in other Slavonic languages, show clearly the compound nature of this declension: дѣбрѣра from добра + јеро, дѣбрѣму from добру + јему, etc. Hence its similarity to the pronominal declension.

Soft stems are distinguished from hard stems by having *-e-* for *-o-* in the Nom., Acc. sing. neut. and the Def. Gen., Dat. and Loc. sing. masc. and neut., e.g. Nom., Acc. s. n. Indef. врѹхе = hot, cf. Def. врѹхѣ, and in the *Definite* Gen. s. m. and n. врѹхѣра, and Dat., Loc. s. m. and n. врѹхѣм (-e or -y). Note that *-o-* is retained for soft stems in the fem. sing. endings -ѣј (Dat., Loc. s. Indef.), e.g. врѹхѣј, and -ѣм (Instr. s. Def.), e.g. врѹхѣм.

In the Gen., Dat., Instr. and Loc. sing. fem. and for all genders in the plural of these cases, the *endings*, though not necessarily the accents (tones), of both types of declension are identical.

Adjectives used as predicates are invariably put in the Nominative of the Indefinite form, if such exists: e.g. Ѧн је дѣбар = he is good, Ѧна је дѣбра = she is good, but тај (e.g. Ѣзвештај) је данашњи = that (report) is today's.

Only Definite adjectives are used:—

(a) after demonstrative and possessive pronouns,

e.g.:

мѣј старѣ прѣјатељ = my old friend,
тај лаќѣ задѧтак = that easy task,

(b) in names: e.g. Нѣви Сѧд = (Novi Sad), Ѣван
Прѣзњи = Ivan the Dread.

(c) with Vocatives: e.g. прѣјѣ оче! = dear
father!

Adjectives in -ни, -ски, -шки, -чки, and -ји and all adjectives of time and place, including those in -њи and -шњи, and also мѧлѣ = small, and поќѣјѣ = the late, have no indefinite forms, e.g.:—

наѣродњи = national, folk јѹнаѣчки = heroic
граѣдски = city вѹѣји = wolf's
сирѣмашки = poor, pauper's лѣви = left

десни = right данашњи = today's
 доњи = lower

All Comparative and Superlative adjectives are declined like the Definite *soft* declension because of the final soft consonant of the stem. (See below "The Comparison of Adjectives").

The forms of the Gen., Dat., Loc.sing. masc. and neut. Def. and of the Dat., Instr. and Loc. plur. of all genders, with a final vowel (-a, -e or -y), given in the declensions below, are used:—

(a) when the adjective is used by itself, e.g.:
 Паметноме и комаџац мѹзика = For the sensible man even a mosquito is music.

(b) when the adjective is put after the noun, e.g.:
 То ђн велї ђу рођеноме! = He tells that to his own father!

(c) for the first of a string of adjectives qualifying a single noun, e.g.: Једнога лепог сунчаног дана... = One fine sunny day...

црвен = red

SING.		INDEFINITE	
	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	црвен	црвено*	црвена
Gen.	црвѣна	црвѣно	црвѣне
Dat.	црвѣну	црвѣну	црвѣњу
Acc.	= Nom. or Gen.	црвено*	црвѣну
Instr.	црвѣм		црвѣм
Loc.	црвѣу		црвѣју
PLUR.			
Nom.	црвени	црвена	црвѣне
Gen.		црвѣх	
Dat.		црвѣм(а)	
Acc.	црвѣне	црвена	црвѣне
Instr.		црвѣм(а)	
Loc.		црвѣм(а)	

*In these cases soft stem adjectives substitute -e- for -o- (with the same quantity) in the endings. See paragraph on soft stems above, p. 271.

SING.		DEFINITE	
	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom.	црвени	црвено*	црвена
Gen.		црвѣг(а)*	црвѣне
Dat.		црвѣм(е) or (-у)*	црвѣњу
Acc.	= Nom. or Gen.	црвено*	црвѣну
Instr.		црвѣм	црвѣм
Loc.		црвѣм(е)*	црвѣју
PLUR.			
Nom.	црвени	црвена	црвѣне
Gen.		црвѣх	
Dat.		црвѣм(а)	
Acc.	црвѣне	црвена	црвѣне
Instr.		црвѣм(а)	
Loc.		црвѣм(а)	

THE COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

Comparative Adjectives are formed with three alternative sets of endings, viz.:—

- (a) -ији, -ија, -ије
- (b) -ји, -ја, -је
- (c) -ији, -ија, -ије

Only three adjectives form their comparatives with the first set of endings (a), namely:

лак = easy, Comp. лакши
 леп = beautiful, Comp. лепши
 мек = soft, Comp. мекши

The second set of shorter endings (b) with -ји is used for many monosyllabic adjectives and causes yotation of the final consonant of the stem, offering a rich field for the illustration of yotation in Serbocroatian. (Cf. "Slavonic Characteristics," No. 4.)

јак = strong, Comp. јачи
 горак = bitter, " горчи (from stem горк-)
 драг = dear, " дражи
 дуг = long, " дужи, or дуљи (Irreg.)
 строг = strict, " строжи or строји
 тих = quiet, " тиши
 сух } = dry " суви
 сув }

*In these cases soft stem adjectives substitute -e- for -o- (with the same quantity) in the endings. See paragraph on soft stems above, p. 271.

љут	= angry, hot,	Comp. љућий
жућ	= yellow,	" жућий
блед	= pale,	" бледый
млад	= young,	" млађий
тврђ	= hard,	" тврђий
брз	= quick,	" бржий
бео	= white,	" белый
црн	= black,	" црњи
глуп	= silly,	" глупљий
груб	= rough,	" грубљий
глув	= deaf,	" глувљий
глух		" глухий
густ	= dense,	" гушћий
чврст	= firm,	" чвршћий
бесан	= furious,	" бешћий or беснији

Adjectives ending in a palatal consonant absorb the j of the ending into the final consonant of their stem, hence, e.g.:—

врѹћ	= hot,	Comp. врѹћий
рѹћ	= red-haired,	" рѹћий

Many adjectives ending in the Positive degree in -ок, -ак and -ек drop this syllable in the formation of their Comparatives. The same yotations occur with the final consonant of the stem remaining, e.g.:—

краћак	= short,	Comp. краћий
плћтак	= shallow,	" плћћий
редак	= rare,	" редйй
слаћак	= sweet,	" слаћйй
вйсок	= high,	" вйшйй
нйзак	= low,	" нйжйй
дйлек	= distant,	" дйљйй
танак	= thin,	" танйй
шйрок	= broad,	" шйрйй
дубок	= deep,	" дубљйй
жесток	= fierce,	" жешћйй

and with absorption of the -j-:—

тежак	= heavy,	" тежйй
-------	----------	---------

For the vast majority of adjectives the third set of endings (c) with -ијй, etc., are used. This includes many monosyllabic and disyllabic adjectives and all adjectives of three or more syllables, i.e. in their masc. Indefinite Nom. sing. form. E.g.:—

пуст	= empty,	Comp. пустији
свѣт	= holy,	" свѣтији
слан	= salty,	" сланији or слљйй
чйст	= clean,	" чйстији

мио	= beloved, dear,	Comp. милији
пун	= full,	" пунији
лош	= bad,	" лошији
нов	= new,	" новији
стар	= old,	" старјији
здрав	= healthy,	" здравјији
слаб	= weak,	" слабији
зрео	= ripe,	" зрелији
крћтак	= meek,	" крћкији, крћчйй
крћпак	= firm,	" крћпкији
гйбак	= flexible,	" гйпкији
бйстар	= clear,	" бйстрији
јасан	= bright, clear,	" јаснији
жедан	= thirsty,	" жеднији
студен	= cold,	" студѣнији
спљсобан	= capable,	" спљсобнији
сирдмашан	= poor,	" сиромљшнији
незadowољан	= discontented,	" незаadowољнији
далекдвидан	= far-seeing,	" далеководнији

Notice the irregular Comparatives:—

дѣбео	= fat,	Comp. дѣбљйй
прѣтио	= stout, corpulent,	" прѣтљйй
наопћак	= reversed, wrong,	" наопћачнији
дббар	= good,	" ббљйй
рђав	= bad,	" гђрйй
зђо		"
вѣлик(йй)	= big, great,	" вѣћйй
мйлий		"
мйлен	= small,	" мйљйй

It will be observed that all disyllabic Comparatives (i.e. with (b) endings) have the short falling tone, while all Comparatives of three or more syllables with -ији, etc. endings (c), have the short rising tone on the third syllable from the end.

Superlative adjectives are formed by prefixing *nāj-* to the Comparative degree. Only when they are formed from disyllabic Comparatives with " , the *Superlative* forms may have only the one accent on the *nāj-*. In other instances both the prefix *nāj-* and the following adjective, comparative in form, have their own accents (tones), like compound words.

Thus: *nāj*ббљйй = best, or *nāj*ббљйй, but *only*: *nāj*спљсобнији = the most capable.

Than = нѣго, or од + Genitive, e.g.:—

Он је дѣљи нѣго ја or од мѣне = He is fatter than I.

Rather better = нѣшто бѣље; but: rather good = дѣста дѣбар.

Less than = мање нѣго; more than = више нѣго.

The bigger, the better = што бѣље (or чѣм) вѣће, тѣ (or тѣм) бѣље.

As big as = ѣсто тако вѣлик као ...

As fast as possible = што бѣже; as soon as possible = што прѣ.

The best of all = најбољи од свѣх.

The same as = ѣстѣ као ...

Too (much) = сѣвише, дѣвећ(e)

In the same way as = ѣсто тако као ...

ADVERBS

These are regularly formed from adjectives by using the form for the Nom. Acc. neuter singular, e.g.:—

дѣбар = good, дѣбро = well

except in the case of adjectives ending in -ски, which have corresponding adverbs in -ски, e.g.:—

пријатељски = in a friendly way

There are a few special adverbial endings, such as -це, -ке, e.g.:—

нѣхотицѣ = unwillingly

пѣшкѣ (or пѣшицѣ) = on foot

The Instr. sing. of nouns is also used, as in other Slavonic languages, e.g.:—

вѣћном = for the most part

The Comparison of Adverbs

Comparative adverbs, formed from adverbs of adjectival origin, have the same form as the Nom./Acc. neuter sing. of the corresponding Comparative adjective. The final -e can be either short or long.

E.g.:—

бѣже = quicker тѣше = more quietly
 јефтѣније = more cheaply бѣље = better
 лѣкше = more easily

Superlative adverbs are formed by prefixing нај- to the Comparative adverbs, as in the comparison of adjectives. E.g.:—

најбрже = most quickly најлакше = most easily
 најјефтѣније = most cheaply најбоље = best

The only irregular Comparative and Superlative adverbs are:—

много = much више = more највише = most
 мало = little мање = less најмање = least

Temporal, local and other adverbs can have a great variety of endings owing to their various derivations. The commonest are:—

Place:—

овде	= here	(од)дѣгѣ	= from above
тѣ	= there	(од)дѣдѣ	= from below
тѣмо	= there, thither	напољу	= out of doors, outside
онде	= yonder	напоље	= out
свѣда	= everywhere	спѣља	= from outside
оѣмо	= hither	напред	= forward
оѣмо	= thither	нагрѣд	= backwards
дѣвдѣ	= hence	дѣтрѣд	= from behind
дѣдѣ	= thence	пѣзѣди	= behind
дѣдѣ	= this way	унѣтра	= inside
дѣдѣ	= that way	чѣк	= right up to
дѣдѣ	= nowhere	прѣво	= straight on
блѣзу	= near	ѣво	= look, here, Fr. <i>voici</i>
далѣко	= far	ѣто	= look, there
гѣре	= above, upstairs	ѣно	= look, over } Fr. <i>voilà</i>
дѣле	= below, downstairs	нѣзбрѣдо	= downhill

Time:—

сѣда or сѣд	= now	стѣлно	= constantly,
тѣд(a)	= then		permanently
дѣнас	= to-day	нѣкада	= never
јѣче	= yesterday	дѣвно	= long ago
сѣтра	= to-morrow	мѣлочѣс	= just recently
вѣћ	= already	дѣцкан	= late
јѣш	= still	кѣсно	= early
ѣвѣк	= always	рѣно	= last year
сѣвѣда		лѣне, лѣни	= in winter
вѣзда		зѣми	

Time, cont.:—

лѣти ¹	= in summer	прѣ	= formerly
дѣну,		сѣноћ	= last night
обдѣн	= by day	ноћас	= to-night
мѣхом	= mostly	у вече	= in the evening
међутим	= meanwhile	ујутру	= in the morning
најзад	= at last	у скоро	= soon
одмах	= immediately	скоро	
ономѣд	} = the other day	убрзо	= only just
ономѣдне		таман	
опет	= again	тѣк	= only (also of degree)
после	} = afterwards	баи	= just (" ")
потои			

Manner:—

тако	= so, thus	изненада	} = suddenly
овако	= like this	одједанпут	
онако	= in that way	крадом	= stealthily
иначе	= otherwise	обично	= usually
никако	= in no way	тачно	= exactly, punctually
брзо	= quickly	бадѣва	= in vain, gratis
(по)лагано	} = slowly	(у)злуд	= in vain
полако		немилице	= mercilessly
споро	} = differently	к(а)обајати	} = making out that,
дружичје		тѣбож(е)	
заједно	} = together	наводно	} = allegedly
скупѣ		напамѣт	

Degree:—

врло	} = very	пѣтупно	= completely
ведма		сѣсвим	= quite
много	} = much	наравно	} = of course
пуно		свакако	
мало	} = little, a little	дакако	} = only
више		само	
мање	= less	исто	= equally
доста	= enough	једино	= solely
неколико	= some	макар	} = at least
прилично	= fairly	бар(ем)	
свише	} = too much	скоро	} = almost
двѣх(е)		готово	
толико	= so much	јѣдва	= hardly
намало	= not in the least	нарочито	} = especially
прдсечно	= on an average	особито	

¹Irregularly formed from дѣн = day, on the analogy of the regular нѣну (Instr. sing.) = by night.

Degree, cont.:—

доиста	} = truly, indeed	ваида	= probably
заиста		сѣгурно	= surely, for certain,
донѣкле	} = to a certain extent	веровѣ	= probably
		уопште	= in general
збйла	= really	баш	} = just
јамачно	= surely	управо	
можда	= perhaps	чака	= even

Interrogative:—

кад ог када?	= when?
гдѣ?	= where?
куда, куда?	= whither? (Eastern); which way? (Western)
	> < камо? = whither? where to?
откуда(а)?	= whence?
одале?	= how far?
зашто?	= why?
како?	= how?
колико?	= how much?
...ли...?	= enclitic interrogative particle
да ли...?	= interrogative particle used initially
зар...?	= interrogative particle expressing surprise
...јел'те?	= is that not so? Fr. <i>N'est-ce pas?</i>
Not = не	no = не
дабме, свакако	yes = да, јест of course =

CONJUNCTIONS

Neither соординатив nor subordinating conjunctions in Serbocroatian have any special forms.

Coordinating:

и	= and	међутим	= however, on the
а	= and, but (adversative)		other hand
али	} = but	ни(ти)...	} = neither...nor
но		ни(ти)	
или	= or	него, већ	= but (after a negative)
ипак	= however	дакле	= and so, then
као	= as	те	= and so
ни	= not even	па	= and then
такође	} = also	та	= then (urging),
такођер			but (emphatic exclamatory)
пак	= however, on the contrary		
само	= only	ала...!	(exclamatory)
			= my word...!

Subordinating:

ако	= if	пре него што	= before
кад(а)	= when, if	пре њо што	
док(лѐ)	= while, док	откако	= ever since
	не = until	откад	
јер		чим	= as soon as
зато што	= because	тѐк што	
због тога		као што	= as
што		иако	
да	= that, in order	иада	= although
што	that, so that, if	премда	
	that (referring	макар да	= even though
	to a fact)	а да не	= without (doing)
пшто = after; since (causal)		како би	= so that
будући да = seeing that		ако и	= even if
као да = as if			
само да = only that, provided that			

PREPOSITIONS

These can govern any case except the Nom. or Voc., of course, and largely agree with the usage in other Slav languages.

With Gen.:

без	= without	уместо,	
из	= out of	место	= instead of
с(а)	= off	око	= round
дѐим,		пдсле	= after
сѐм	= except	ради	= for the sake of
од	= from, made of	спрам	= in front of
код		пут	= towards
у (less common)	= by, near	врх	= on top of
због	= because of	подно	= below, at the bottom of
пред	= beside	цело	= at, by
пре	= before (of time)	широм	= all over
преко	= across	ниже	= below
против	= against	више	= above, over
за	= in the time of	сред	= in the middle of
близу	= near	дуж	
ван	= outside, beyond		= alongside
до	= as far as, until, before, close to		

and all compound prepositions such as испод = below, испред = in front of, изнад = above, изван = outside, између = among, ља = from behind, наспрам = opposite, покрај = alongside, besides, накрај = at the end of, након = after, ин, понут = like (*sic*), уедуж = along,

успред, наспред = in the middle of.

With Dat.:

к(а)	= towards	у(с)пркос	= despite
супрот	= against (also	унаотч	= in spite of,
насупротив	with Gen.)		for all...

With Acc.:

у	= into	над	= over (motion)
на	= on to	уз	= up, with, beside
кроз	= through	низ	= down
за	= for, (to) behind	мимо	= past, beyond, apart from
међу	= between (motion)	о	= on, against
пред	= (to) before (motion)	по	= for, to fetch
под	= under (motion)		

With Instr.:

с(а)	= with	за	= behind (rest)
пред	= before (rest)	над	= over (rest)
међу	= between	под	= under (rest)

With Loc.:

у	= in	при	= near, by
на	= on	према	= towards, according to
о	= about	по	= about, by

The prefixes *паз-* and *про-* do not occur as prepositions, but *пре* occurs as a temporal preposition governing the Gen. As in all the other South Slav languages, there is no prefix corresponding etymologically to the Russian *вы-*, W. Slav. *vy-* (*vy-*), for which *из-* is used in Serbo-Croatian.

The accent may shift from monosyllabic and disyllabic words with *falling* accents (only) on to a preceding preposition in the form of either ' or '. E.g. *код стѣнца* = at the old man's, *у књижи* = in the book, *из града* = from the city, *на воду* = on to the water.

Some original (non-compound) prepositions consisting of, or ending in, a consonant take a euphonic fill-vowel -a before words beginning with the same or similar consonants when the combination would otherwise be difficult to pronounce, e.g.: *са страхом* = with fear, *са њеом* = with a lark, *са зѐмљом* = with the earth, *са жѐном* = with his wife, *беза зла* = without evil, *ка грѣду* = towards the city, *са пѐом* = with a dog, *наза стѣну* = down the side, *уза зид* = up the wall.

This is particularly common before short personal pronouns, e.g. сѧ мѧѡм = with me, нѧдѧ се = above oneself, прѧда мѧѡм = before me, подѧ ѡ = (to) under him, крѧзѧ ѡ = through it, him.

THE CONJUGATION OF VERBS

Voices and Tenses

The conjugations in Serbocroatian are, on the whole, nearer to the original Old Slavonic models than those of modern Russian, for instance. Here, too, the Dual Number has completely disappeared. The Passive Voice is expressed by the verb "to be" + the Past Participle Passive, or by the 3rd person plural of the verb used impersonally, or by the reflexive verb, i.e. the Active verb + се written separately, for subjects mostly in the 3rd person, e.g.:—

Зѡвѹ се = they are called
Он бѡвѧ хвѧлен or хвѧлѧ га = he is praised
Он је хвѧлен = he has been praised

Tenses

Only the Present, Aorist, and Imperfect are simple tenses, while the Future, Past or Perfect, Pluperfect and the Future Perfect are compound tenses. It should be specially noted that the Present of perfective verbs in Sbc. does *not* have a future meaning, as it has in E. and W. Slav languages; this is a characteristic of S. Slav languages, though the usage of Slovenian is peculiar. In Sbc. the Perfective Present is used in main clauses in narratives and descriptions as a kind of Historic Present in order to give vividness. In conversation it is used almost exclusively in subordinate clauses introduced by да = that, ако = if, etc. The (compound) Future is formed from verbs of *both* aspects.

The Conditional Mood is also expressed by a compound form. The only other surviving *Mood* is the Imperative.

Present and Past Active (indeclinable) *Gerunds* (or verbal adverbs) also exist, but of the Participles (declinable verbal adjectives)—in contrast to Russian—only the Past Participle Active in -ѧ and the Past Participle Passive are still used.

The use of the Aorist and Imperfect tenses is now largely confined to the literary (written) language, and is seldom heard in conversation.

Classification of Serbocroatian Verbs according to their Presents, with Subdivisions according to their Infinitives.

In Sbc. the Present tense is characterized by one of three vowels: e, a, и, to which is added, where necessary, the final consonant or syllable indicating the person. (See p. 284.)

As in O.S., the first three classes have the same endings, but in the second class these are preceded by н while in the third class they are preceded by j. These are subdivided according to the Infinitive ending.

3rd Pers. Sing. Infinitive Pres.

I. A. трѣсѧ	трѣсти ¹	= shake. Same stem in the Pres. and Infin., consonantal stem.
also почнѧ	почѣти	= begin (Pfve.). Infin. in -ѣти, from -ати.
умрѧ	умрѣти	= die (Pfve.). Infin. in -рѣти, from -ертѣ.
B. бѣрѧ	брѧти	= gather. Infin. in -ати, cons. stem.
II. дѧгнѧ	дѧгнути (дѧћи)	= lift (Pfve.). н-stem.
лѧгнѧ	лѧћи	= lie down (Pfve.). н-stem.

III. j-verbs.

1. Primary verbs:

A.a. чѹжѧ	чѹти	= hear. Same vowel stem in Pres. and Infin.
b. мѧлѧ	млѣти (from *meliti)	= grind. Same consonant stem in Pres. and Infin.
c. пѧжѧ се	пѧти се (from пати)	= climb. Same nasal stem in Pres. and Infin.
B.a. брѧжѧ	брѧжати	= shave. Vowel stem, Infin. in -ати.
b. пѧшѧ	пѧсати	= write. Consonant stem, Infin. in -ати (yotation in present!)

¹So also—

With velar stem:— пѣчѧ, 3rd p. pl. пѣкѹ пѣћи = to bake,
" dental " :— плѣтѧ, " " плѣтѹ плѣсти = to knit,
" labial " :— грѣбѧ, " " грѣбѹ грѣпсти = to scratch.

2. Endings (a) preceded by e are used for

(i) consonant stem verbs of Cl. I (velar stems undergo the 1st Palatalization):—

трэсен = shaken пёчен = baked

(ii) vowel stem verbs of Cl. III 1 Aa, which develop a j or в before these endings to avoid hiatus:—

добйжен or добйвен = obtained
чу́вен = heard
испйжен (or йспйт) = drunk up

3. Endings (a) preceded by e are also used for verbs of Cl. V, the stem of which undergoes yotation, e.g.:—

но́шен = carried вйжен = seen

4. Endings (b) are used for all verbs of Cl. II, being added to the Infinitive stem in -ну, and for a few other verbs with monosyllabic roots:—

дй́нут = lifted преподэ́нат = recognized
днё́т = brought ўсу́т = strewn
прдлр́т = pierced пвч́т = begun
да́т = given

The participles can be used adjectivally and declined, either as Definite or as Indefinite adjectives.

Verbal Nouns. These can be formed by adding -je to the Past Participle Passive, most commonly of Imperfective verbs. e.g. писа́е = writing, пуме́е = smoking, зна́че́е = meaning. Verbal nouns from Perfective verbs usually have a purely substantival meaning, e.g. створе́е = creature, свану́е = dawn, ослобође́е = liberation.

Examples of the Conjugation of the Simple Tenses of Verbs

1. e-type		трэсти = to shake	
<i>Present.</i> ¹		<i>Imperative.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i> ²
sing. 1	трэ́сѐм	—	трэ́с(и)а́х
2	трэ́сѐш	трэ́си	трэ́с(и)а́ше
3	трэ́сѐ	—	трэ́с(и)а́ше
plur. 1		трэ́симо	трэ́с(и)а́смо
2	трэ́сите	трэ́сите	трэ́с(и)а́сте
3	трэ́су	—	трэ́с(и)а́ху
Gerunds: Present, трэ́су́и; Past, трэ́савши.			
Past Participles: Active, трэ́сѐо, трэ́сла, трэ́сло;			
Passive, трэ́сѐн.			

2. a-type ймати = to have

<i>Present.</i>		<i>Imperative.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Aorist.</i>
sing. 1	йма́м	—	йма́х	йма́х
2	йма́ш	йма́ј	йма́ше	йма́
3	йма́	—	йма́ше	йма́
plur. 1		йма́јмо	йма́смо	йма́смо
2	йма́те	йма́јте	йма́сте	йма́сте
3	йма́ју	—	йма́ху	йма́ше

Gerunds: Present, йма́ју́и; Past, йма́вши.

Past Participles: Active, йма́о, йма́ла, йма́ло;
Passive (чыта́н = read).

¹With change of accent in 1st and 2nd pers. Pl. Pres.: плетѐм = I weave, плетѐмо, -ѐте; мрѐм = I die, мрѐмо.
²Cf. то́нах, чу́јах, писа́х, ве́ровах = I was sinking, hearing, writing, believing.

³Cf. ди́гох, ме́тнух, чу́х, писа́х, ве́ровах = I lifted, put, heard, wrote, believed.

⁴With change of accent in 1st and 2nd pers. Pl. Pres.: ве́нча́м = I marry (trans.), венча́мо, -а́те.

3. *i*-type хвалити = to praise

<i>Present.</i> Sing. 1	<i>Imperative.</i> —	<i>Imperfect.</i> хвалѣх ²	<i>Aorist.</i> хвалѣх ³
2 хвалѣш	хвали	хвалѣше	хвали
3 хвалѣ	—	хвалѣше	хвали
Plur. 1 хвалѣмо	хвалимо	хвалѣсмо	хвалѣсмо
2 хвалѣте	хвалите	хвалѣсте	хвалѣсте
3 хвалѣ	—	хвалѣше	хвалѣше

Gerunds: Present, хвалѣи; Past, хвалѣвши.
 Past Participles: Active, хвалио, хвалила, хвалило;
 Passive, хвалѣн.

Conjugation of Irregular Verbs in Serbo-croatian.
The old Athematic Verbs.

бѣти = to be

<i>Present.</i> Sing. 1	<i>Imperative.</i> —	<i>Imperfect.</i> бѣях ⁵	<i>Aorist.</i> бѣх
2 бѣси, си	буди	бѣше (reg.)	бѣ
3 бѣст(е), ⁴ je	—	бѣше	бѣ
Plur. 1 бѣсмо, смо	будимо	бѣсмо	бѣсмо
2 бѣсте, сте	будите	бѣсте	бѣсте
3 бѣсу, су	—	бѣшу	бѣше

Gerunds: Present, бѣдѣи; Past, бѣв(ши) (As an adj. = former).

Past Participle: бѣо, бѣла, бѣло.

The tense: бѣдѣм, бѣдѣш, бѣдѣ, бѣдѣмо, бѣдѣте, бѣдѣу, is used for "to be" in subordinate clauses not

¹With change of accent in 1st and 2nd pers. pl. Pres.: бѣрим = I burn (intrans.), горѣмо; спѣм = I sleep, спѣмо.
²Cf. ѹчѣх, вѣдѣх, дрѣх = I was teaching, seeing, holding.

³Cf. вѣдѣх, *je*-dialect вѣдѣх; дрѣх = I saw, held.

⁴The forms without *je*- for 1st, 2nd p. sing. and 1st, 2nd, 3rd p. plur. and "je" for 3rd p. sing. are the enclitic and auxiliary forms. A form бѣсте = it is (so), is used in answer.

⁵Special negative form, also used with neg. Past tense: нѣисам, нѣиси, нѣје, нѣсмо, нѣсте, нѣсу.

⁶The *je*-dialect has the vowel *je* throughout in all persons: бѣх, бѣше, etc.; also бѣях, etc.

dealing with facts: мѡра да бѣдѣ = he should be, but мѡрѣ да је = he must (surely) be. It is also used to form the Future Perfect.

јѣсти = to eat

Pres. јѣдѣм (reg. Class I) or јѣм (reg.)

Imperative јѣди

Gerunds: Present јѣдѣи

Past (пѡ)јѣдѣвши

Past Partic. Act. јѣо, јѣла or јѣо

Aor. јѣдох

Imperf. јѣдѣх or јѣдѣх

Past Partic. Pass. јѣден

дѣти = to give (Pfv.)

Present

Sing. 1 дѣм or дѣлем	Imperative: дѣј
2 дѣш (reg.)	Past Gerund: дѣвши
3 дѣ	Past Part. Act.: дѣо, дѣла
Plur. 1 дѣмо	Aorist: дѣх or дѣдох (more common)
	Past Part. Pass.: дѣн or дѣт

2 дѣте

3 дѣју or дѣју

Other Verbs.

хѣти = to want

<i>Present.</i> Sing. 1	<i>Imperat. (rare)</i> —	<i>Imperfect.</i> хѣх, хѣтијѣх, or хѣјѣх	<i>Aorist.</i> хѣдох or хѣх (rare)
2 хѣш (хѣдни)	—	(regular)	(regular)
3 хѣе	—		
Plur. 1 хѣмо (хѣднимо)			
2 хѣете (хѣдните)			
3 хѣе			

Gerunds: Present, хѣтѣи or х(о)тѣи; Past, хѣвши or хѣтѣши.

Past Participle Active: (eastern) хѣо, хѣла, хѣло

¹Special negative form, also used with neg. Future tense: нѣху, нѣш, нѣе, нѣмо, нѣете, нѣе.

SERBOCROATIAN

хтѣло, (western) хтѣо, хтѣла, хтѣло.

	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Aorist.</i>
	Sing.1 мѡгу	мѡгѡхъ	мѡгохъ
	2 мѡжѣшъ	(reg.)	мѡже оу мѡже
	3 мѡжѣ		мѡже оу мѡже
	Plur.1 мѡжѣмо		мѡгосмо
	2 мѡжѣте		мѡгосте
	3 мѡгѣ		мѡгоше

Gerund, Present: мѡгѹхи, Past: мѡгāви
Past Participle Active: мѡгао, мѡгла, мѡгло

знати (= to know), ймати (= to have) have
ents znáďēm, imáďēm besides znâm, йmam*

Notice also:—

<i>Infinitive</i> Class I.	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Past Part. Act.</i>	<i>Past Part. Pass.</i>
ра́сти = to grow се́сти = to sit down (Pfve.)	ра́стѣм се́днѣм	ра́стао, ра́сла	—
бо́сти = to prick гре́псти = to scratch	бо́дѣм гре́бѣм	се́о, се́ла (so also па́сти = to fall, pfve., etc.) бо́, бо́ла	бо́ден гре́бен, гребе́на
по́мѡћи = to help (Pfve.)	по́могнѣм	гре́бао, гре́бла (So all labial stems.)	—
на́сѹти = to pour out (Pfve.) кле́ти = to curse ѹ́зѣти = to take (Pfve.) на́дути се = to swell (Pfve.)	на́спѣм кѹ́нѣм ѹ́змѣм на́дмѣм се	на́сѹо, на́сула кле́о, кле́ла ѹ́зео, ѹ́зела на́дуо, на́дула	на́сѹт кле́т ѹ́зѣт на́дѹт or на́дѹвен

*Special negative form: *hémāti*, Pres. *hēmām* = I have not, *hēmāš*, *hēmā*, *hēmāmo*, *hēmāte*, *hēmājū*; *hēma* = there is (are) no(t)....

SERBOCROATIAN

ѣмърѣти = to die
(Pfve.)

$T_{\text{TOT}} = t_0 + t_{\text{rub}}$

тка̃ти = to weave

THẬT = to drive

Class II.

ста̀ти = to stop
(pfve., intran.)

дѣнути or	дѣо, дѣла,	дѣвен or
дѣсти = to	Aor. дѣх or	дѣт
put (pfve.)	дѣдѣм	

(Many verbs of Class II can drop the syllable **-hy** in the Past Part. Active and Aorist.)

пръснути¹ = to
burst, spirt
(pfve.)
пръскао, пръсла
or прънуо
(Aor. пръскох,

Class III.

млѣти = to grind

слѣти = to send
послати = to
send (pfive.)

клати = to slaughter

жѣти or жнѣти
= to reap

пѣти = to raise
кѣнѣти = to reach

¹So also стѣснѹти = to squeeze, прѣснѹти = to explode.

Figure 1. The effect of the number of trials on the number of correct responses. The number of correct responses (Y-axis) is plotted against the number of trials (X-axis). The data shows a positive correlation between the number of trials and the number of correct responses, with a slight increase in the number of correct responses as the number of trials increases.

давати = to give
(Impfve.)

дајем or давао даван
давам (Imperf. давāх)
Imperative: даји (see Class V below)
or давај

Class IV

требаги = to be
necessary
(impers.)

треба требало

Class V

Verbs with long root vowels in the Infinitive before a j, have Imperatives in -ји:—

So: тајити = to conceal, Imperat. таји
тајити = to cultivate, " таји

благословити = to bless, regular except Past Part.
Pass.: благословен, благословена

вёлѣм (rarely вёлу) = I say, has only a Present, Pres.
Ger. вёлѣи or велѣи, Imperf. вёлāх.

Infinitive. Present. Past Part. Act.

врѣти = to boil, врѣм, 3rd p. pl. врѹ, Pres. Ger.
врѹћи, otherwise regular.

So also зрѣти = to ripen (rare).
спати = to sleep спѣм спāо
(usually спāвати, спāвām, regular Cl. IV)
стајати = to stand стāјѣм стāјао, стāјала
(Imperat. стōј)

хѹтати = to be
silent but

хѹтѣм, otherwise regular

хѹтети = to feel хѹтѣм (quite regular)

Verbs of Going and Conveying

ѣи (= to go—on foot or conveyed, Impfve.,
Pfv. and Freq.) has Pres. ѣдем or ѣдѣм; Past Participle ѣшао or ѣшаа, ѣшла; Past Gerund ѣшāвши, Aor. ѣдох, Imperfect ѣхāх.

дѹи (= to come, Pfv.) has Pres. дѹѣм; Past Part. дѹшаа, дѹшла, Aor. дѹшох; Impfve. дѹлазити. ¹Отѣи (= to go away, Pfv.) has Pres. отѣдѣм or отѣдѣм or одѣм; Past Part. отѣшаа, ¹Aor. отѣдох¹ or отѣдох or одох; Impfve. одлазити.

¹Alternative possible accents are given.

ѣйти¹ (= to go out, Pfv.) or ѣзати¹ has Pres. ѣзѣм or ѣзѣдѣм or ѣзѣдѣм; Past. Part. ѣзѣшаа¹ or ѣзѣшаа, ¹Aor. изѣдох, изѣдох or изѣдох; Impfve. ѣзлазити.

Notice also:—

хѹдити (Impfve. = to go (on foot), Pres. хѹдѣм; Imperat. and Freq.) хѹди = come here!
хѹдати (Impfve. = to walk, pace, Pres. хѹдām and Freq.)
стѣи (Pfv.) = to arrive, Pres. стѣгнѣм, P.P.A. стѣгаа, стѣгла
стѣзати (Impfve.) = to arrive, Pres. стѣжѣм
јахати " = to ride, Pres. јāхѣм
похађати " = to visit, " похађām
пѹи (Pfv.) = to start out, (like дѹи); полазити (Impfve.)
нађи " = to find, (like дѹи), P.P.R. нађен; налазити (Impfve.)

To carry = носити (Impfve. and Freq.), Pres. носѣм² пѹнѣти (Pfv.), Pres. пѹнѣсѣм, пѹнѣсѣмо¹ Past Part. Act. пѹнео (masc.), пѹнѣла (fem.)
Aor. пѹнѣсох or пѹнѣх
Past Part. Pass. пѹнѣсен or пѹнѣт

To bring (carrying) = доносити (Impfve.), Pres. доносѣм; дѹнѣти (Pfv.), Pres. дѹнѣсѣм

To lead = вѹдити (Impfve. and Freq.), Pres. вѹдѣм.³ пѹвѣсти¹ (Pfv.), Pres. пѹвѣдѣм, Past Part. Active пѹвео (masc.), пѹвела (fem.)

To bring (a person) = довѹдити (Impfve.), Pres. довѹдѣм.
дѹвѣсти¹ (Pfv.), Pres. довѣдѣм.

To convey = вѹзити (Impfve. and Freq.), Pres. вѹзѣм.⁴ пѹвѣсти¹ (Pfv.), Pres. пѹвѣзѣм, Past Part. Act. пѹвезао (masc.), пѹвѣзла¹ (fem.)

To bring (conveyed) = довѹзити (Impfve.), Pres. довѹзѣм; дѹвѣсти¹ (Pfv.), Pres. довѣзѣм.

¹Alternative possible accents are given.

²носати, Pres. носѣм = to carry to and fro.

³вѹдати, Pres. вѹдām = to conduct, accompany, walk (a horse).⁴ вѹзати, Pres. вѹзām = to drive, trundle, to and fro.

The Formation of Aspects

Aspects in Serbocroatian are formed, as in other Slavonic languages, in four main ways:—

1. The Perfective from the (simple) Imperfective by adding a prepositional prefix, e.g.:—

писа́ти	= to write	напи́сати
мо́лити	= to request	замо́лити
пи́ти	= to drink	попи́ти

2. The Imperfective from the (simple or compound) Perfective by lengthening phonetically or by adding a syllable, e.g.:—

одговóрити	= to answer	одговóрати
помóщи	= to help	помóгати
умре́ти	= to die	уми́рати
ку́пити	= to buy	купóвати
пóстати	= to become	пóстајати
да́ти	= to give	да́вати
уби́ти	= to kill	уби́јати

3. The Impfve. from the Pfve., by changing the Infinitive ending:—

пу́стити	= to let, allow	пу́штати
дигну́ти,		
дй́ти	= to lift	дй́зати
ударити	= to hit	уда́рати
ле́жи	= to lie down	ле́гати

4. Sometimes different forms of the same root are used for the two aspects or entirely different roots:—

узе́ти	Pfve.	= to take	узи́мати	Impfve.
по́че́ти	"	= to begin	по́чи́нати	"
до́не́ти	"	= to bring	доно́сити	"
до́ћи	"	= to come	до́лазити	"

Only wide experience and reading can guide the student as to usage on this point, as there are no absolute rules for any class of verbs, as in other Slavonic languages.

WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS

The word order in a sentence is very free in Slavonic languages owing to the inflections, which themselves indicate the relation of words one to another in a clause. This gives greater scope for emphasizing different words of a phrase to express emotion, excitement, contrast, etc. than in uninflected languages.

The general rule is that all *clauses* must start with a strong (non-enclitic) word. But when a clause includes enclitics, certain rules are generally adhered to in conversation and in good writing. The rules in Serbocroatian are more elaborate than in any other Slavonic language owing to the greater frequency of enclitics.

The word order in both main and subordinate clauses follows the following formula¹:—

1. Usually only one non-enclitic word to start the clause (this may be a noun, main verb, conjunction, adverb, adjective—even separated from its noun, a strong pronoun, numeral, or a preposition + its noun or pronoun);
2. enclitic auxiliary verb;
3. Dative (or Genitive) encl. Personal Pronoun;
4. Accusative encl. Personal Pronoun, e.g.:—

Ја сам му се већ (било) представио.
= I had already introduced myself to him.

The aux. verb when negative does not count as an enclitic, and therefore follows the true enclitics, e.g.:—

Ја му се још ни́сам представио.
= I have not introduced myself to him yet.

Only the 3rd pers. sing. Past enclitic aux. verb "je" does not conform to this order; it *follows* the encl. Pers. Pronouns, e.g.:—

Он ми их је већ дао.
= He has already given them to me.

In Serbocroatian, in contrast to Slovenian, "ce je" is usually reduced to just "ce", e.g.:—

То им се само тако чинило.
= This only seemed to them like that.

With the Future tense either the Infinitive (usually merged with the aux. verb), or the subject (noun or Nominative Pers. Pronoun) ordinarily comes first. e.g.:—

¹It can be observed in modern writing that when only *one* enclitic, particularly *ce* or *je*, occurs in a clause, it is often put *after* the main verb, e.g. Млади Петар стигао је у Београд = Young Peter has arrived in Belgrade. Страна валу́та ме́ња се овде = Foreign currency is exchanged here.

Kázaŋy my tŏ or Jā hy my tŏ kázati.
= I shall tell that to him.

With the Past and Conditional, either the Past Participle or the subject start the clause; the *strong* form of the Past or Future aux. verb *may* start the clause to express emphasis, e.g.:—

Kázao sam my tŏ or Jā sam my tŏ kázao.
= I have said that to him.

Kázao bih my tŏ or Jā bih my tŏ kázao.
= I would say that to him.

Jěsam my tŏ kázao.

= I *have* said that to him.

Xŏŋy my tŏ kázati.

= I shall indeed say that to him.

N.B.—Neither the Nominative Pers. Pronouns, as in the examples above, nor any cases of the Demonstrative pronouns, even if monosyllabic, e.g. tŏ, are enclitic. (But the Reflexive pronoun "se" counts as an Accusative enclitic—see examples above). E.g.:—

tŋ my nêhem kázati tŏ!

= You won't tell him *that*!

The long accented forms of the Personal Pronouns are used only for emphasis, and may then come anywhere in the sentence, e.g.:—

Nêra nêhy nŋkada vŏleti!

= Him I shall never like!

In questions it is safest for the foreigner to start with dă li, after which the identical order as above is preserved, e.g.:—

Dă li ste ga vŏdeli?

= Have you seen him?

If only li (itself an enclitic interrogative particle, taking precedence over all other enclitics) is used with a compound tense, then a non-enclitic word (either the Past Part. or the *full* form of the aux. verb) must start the sentence, except that "je", the 3rd pers. sing. Past enclitic aux. verb, may regularly start a question, e.g.:—

Dăo li bi my tŏ tŋ?

= Would *you* give that to him?

Jěsi li my je vêh dăo?

= Have you already given it (fem.) to him?

xŏhem li my tŏ pêhi?
= Will you say that to him?

Jě li ōn vêh tămo?¹
= Is he already there?

Questions starting with Interrogative pronouns or adverbs follow the general rules above, e.g.:—

Гдѣ си му их (тŋ) прѣдао?
= Where did you hand them over to him?

The negative particle *ne* is a *proclitic* capable of starting a sentence and always preceding the verb or other word it negatives; it is fused with the aux. verb in the Past and Future tenses, and takes the accent off words with a falling intonation, e.g.:—

Нјсам га тăмо вјдео. = I have not seen him there.
Нêhy га вјдети. = I shall not see him.

Не вăлă = One should not

Нê можѣ (>мѡжѣ) = One cannot, it is impossible

"Jy" replaces "je" for the Accusative sing. fem. 3rd pers. Personal Pronoun in cases where two "je's" would otherwise follow or in any other doubtful case (cf. footnote 3, p. 264), e.g.:—

Ōn jy je vŏleo.

= He liked her, or loved her.

TEXTS

I. Свето Јеванђеље по Луци, глава 8.

ПРИЧА О СИЈАЧУ

5. Изйђе сијач да сије сјеме своје; и кад сијаше, једно паде покрај пута, и погази се, и птице небеске позобаше га. 6. А друго паде на камен, и изникавши осуши се, јер немаше влаге. 7. И друго паде у трње, и узрасте трње, и удави га. 8. А друго паде на земљу добру, и изникавши донесе род сто пута онолико. Говорећи овако повика: ко има уши да чује нека чује.

¹ jě li, when added at the end of a question, means 'isn't it so?' (French n'est-ce pas?), e.g.: То је прăвă йстина, jě ли? = That's the real truth, is it?

II. *Sveto Jevanđelje po Luci*, glava 8.

PRIČA O SIJAČU

5. Iziđe sijač da sije sjeme svoje; i kad sijaše, jedno pađe pokraj puta, a pogazi se, i ptice nebeske pozobaše ga. 6. A drugo pađe na kamen, i iznikavši osuši se, jer nemaše vlage. 7. I drugo pađe u trnje, i uzraste trnje, i udavi ga. 8. A drugo pađe na zemlju dobru, i iznikavši donese rod sto puta onoliko. Govoreći ovako povika: ko ima uši da čuje neka čuje.

III. *From the collection of folk tales*: В. Караџић, Српске народне приповетке.

ОЛЕС АЈНС, КАО ШВАБИ ТРАЛАЛА

Приповиједа се како су ђаво и Швабо погодили да један другогa носи, докле онај који се носи не испјева једну пјесму. Тако најприје узјаше ђаво на Шваба и започевши најдужу пјесму коју је знао, стане пјевати, а кад је сврши, онда Швабо узјаше на ђавола, али мјесто кaкe праве пјесме зајнтачи пјевати *тралала*, и тако Швабо преварио ђавола, те га је морао носити читав дан, а пјесми ни краја ни конца.

IV. *From the collection of folk tales*: V. Karadžić, *Srpske narodne pripovetke*.

ОЛЕС АЈНС (ALLES EINS), КАО ШВАБИ ТРАЛАЛА

Приповиједа се како су ђаво и Швабо погодили да један другогa носи, докле онај који се носи не испјева једну пјесму. Тако најприје узјаше ђаво на Шваба и започевши најдужу пјесму коју је знао, стане пјевати, а кад се сврши, онда Швабо узјаше на ђавола, али мјесто кaкe праве пјесме зајнтачи пјевати *тралала*, а тако Швабо преварио ђавола, те га морао носити читав дан, а пјесми ни краја ни конца.

V. *Passage from a Serbian folk ballad* (народна песма).

СМРТ МАЈКЕ ЈУГОВИЋА

Мили Боже, чуда великога,
Кад се слеже на Косово војска
У тој војсци девет Југовића
И десети стар Јуже Богдане.

5 Бога моли Југовића мајка,
Да јој Бог да̑ очи соколове
И бијела крила лабудова
Да одлети на Косово равно
И да види девет Југовића

10 И десетог стар-Југа Богдана.

Што молила, Бога домолила:
Бог јој дао очи соколове
И бијела крила лабудова.

15 Она лети на Косово равно,
Мртвих нађе девет Југовића
И десетог стар-Југа Богдана,
И више њих девет бојних копча,
На коплима девет соколова,
Око копља девет добрих коња,
20 А поред њих девет љутих лава.
Тад завришта девет добрих коња,
И залаја девет љутих лава,
А закликта девет соколова.

25 И ту мајка тврда срца била,
Већ узима девет добрих коња,
И узима девет љутих лава,
И узима девет соколова,
Пак се врати двору бијеломе.

30 Далеко је снахе угледале,
Мало ближе пред њу ишетале:
Закукало девет удовица,
Заплакало девет сиротица,

35 Завриштало девет добрих коња,
Залајало девет љутих лава,
Закликтало девет соколова.
И ту мајка тврда срца била,
Да од срца сузе не пустила.

40 Кад је било ноћи у поноћи,
Ал' завришта Дамјанов Зеленко.
Пита мајка Дамјанове лубе:
"Снахо моја, љубо Дамјанова,

45 Што нам вршти Дамјанов Зеленко?
Ал' је гладан шенице бјелице,
Али жедан воде са Звечана?"

Проговара љуба Дамјанова:
"Свекрвице, мајко Дамјанова,
Нит' је гладан шенице бјелице,
Нити је жедан воде са Звечана.

50 Већ је њега Дамјан научио
До поноћи ситну зоб зобати,
Од поноћи на друм путовати;
Пак он жали свога господара,
Што га није на себи донио."

55 И ту мајка тврда срца била,
Да од срца сузе не пустила.

Кад у јутру данак освануо,
Али лете два врана гаврана;
Крвава им крила до рамена,

60 На кљунове б'јела пјена тргла:

Они носе руку од јунака,
И на руци бурма позлаћена;
Бацају је у криоце мајци.
Узе руку Југовића мајка,
Окретала, превртала с њоме,
Па дозивље Дамјанову љубу:
"Снахо моја, љубо Дамјанова,
Би л' познала чија ј' ово рука?"
Проговара љуба Дамјанова:
"Свекрвице, мајко Дамјанова,
Ово ј' рука нашега Дамјана,
Јера бурму ја познајем, мајко,
Бурма са мном на вјенчању била."
Узе мајка руку Дамјанову,
Окретала, превртала с њоме,
Пак је руци тихо бесједила:
"Моја руко, зелена јабуко,
Гдје си расла, гдје л' си устргнута!
А расла си на криоцу моме,"
Устргнута на Косову равном."
То изусту, лаку душу пусти.

VI. В. Петровић.

ВЕРУЈТЕ ПРВО

Прво је: сваки нека зна шта хоће!
О маглу копча никад се не ломе.
Слободе? Добро! Ал' то није воће.
Што зрело пада у ширир ма коме.
Верујте прво! и стисните пести,
Па онда трести, трести!

Господин, селак, богат и сиром',
У успех борбе верујте—и доста.
И ваша снага биће снага грома,
И замршена питања сва проста.
Верујте прво, и стисните пести,
Па онда трести, трести!

Велика дела ишту тврду шију.
Зачеп'те уста мудрих грошићара!
Дигните срца! Згас'те сумње змију,
И бор'те се за успех без шићара.
Верујте прво, и стисните пести,
Па онда трести, трести!

Вера у успех, успеха је пола.
Слободе прстен ко на руци носи,
Тај већ је јачи него сила хола,
И церов лист му већ цвета у коси.

Верујте прво, и стисните пести,
Па онда трести, трести!

—Ми сви сад знамо: хоћемо слободе,
И да смо своји у рођеној кући;—
И пре но што нам мач срца прободје
О вољу нашу он ће крго пући.
Ми верујемо! И стиснутих пести,
Са руку наших ланце ћемо стрести!

VII. Ј. Дучић.

ЈАБЛАНОВИ

Зашто ноћас тако шуме јабланови,
Тако страсно, чудно? Зашто тако шуме?
Жут је месец давно зашао за хуме,
Далеке и црне к'о слутње, и снови
У тој мртвој ноћи пали су на воду,
К'о олово мирну и сиву, у мраку.
Јабланови само високо у зраку
Шуме, шуме чудно, и дркћу у своду.

...Сам крај мирне воде, у ноћи ја стојим,
К'о потоњи човек. Земљом, према мени,
Лежи моја сенка. Ја се ноћас бојим
Себе, и ја стрепим сâм од своје сени.

VIII. Ј. Дуčić.

ЈАБЛАНОВИ

Зашто ноћас тако шуме јабланови,
Тако страсно, чудно? Зашто тако шуме?
Жут је месец давно зашао за хуме,
Далеке и црне к'о слутње, и снови

У тој мртвој ноћи пали су на воду,
К'о олово мирну и сиву, у мраку.
Јабланови само високо у зраку
Шуме, шуме чудно, и дркћу у своду.

...Сам крај мирне воде, у ноћи ја стојим,
К'о потонји човек. Земљом, према мени,
Лежи моја сенка. Ја се ноћас бојим
Себе, и ја стрепим сâм од своје сени.

IX. P. Домановић.

From ПЕВАЧЕВ УСКРС

Он је у овоме месту, где сада живи, тек од пре три месеца, Никоме није причао од куда је дошао, а бесумње га нико за порекло није ни питао. У осталом, ко ће га и питати? Он лепо пева и удара у тамбуру, а то је главно. Весело друштво се испуни и зове Перу. Тамбура зазвечи, а он запева, рецимо: "Од севдаха горег јада нема, ал' севдах се са севдахом вида!" или ма шта тако, и коме би онда крај вина и такве песме пало на ум, да припита Перу одакле је и што је амо дошао.

Не верујем да би и теби, читаоче, стало до његова порекла, па чак и до ове моје приче, само кад би чуо звук његове тамбурице и онај његов и слатка и силан глас. Та кад он запева коју песму што у срце дира, заборавиш и сâм ко си и шта си, већ се сав прешаш звуцима, који те опијају час слатком тугом и чежњом, час бујном веселошћу, те се душа, устрептала, опијена од таква осећања, предаје валима звука на милост и немилост, да је носе собом куда хоће.

Е, али кад њега нема да запева, онда можете допустити да бар ја о њему причам.

Није он случајно дошао у ово место, где га нико није познавао. То је тако морало бити. Пера је син доста имућних родитеља, без којих остаде још у осамнаестој својој години. Кад је постао пунолетан ожени се, прими наслеђе и отпочне трговати. Он млад, наиван, невест, добра срца и поверљив према сваком, а друштво рђаво, те злоупотреби те његове добре стране, и онда није никакво чудо, што му се, кад је узео тридесету годину, продало све за дуг, а он остао сиромашак са женом и четворо ситне деце. Пријатељи и познаници га напустише и он бежаше остављен себи самом.

Заната никаква није знао, а породицу је требало хранити. Једино што је могао и умео, то је да вешто удара у тамбуру и лепо пева. Недаће живота уплетоше јад и тугу у његов, иначе ведар и весео дух, а баш та туга, чиста и искрена, даваше необичне дражи гласу његову.

Он остави место свога рођења и пође у свет, да тугом својом људе весели. Неколико година већ живи од те горке зараде, идући тако по местима, где га нико не познаје.

X. V. Nazor

VARKE SUTONA

Vi, što suton volite i veče,
čuvajte se varke prvog mraka:
U njoj raste i stvar mrtva svaka,
i kretanje su svečanije, veče.

Onda, kad je vrelo dnevnih zraka
Na zenitu, neka zebnje vaše
Promatraju sve čega se plaše:
Dô, močvaru, lava i divljaka.

Naš je život put kroz cvetne grane.
Smrt je samo taman savijutak,
A na kraju jedne svetle pruge.

Sve su staze suncem obasjane.
Dan je dug, a suton tek trenutak.
Ne verujte Anđelima Tuge!

XI. D. Cesarić.

MRTVA LUKA

Znam: ima jedna mrtva luka,
I ko se u njoj nađe
Čuti će ujutro pjevanje čuka
I vidjet će umorne lađe.

Brodovi u njoj vječito snivaju
Kako se brodi,
Al njihova sidra mirno poživaju
U plitkoj vodi.

I tako u snovima gledaju sreću,
A plovit se boje,
Na jarbole šarene zastave među
I—stoje.

XII. D. Максимовић.

ПОЋИМО У ШУМЕ

Поћимо у шуме.
Ноћас сам рада
да гледам, како јесен бела
цвета и пада
и на равни пут.
Поћимо у шуме:
из свију врела
гледа по један месец жут.

Пођимо у старе
искусне шуме;
ноћас се храшћа уморне гране
спокојно сломили.
Пођимо у шуме;
на све стране
тужно миришу
пролећа увелих гомиле.

Пођимо кроз болни
осмех честâ:
ноћас су букве витке и беле,
и сенке бреста
тихо се плаве.
Пођимо у шуме;
уз пут ће јеле
држати небо врх наше главе.

Пођимо у шуме:
ноћас ће траком
свију се река сребро осути.
Пођимо у шуме, —
под звездом сваком
сањају мирно листови жути
стазом и мостом, брдом и долом.
Пођимо у шуме: —
ноћас би хтела,
да ме се увек сетиш с болом.

XIII. Д. Максимовић.

БАЛКАНАЦ

Не стидим се што сам,
како ви велите,
варварин са Балкана,
тла прљавштине и буре.
чућете сад,
и код нас има неке
вама непознате културе.

Ви прво испитујете и сумњате,
далеки сте и од рођених синова,
за трпезу своју
не посадите сваког туђина;
ви можете да пијете,
а да сваком не пружите
чаше вина.

А код нас су још стари обичаји груби:
ми пуштамо свакога под своје слеме,
код нас се још и с намерником љуби,
код нас се подвизи због гостољубља чине;
код нас сваки човек има
читавао племе
пријатеља и родбине.

Ви, доиста, имате
неколико милиона Христових кипова,
на сваког човека по једнога,
имају га друмови и поља, апсане и школе;
а код нас, кад људи верују у Бога,
у себи га носе,
и тихо му се,
скоро у сну, моле.

Ви, истина, за сваки кут живота
имате справа и машина,
све сте срачунали и све знате,
изуми ваши су за дивљење;
а ми још имамо старинске алате,
али све је код нас још здраво
и природно као глина;
и умирање, и рађање, и живљење.

Ви имате читаве збирке
правила и наука о слободи,
о свему се код вас пише и приповеда;
али ми и по неписаним законима
слободно живимо
и неког природног држимо се реда,
слично огњу, ветру, и води.

Код вас је, збиља, све тачно прописано,
како се једе, говори, облачи;
а ми, кад говоримо, вицемо
и машемо рукама,
и чорбу гласно срчемо,
и у рукавицама смо
као на мукама.

Све је код нас заиста просто;
обућу носимо од свињске коже,
пуно је код нас сељачких
навика и ствари;
и краљевски преци наши
доиста су били говедари.

Народ наш, збиља, у гневу може да коље,
руши и пали;
али ми нисмо они што смишљено тлаче,
ми не сматрамо да је свет цели
наше поље;
ми не бисмо поднели
ни урођеник прашумски да због нас плаче;
душа је наша пространа,
иако смо бројем мали.

XIV. Ч. Миндеровић.

АНТЕНЕ

Та тужна клавирска етида са оне стране
зида,
Како упорно зове, како носталгично мами...
Ако се гласно не плаче онда се нечујно
рида,
И за последњи поход се расте
у пустошној полутами.
И теку широке реке, широке реке из вена,
Крај градова у агонији,
Крај оборених антена.

SECTION 5. SLOVENIAN

INTRODUCTION

The Slovenes, a people at present numbering in their homeland rather less than two million, settled in the mountainous north-west corner of Yugoslavia at the time of the Slav migrations about A.D. 600. The centre of this small and unique Alpine Slav civilization is Ljubljana, a delightful and most civilized, though small, capital city standing in a small plain bounded by high mountains. Slovenia is a land of small individual farms and small industrial centres such as mines and foundries, connected by railways along most of the valleys. Beyond the Rivers Dráva and Múra the hills melt into the Pannonian Plain. The people are mainly of the Roman Catholic faith. Literacy in Slovenia reaches almost 100 per cent of the population; and the general level of urban, rural, and domestic culture is high even by West European standards. Thanks to this happy position the Slovenes have always enjoyed as a nation the respect of other Yugoslavs and have been regarded as hardworking, intelligent, reliable, and honest, rather like the Scots in England, or the Czechs. All who know the Slovenes regret the fact that even after the 1939-45 war, this small people was far from entirely united within the frontiers of Yugoslavia, 44 per cent of their total number remaining outside. However, the remainder live in a compact area in the Socialist Republic of Slovenia, in which the Slovenian language was, and is, regularly used as the official language. This separate existence within the Yugoslav state seemed to point to the possibility of an extension of this system of national existence within a broader federation, such as has now been introduced in the Socialist Federal Republic of Yugoslavia. The history of their language, as we shall see, also shows those qualities of steadiness and perseverance in the people, while their beautiful literature is often characterized by a gentle melancholy or a positive and constructive optimism which reflect further sides of the Slovene's character.

Their language, which must have become separate from Serbocroatian between the seventh and ninth centuries A.D., is in many ways an archaic form of Slavonic—it preserves the Dual number, for instance. Owing to the geographical nature of the country (many valleys separated by high mountains) it is split up into as many as nine main dialects.

Slovenian is the language of one of the oldest

documents written in any Slav language, the Freising Leaves (Brižinski spomeniki), a MS. written in Latin characters and containing prayers, confessions, and homilies, believed to date from the eleventh century.

The Slovenes early lost their political independence to their more powerful German and Italian neighbours. Hence from the earliest times the languages of culture in Slovenia were Latin, German, and Italian. It was not until the Reformation that the Slovenian language came into its own, when the Protestant reformers insisted on writing their message of salvation for their people in their own tongue, as was the practice in many countries at the time. The first was Primož Trubar (1508-86), who was banished from his country for a long time and wrote most of his works in Tübingen and elsewhere in Germany. Among other things he translated the New Testament. Soon after him came Jurič Dalmatin (born c 1546), who translated the Old Testament. Both these writers were from the central province of Dolénjsko (Lower Carniola), on the dialect of which they based their language. This was a fact of decisive importance for the subsequent development of literary Slovenian which was based mainly on their language, with an admixture of the sounds and forms of the neighbouring dialect of Gorénjsko (Upper Carniola). (Ljubljána lies in Gorénjsko, near the border of the two dialects.)

No less important was Adam Bôhorič, the author of the first grammar of the Slovenian language. Sebástian Krêlj was another of Trubar's important followers.

As in other countries, the Reformation in Slovenia was followed by a vigorous Roman Catholic counter-reformation in which Protestant writers were persecuted and their books burnt. But the Protestants won the day in at least one respect: they convinced everyone of the importance of writing in the native tongue. Thus it was that the most important Catholic writers of the subsequent two centuries wrote much of their work in Slovenian. Such were the ambitious Tomâž Hrên (1560-1630) and Matîja Kastêlic (1620-88), both of them religious writers.

It was not until the eighteenth century that there appeared nationally conscious writers on lay subjects. The first of these was Márko Pohlîn (1735-1801), who wrote a grammar of Slovenian, in which he confidently asserted that the people need not be in the least ashamed of their comparatively undeveloped and much neglected language. Another such writer was Léopold Wôlkmer (1741-1815), who wrote lyric poems

and fables. Antôn Lînhart (1757-95) created the first dramas in Slovenian and translated a comedy of Beaumarchais.

Among the most notable ecclesiastical writers of the eighteenth century was Jurič Jâpelj, the Jansenist writer who edited Dâlmatin's translation of the New Testament and himself translated the Old with the help of his colleagues. He used the sixteenth-century writers as his model, and introduced a consistent orthography with some modernizations. This helped to establish the historical character of Slovenian spelling, e.g. dâl (= gave) for what is pronounced dâj, glâdkâ (= smooth) for a pronunciation glâtka. In 1758 was born, in Šiška near Ljubljána, the herald of the modern era of the Slovenian language, the poet Válestin Vôdnik, who died in 1819. He was sixteen when he wrote his first published work. He went to school at a Franciscan monastery in Ljubljána, and worked as a priest in Slovenia and was liberally helped by the rich Baron Côtz (Zois), who was a patron of Slovenian letters at this time and also died in 1819, at the age of 72. Vôdnik's first published work was *Prátika*, a "national calendar," containing poems and other amusing and instructive material; this was followed by a more topical journal about contemporary important events, called *Novíce*. From 1798 he worked in Ljubljána, teaching divinity and publishing elementary readers, a grammar, a dictionary, and handbooks on divinity and archaeology. When Napoleon established his province of Illyria, Vôdnik was one of its most ardent supporters, and was appointed head of the "gimnázija" and inspector of elementary schools, and held other important posts. This was a time of great cultural and creative activity for him, and some of his happiest patriotic poems date from this period. When Illyria fell and Austrian domination was reestablished, Vôdnik did not leave his beloved Slovenia, though he was advised to do so; he ceased to work as a public figure, but continued his efforts for his people in the cultural field till his death, writing a history of the Slovenes and a Slovenian-German dictionary.

His successor in the field of poetry was the Pushkin of Slovenia, Dr. Francê Presêren (1800-49), whose poetry can truly be compared to that of his great Slav contemporaries, such as Pushkin, Mickiewicz, Kollár, and Mácha. Like Pushkin, Presêren finally moulded the Slovenian poetical language, on the basis of the main dialects, being a staunch opponent of the Illyrian movement which stood for fusion with Serbocroätian. In doing so, he created

classical masterpieces, such as his sonnets, which were also widely translated and so known abroad.

Meantime, while Prešeren and other writers were developing the expressive and literary powers of the language, the scholar and censor for the Austrian government, Jérnej Kopitar (1780-1844), another staunch opponent of the Illyrian movement, wrote the first scientific grammar of Slovenian, publishing it in 1808. He it was who encouraged Vuk Karadžić in his work of reform of the Serbo-croatian literary language.

Kopitar, like other "Romantics" of his time, paid serious attention to questions of length (i.e. quantity) in pronunciation in his writings (1809), as did Vödnik in his *Pismenost* (1811) and Prešeren in his carefully accented edition of his poems and Frànc Metelko in his scientific grammar of Slovenian (1825). His pupil, Matija Čop, who was also Prešeren's close friend, wrote only eight years later that the Slovenes had no accepted literary pronunciation, but that each spoke in his own dialect. He held up as an ideal that the literary language should be a compromise in pronunciation and spelling between the various main dialects.

Stanko Vraz (1810-51), a successful poet in Serbo-croatian, was on the other hand an enthusiastic supporter of the Illyrian movement, and believed in the abandonment of the Slovenian language and the complete linguistic fusion of his people with the Croats.

The need for a common literary language was, however, coming to be ever more strongly felt as the use of Slovenian spread more and more in public life in Slovenia. Some writers even proposed the adoption of a pronunciation exactly according to the spelling, so difficult was it for them to believe that the common people spoke better Slovenian than the semi-denationalized townspeople of the time.

It was not until 1839-46 that Jànez Bleiweis (1808-81) in his *Novíce*, succeeded in striking a true balance when he adopted Gāj's orthography (*gājica*) for his paper, while preserving the Slovenian language phonologically, grammatically and lexically. Modern Slovenian, such as we read to-day, with its simple spelling and its three accented consonants modelled on Czech: č, š, and ž—really dates from this great and decisive reform. After 1848, the unity of the literary language was more and more strongly advocated, and a wider basis, founded on all the dialects, was adopted. The writings of Trubar, Vödnik, Kopitar and Prešeren were taken as the chief

models. This movement was greatly helped by Matěj Cigalè and Lúka Svêtec, who formed a progressive group among the Slovenes in Vienna. Basing himself on pan-Slovenian and pan-Slavonic criteria, Cigalè among other things translated the Austrian Law Code into Slovenian. He was also a journalist, editing the paper *Slověnička*, and had great influence on the Slovenian school books of his time.

One of the most important reformers and creators of the modern Slovenian prose language was the scholar, writer, and poet, Fràn Lěvstik (1831-87). As a young man he suffered from his poverty and also for his liberal convictions. He wrote some successful poetry which was popular among the younger generation, but condemned by the priests. He managed to study for a while in Vienna under Miklošič, and was misled by the latter's belief that Old Slavonic was Old Slovenian. His enthusiasm for the old language caused him later rather to over-favour archaisms. He was a great admirer of the creator of modern Serbo-croatian, Vuk Karadžić, and of his pupil and follower, Đuro Džaničić, whose dictionary he regarded as a model of pure language and good syntax.

Lěvstik tried to restore the Slavonic character of Slovenian, regarding the language of the Národne pësme collected by Vuk Karadžić as examples of superb purity. But he did not try to identify Slovenian with Serbo-croatian, though he believed that they would ultimately flow together like two neighbouring streams. In his *Napàke slověnskega pisànja* (= Errors in written Slovenian), he pointed to the German basis in thought and construction of contemporary Slovenian ("we write Slovenian words, but think in German"), and advocated a restriction of the use of the Infinitive and passive constructions, the placing of the negative always before the verb and not after as in German, the freer use of Possessive adjectives instead of Genitives of nouns, the use of "móci" instead of "znáti" for "to be able," etc.

In 1862, he was editor of the short-lived paper *Naprěj*, run by the poet Vîlhar, to whose children he was also tutor for a time. This paper stood for the introduction of the general use of Slovenian in public life and as a language of instruction in the schools in Slovenia, for the unification of the Slovenes administratively, and even showed wide Yugoslav sympathies. After a short while it was suppressed, and Vîlhar was imprisoned. In 1868 Lěvstik started writing poetry again under the influence of a hopeless and unhappy love.

He later wrote a grammar of Slovenian in German

and collaborated for a while on Wolf's Slovenian-German dictionary, but lost his post through trying to make the dictionary scientific, while his collaborators were for making it "practical." He incurred, too, the jealousy of János Bleiweis, who was regarded as the chief authority on the language at that time. He also edited many works by other writers, including Prešeren, and by the time he died was one of the most influential men in the literature and thought of his countrymen and a prophet of the future Yugoslavia.

The last great reformer of Slovenian was really Father Stanišlav Škrábec (1844-1918), who devoted his life to careful criticism and scholarship. He taught that the basis of the literary language was the dialect of Dolénjsko and the writings of the Protestant writers of the sixteenth century, especially as regards morphology. He believed that, for models, the sixteenth century should be regarded as the oldest limit in time. The sound system, according to Škrábec, should be based on features common to most dialects, and where these differ, those features nearest the basic system should be chosen, often those also nearer Old Slavonic and Serbocroatian, but in keeping with the general Slovenian sound system. Other dialects would thus contribute mainly in vocabulary. The distinctive Slovenian vocabulary should be preserved; but no deliberate differentiation from Serbocroatian or Slavonic generally should be forced through, but rather borrowings, where necessary, from other Slavonic languages should be made. He was an opponent of Lévtstik's archaisms and believed in a "realistic" approach, basing his norms on the language as actually spoken. He believed that the orthography should be an "exact and beautiful photograph" of the pronunciation, but in certain cases supported Lévec's (see below) compromises with history.

The appearance in 1894-5 of the big Slovenian-German dictionary by Mäks Pletéršnik, now no longer covering the whole modern vocabulary but still very useful, and in 1899 of the *Pravopis* (= orthography) by Frän Lévec, based on Pletéršnik's dictionary, slowed down the process of fixing the literary language, as they did not follow Škrábec's principles, but introduced a system of compromise between historical and phonetic spelling. Among other things Lévec also advocated the pronunciation of all *l*'s as a clear *l* (and not *w*) contrary to the practice in most dialects, and thereby caused a long and heated controversy.

In 1912, the periodical *Véda* (= Science) carried out an inquiry as to whether the Slovenian language should be altogether dropped in favour of Serbocroatian under the pressure of the general movement for Yugoslav political unity. The answer proved to be, from all evidence, an emphatic "no"; and this was even confirmed in 1918 by Dr. F. flešič, regarded till then as a "neo-Illyrian," and also by Dr. Glónar and Dr. Brèznik.

A further important step in consolidation was made by the founding of the university of Ljubljána after the 1914-18 war.

Professor Bélic, from the Serbian side, wisely said that in Slovenia Serbocroatian merely had value as a further medium of spreading knowledge and culture.

The real heir of Škrábec's teachings was Dr. Antón Brèznik, whose grammar of Slovenian for schools first appeared in 1916, and whose *Pravopis* was first published in 1920, being based on the modern, pure, living language. This book he subsequently thoroughly revised, together with the authoritative scholar, Professor Frän Ramôvš, and republished it under their joint names as *Slovénski Pravopis* in 1935, after long preparatory studies by them and their distinguished colleagues, Dr. Ivan Gräfenauer, Dr. F. Kídríč, Professor R. Náhtigal, and Dr. Ívan Prijätelj. They were all members of a special orthographical commission set up by the Znántstveno društvo in Ljubljána, and they based their work on Slovenian writers since 1870.

It was after the 1914-18 war that the poet and dramatist, Óton Župánčič, finally won through with his contention that actors on the stage should speak naturally, in particular using the *w* (*u*) sound for the written *l* as in colloquial Slovenian. Previously this had only been admitted in lighter pieces, thereby leaving the stage as the disseminator of an artificial pronunciation.

In 1935 there appeared Dr. Józsa Glónar's important dictionary of the language (unaccented), which contained certain criticisms of the new *Pravopis*. But it can safely be said that Brèznik's grammar and the 1935 edition of the *Pravopis* finally decided not only the orthography but also the pronunciation of the literary language.

This language can be stated to be more distinct from its regional dialects than is the Serbocroatian literary language. The scholars Tomínšek and Bezják have even pointed out that the *conversational* language of educated Slovenes differs from both the

literary language and the dialects. They also show that the Slovenes are well aware that the real developers of a language are the constant stream of writers, poets, and journalists, and this can also be inferred from the statements and examples in Brèznik's grammar. The ultimate ideal is that the language should be expressive, accurate in differentiation and definition, and flexible.

Ever since Prešèren, throughout the nineteenth century and to our own day, there has been a steady stream of exceedingly interesting writers of prose and poetry in Slovenian, who followed the main trends of European literature of the time. Such were, to mention only a very few: Šimon Gregorčič, the gentle priest-poet; Antòn Àškerc, the balladist and lyric poet; and the "naturalist" woman novelist, Zòfka Kvèder (1878-1926). The moving writings of Ivan Cánkàr (1876-1918), and the really lovely, delicate poetry of Óton Župàncič formed a fitting climax to the steady stream of development and careful hard work, deep patriotic loyalty and sensitive self-development which we can find in abundance in all the greater works of Slovenian literature. This literature and its carefully tended literary language is a true reflection of a people, though small in numbers, yet great in spirit.

New school grammars appeared in 1947, 1956 (Bajec, Kolarič, Rupel) and 1966-68 (Toporišič), and an excellent and much expanded new *Slovènskì Pravopis* in 1950 and again in 1962. The first volume of *Slovar slovenskega knjižnega jezika* appeared in 1970, the second in 1975.

THE SLOVENIAN ALPHABET

Slovenian	Approx. English equivalent	
	(more open and forward than)	<i>a</i> <i>h</i>
A	a	
B	b	
C	c	<i>ts</i> pronounced together as in "bits"
Č	č	<i>ch</i> in "church"*
D	d	(dental)
E	e	<i>e</i> in "bet", <i>a</i> in "day", or <i>e</i> in "opera" (phonetic <i>ə</i>)
F	f	
G	g	<i>g</i> in "go"
H	h	<i>ch</i> in "loch"

Slovenian	Approx. English equivalent	
I	i	<i>ee</i> , <i>i</i> in "machine"
J	j	<i>y</i> in "yes" or in "boy", as in Serbo-cr. and West Slav
K	k	
L	l	<i>l</i> in "last" or <i>w</i> †
M	m	
N	n	(dental)†
O	o	<i>o</i> in "for"; French <i>ô</i> in "hôte"
P	p	
R	r	(rolled)§
S	s	<i>s</i> in "so"
Š	š	<i>sh</i> *
T	t	(dental)
U	u	<i>oo</i> in "boot"
V	v	<i>v</i> or <i>w</i> †
Z	z	
Ž	ž	<i>s</i> in "pleasure"*
	Qu	is rendered by <i>kv</i>
	X	is rendered by <i>ks</i>
	W	
	Y	are not ordinarily used

*The combination *šč* is quite frequent, = *shch* in "Ashchurch". See also below parts thus marked.

†See below, section on pronunciation, parts thus marked.

‡See below, section on pronunciation, parts thus marked

§r can be syllabic and is then pronounced *er* in educated conversational language, e.g.:—

between two consonants: *vřh* = summit
grmëti = to thunder.

or initially when accented: *řže* = neighs.

Initially before a consonant when unaccented it is also pronounced *er*, e.g.:—

rzáti (= to neigh)—three syllables!
rdëč (= red)—two syllables!

(This is much rarer in Serbo-cr. which has a true vocalic *r*: *řрати* (= to neigh), but *рѣница* (= rye bread).)

grād (= castle) pron. grāt, etc.

Toporišič recommends such a pronunciation in word juncture also when the following word begins with a voiced consonant or even with a vowel, e.g.

mlād mūc = a young pussy, pron. mla:t mu:t

mlād ōrel = a young eagle, " mla:t 'o:rel

But he explicitly *excludes* prepositions and verbal prefixes, e.g.

od mūca = from the pussy, pron. od 'mu:ʔa

od ōrla = from the eagle, pron. od 'o:rla

odnésti = to carry away, pron. od'ne:sti

The Consonants

The pronunciation of the consonants is straightforward, with the exception of the assimilations just mentioned. Regressive assimilation is the rule (i.e. the second consonant decides whether a group is voiced or unvoiced).

j plays the same rôle as *j* in Serbocroatian and West Slav.

r is rolled and can be syllabic, pronounced *er* (see above).

tr before the velars *k* and *g*, as in other South and West Slav languages, is pronounced *ŋ*, i.e. as *ng* in English "sing," e.g. ángel = angel.

*č, š, and ž are palatalized and pronounced with the tip of the tongue fairly well forward, allowing *živ* (= alive) to sound žīv, for instance (in contrast to Russian жив pron. žif) and šīti (= to sew) to sound šīti.

Only *l* and *v* present difficulties.

l before vowels is a clear "medium" *l* as in English "lend"; and *lj* can usually be similarly pronounced finally or before other consonants. Before vowels, as in the Instrumental singular of feminine nouns of the *i*-declension, e.g.:—

živäljo = animal,

adjectives such as—

kobilji = mare's (adj.),

nouns in -lje, e.g.:—

povelje = command,

(all going back to *l̥vj*), *lj* are pronounced as *ji*. Colloquially, however, in e.g. Ljubljana, one often hears [lu'blana]

with medium *l*'s. Finally and before consonants a palatalized *l̥* [l̥], as in Russian, is pronounced, e.g. põlj = of fields, põljski = field (adj.).

but *l* finally, e.g. in

bīl (je) = he was, and

umīl (je) = he died

or usually before other consonants, e.g.:—

pōln = full

budīlnik = alarm clock

is pronounced as *u*, like a weak English *u*, e.g.:—

bīl, pron. beew (phon.: bīu)

umīl phon. u'meʔu (three syllables), etc.

tr + *j* are similarly pronounced as *nj* before vowels, as in— e.g. sánjati = to dream the Instr. sing. of fem. *i*-stems ending in *nj*, e.g.:—

z dlanjō = palm of the hand,

the Nom. plur. of nouns such as

tržánje = inhabitants of a small town, and adjectives such as

jelénji = deer's (adj.)

Finally and before consonants *nj* represents a single sound, palatalized *n*, (phon. *ŋ*), e.g.:—

kōnj = horse

kōnjski = horse's

Before the velars *k* and *g* *nj* is pronounced *ŋ*: mājka, pron. māŋka = is lacking

tv is pronounced as a labio-dental *v*, as in English, initially and medially before a vowel, as in—

vōda = water,

sevēda = of course

and before *r* and (initial) *l*:—

vrābec = sparrow

vlāda = government

also between *r* and *j*:—

črvjē = worms

Before other consonants and finally after a vowel (including vocalic *r*) it also, like *l*, is pronounced bilabially: *ʋ* (English *w*), e.g.:—

vsāk (= every), pron. *ʋsāk* or *wsāk* (*w un-voiced!*)
óvca (= sheep), pron. *óʋtsa*
prāv (= just, right), pron. *prāʋ* (like English "prow")
čfv (= worm), pron. *čēfv!*

(This *w* sound can develop further into a vocalic *u* before agglomerations of consonants and between consonants (also of separate words), as in:—

vzpostáviti = to restore, pron. *uspostáviti*,
predvsēm = above all, pron. *predusēm*.)

Thus words ending in a vowel + *l* can rhyme with those ending in a vowel + *v*, e.g. in *Župānčič*: *zdrāv*, *znāl*; *běl*, *cjev*.

The pronunciation of the preposition *v* follows the above rules:—

v ústa (= into the mouth), pron. *vústa*
v rōki (= in the hand), pron. *vrōki*

but

grēm v šōlo (= I am going to school),
 pron. *grēm u šōlo*,

as opposed to

tjà v šōlo (= there to school), pron. *tjà ʋ šōlo*

Exactly the same rules of pronunciation are applied to all initial *u*'s except before *v*, *l* and before vowels, e.g. *ulomíti* = to break off, pron. *ul-* (See "Features characteristic of Slovenian," No. 18.)

Double consonants in writing, also in word juncture, should be pronounced as single but long consonants. E.g.:—

oddáti = to give away
izzvāti = to challenge
pollétje = half-year
tí boš šél = you will go
jáz sam mīslil = I thought
òn nōe = he does not want to

The Vowels

The vowels are not difficult to pronounce in the case of *a* (open, as in other Slav languages), *u* (closed and with lip-rounding, as in other Slav languages), and *i* (like French *i* in "ici," or English *i* in "machine"). The latter two vowels are pronounced less clearly when not stressed. (There is no *é/y* (*ʏ*) sound in Slovenian.)

The letters *o* and *e*, however, require a choice of alternatives which embarrass the foreign learner, even if he is a Slav.

o can be pronounced open or closed. It is pronounced *open* and *long* where the accent has shifted on to it from the subsequent syllable, cf.:—

Russian: *конѣц*, *окно́*, *вои́на*
 Slovenian: *kónec*, *ókno*, *vóda*

This open *o* is indicated in modern grammars and dictionaries by an *ô*.

Short open ô occurs only in final syllables and monosyllables, e.g.:—

otrôk = child
nôž = knife

o is pronounced *long closed*, as in French *hôte* or as in German *rot* (a pure vowel) when derived from Common Slav *o* (Old Slavonic *ъ*), corresponding to *y* in Russian, Ukrainian, and Serbo-croatian (and in this case was marked *o* in Pletéršnik's dictionary), or when derived from a Common Slav *o* when the accent has *not* shifted (marked *o* and *q* in Pletéršnik's dictionary), e.g.:—

pôt, now *pôt* = road
môka, now *môka* = flour
 (na)rôkq, now rôkq = hand (Acc. sing.)
gospôd = master, Mr.
ôni = they

o and *o* therefore have the same phonetic value, but indicate a different origin, interesting for comparative purposes. (See also above, "The System of Accentuation.") In modern works on Slovenian they are indicated by *ô* (and *o*).

Short closed ô occurs only before final *l*, e.g.:—

vól (= ox), pron. vól^u

Unstressed *o* is usually a little more closed than in Serbocroatian.

e is pronounced *open* and *long* (like *ê* in French "tête") in words where the accent has shifted on to it from the subsequent syllable, cf.:—

Russian: cecpá, жéна
Slovenian: séstra, žéna

It is also pronounced *open* and *short* in some monosyllables, e.g.:—

měč = sword
lěv = lion

Long open *e* is indicated in modern Slovenian grammars and dictionaries as *ê*.

e is pronounced *closed* and *long* (as *é* in French *été* or the first *e* in German *sehen*) when derived from—

Common Slav *e* (with no accent shift), or
Common Slav *ę* (Old Slav. *а*), or
Common Slav *ě* (Old Sl. *ѣ*).

See "The System of Accentuation" above.
E.g.:—

from *e*—
mēd = honey
šest = six

from *ę*—
ręd = order
desēt = ten
vzēti = to take

from *ě*—
děl = part
lēs = wood
lěto = year
hlěbec = small loaf

Before *r* this *e* sounds particularly closed, almost like *i*, e.g.:—

večer = evening
véra = faith
prešeren poet's name

Pletéršnik distinguishes *e* derived from *ě* by marking it *e*, as opposed to *ę* for *e* from *e* or *ę*. Some modern works on Slovenian indicate all three, irrespective of intonation, by *é*.

As with *ę* and *o*, there is no phonetic difference in literary Slovenian between *ę* and *e*; but they indicate a different origin.

Short closed e occurs only before *j*:—

iměj! = have...! (Imperative)

e, however, is also used to represent a sixth vowel sound, totally absent from Serbocroatian, but common enough in English, French, German, Russian, and Bulgarian—namely, the so-called "neutral vowel," rendered in phonetics *ə* or in Bulgarian *ъ*, the sound of "er" in Southern English "butter," or of the second *e* in German "sehen," or of the second *a* in Russian *яна*.

This *e* (printed in Pletéršnik's dictionary as an italic *e*) generally represents in Slovenian the semi-vowels *ъ* and *ь* of Common Sl. and Old Sl., e.g.:—

vèn = outside — O.S. вѣнь = out
pēs = dog — O.S. пѣсъ
vēs = all — O.S. вѣсь
sestáviti = to compose — O.S. съставити
sláven = glorious — O.S. славънь

But old stressed semi-vowels, when long, develop into full vowels in Slovenian, e.g.:—

dān = day—O.S. днь
vās = village—O.S. вьсь (cf. вьсь = all, above!)

Unstressed *e* is pronounced either *ə*, or *ε* (short *e* as in English "yet"), according to its derivation, e.g.:—

but sláven (from славънь), pron. 'sláven (= glorious),
veselí (from веселитъ), pron. vesɛ'lí (= pleases)
Only a knowledge of Slavonic etymology can be a guide as to the three main alternative pronunciations of *e* in Slovenian.

N.B.—In the examples throughout this section we print *ə* for Slovenian *e* when pronounced as the neutral vowel to remind the student of the correct pronunciation. He should bear in mind, however, that this *ə* is never used in ordinary Slovenian print.

C.S. vocalic *ъ*, *ь* (O.S. *рь*) are generally pronounced as Slovenian vocalic *r* (usually pronounced *er*) e.g.:—

vřh (= summit)—O.S. vřxъ

while C.S. vocalic *l*, *l'* (O.S. лъ, лъ) become -ol- in Slovenian, e.g.:—

vřlk = wolf (pron. vořk)

přln = full—C.Sl. pl'nъ, O.S. плнь, etc.

C.S. rъ, rъ also become Slovenian vocalic r:—

krvř = blood, Gen. sing.

křst = baptism

C.S. lъ, lъ likewise become ol, like *l*, *l'*:—

přlt = complexion

sřlza = tear

All the vowels can form diphthongs with *j* (*i*) or *u* (spelt *i* or *u*), except *e* (spelt *e*) with *j*, e.g.:—

zdřj = now dřl = gave prřv = just (adv.)

precřj = rather břl = white cřv = pipe

videl* = saw

krřj = cover! břl = was (m.) sřv = grey

nřsil* = carried,

wore (m.)

přokj = peace vřl = ox duřv = of spirits

rřkov = of crayfish(pl.)

vřruj = guard! obřl = he put on --

(Imperat.) (footwear)

přsel (-eř) = business, molitev (-eř) = prayer

třpel (-eř) = warm (m.)

nřsel*(-eř) = carried (m.)

* In the masc. sing. Past Participle Active, spelt with final -l, the diphthongs [eř, iř, eř] can be reduced to [u] in colloquial speech.

(See also above paragraphs on the pronunciation of *i* and *u*.)

The Accents (Intonations) in Slovenian.

Slovenian is considered to have a musical accent, as is Serbocroatian, but its system is different and in fact more archaic. This makes the position of the accent in Slovenian agree somewhat more closely with that of Russian and East Slav generally and Bulgarian, especially in finally stressed verbs, in contrast to Serbocroatian in which the accent has generally shifted by one syllable nearer the beginning of the word. Any syllable in the word may be stressed, as in Russian and Bulgarian, e.g.:—

svřt = world, Gen. sing. svřtř
grřd = castle, " " grřda or gradu

krřlj = king, Gen. sing. krřlja

and may be rising or falling, except final short syllables which always have *`* (short falling).

Literary Slovenian, unlike Serbocroatian, has only the one short accent, the short falling marked *`* (in contrast to Serbocr. *`*), mostly occurring on final syllables (never accented in Serbocr.), e.g.:—

brřt = brother

břb = bean

męglř = mist

deskř = plank

It is really a short *rise-fall* and is noticeably longer and less abrupt than *`* in Serbocr.

Thus it can be inferred that, except in the case of final syllables, the choice of accent is usually only between the two long ones: long rising marked *`*, or long falling marked *`*. This makes Slovenian more similar in accent system to English, German, and Russian, which generally associate length with stress. There are also no unaccented ("subsequent") long syllables in literary Slovenian in contrast to Serbocroatian, Czech, and Slovak.

`* usually represents a shifted accent as compared with Russian (e.g. sřstra = sister, vřda = water), while *` represents an original accent preserved (e.g. gospřd = Mr., Russian: rocnřnř) usually on monosyllables or on the second syllable of polysyllables. Monosyllabic prepositions and prepositional prefixes, when preceding words with *`*, cause this accent to shift by one syllable nearer the beginning of the word, e.g.:—

vřdř = water (Acc.) but na vřdř,

dobřl = got but pridřbil = won

It should also be pointed out that the differences between long and short vowels and rising and falling intonations are less clearly preserved and audible in the Slovenian literary language than in Serbocroatian.

While the long falling accent *`* in Slovenian is similar to that in Serbocr., though it has a smaller range of fall and is shorter, the Slovenian long rising accent *`* is noticeably shorter and of smaller range than *`* in Serbocr. But, as in the latter language, the syllable after a rising accent usually remains on a high pitch, while after a falling accent it is usually on a low pitch. The syllable before a falling accent, on the other hand, is as a rule pronounced with high pitch. (The intonations, however,

are confined to the central dialects and are therefore not demanded as essential in any schools.)

Only compound words, felt as such, can have *two* accents, e.g. *pòpredsèdnik* = vice-president; *nèprijeten* = unpleasant, *prábálica* = great grandmother; *pètindvájseti* = twentyfifth.

COMPARISON OF SLOVENIAN AND SERBOCROATIAN ACCENTS

The correspondence of the Slovenian accents to those of Serbocroatian is worth noting:—

I. Original Common Slav [˘] (long rising) is preserved in position in Slovenian medially, and finally when it becomes [˘], while in Serbocroatian it is preserved in position (as [˘]) only medially, but if originally final, shifts one syllable back, e.g.:—

Slovenian: *měra* = to measure Serbocr.: *m(j)ěpa*

Slovenian: *gíniti* = to disappear Serbocr.: *gínuti* = to perish

Finally: Slovenian: *bràt* = brother Serbocr.: *brātr*

Medially [˘] becomes [˘] in Slovenian in certain cases, viz.:—

in closed syllables, e.g.:—

Slovenian: *bítka* = battle Serbocr.: *bitka*

before suffixes, e.g.:—

Slovenian: *gōba* = sponge but *gōbec* = snout in the Present tense >< the Infinitive, e.g.:—

Slovenian: *vídeti* = to see but *vídím* = I see cf. Serbocr. *videti*, *vidím*

and in certain participles, e.g.:—

Slovenian: *víden* = seen Serbocr.: *viđen*

In terminations Slovenian preserves original Common Slav [˘], while Serbocroatian shifts it one syllable nearer the beginning of the word, making it into [˘] if the syllable is short, keeping it [˘] if the syllable is long, e.g.:—

Slovenian: <i>lisíca</i> = fox	Serbocr.: <i>lišica</i>
" <i>žélím</i> I wish	" <i>žèlím</i>
but " <i>hvalíti</i> = to praise	" <i>hváliti</i>

II. Original Common Slav final (short) [˘] may be preserved in Slovenian or may be shifted on to the preceding syllable, when it is preserved as [˘] only on the semi-vowel *e* or on *ę* (from *k*) in dialects—otherwise it becomes [˘]. In Serbocroatian it always shifts on to the preceding syllable, becoming [˘] on short

syllables and [˘] on long syllables, e.g.:—

Common Slav	<i>měglà</i>
Russian	<i>mr̃na</i> = (heavy) mist, darkness
Slovenian	<i>měglà</i> , or (dial.) <i>měgla</i> = mist
Serbocr.	<i>mārna</i>
Slovenian	<i>světěl</i> , or (dial.) <i>svètěl</i> = bright
Serbocr.	<i>svěrna</i> (but masc. sing. only <i>svěrao</i>)
but Slovenian	<i>plāžen</i> , or <i>plāžen</i> = shy
	<i>trpi</i> , or <i>trpi</i> = suffer
cf. Russian	<i>голова́</i>
Slovenian	<i>gláva</i>
Serbocr.	<i>gláva</i>
but Czech	<i>hlava</i> (short <i>a</i>)
Russian	<i>душа́</i>
Slovenian	<i>dúša</i>
Serbocr.	<i>dýma</i>
but Czech	<i>duše</i> (short <i>u</i>)
Russian	<i>молоко́</i>
Slovenian	<i>mléko</i>
Serbocr.	<i>mléko</i>
and Czech	<i>mléko</i>

This is the origin of the open *e* and *o* in Slovenian.

Cf. Russian	<i>село́</i> = village
Slovenian	<i>sélo</i> = settlement
Serbocr.	<i>село</i> = village
Russian	<i>окно́</i> = window
Slovenian	<i>ókno</i> = window

Some verbal forms preserve final [˘]: e.g.:—

Slovenian: <i>kipèl</i> (je) = was boiling	cf. Serbocr.: <i>kúneo</i> (je)
" <i>puščèn</i> = released,	
" <i>iskàl</i> (je) = was seeking	" <i>nyúhen</i>
	" <i>ýckao</i> (je)

III. Original Common Slav [˘] (long falling) is preserved in Slovenian on monosyllables and on the second syllable of polysyllables. (This always corresponds to a falling accent in Serbocroatian, either [˘] or [˘]—on the preceding syllable in the case of polysyllables.) E.g.:—

Slovenian: <i>grād</i> = castle	Serbocr.: <i>grād</i> = town
Gen. sg. <i>gradū</i>	Gen. sg. <i>grāna</i>
" <i>nōč</i> = night	" <i>noč</i>
Gen. sg. <i>noči</i>	Gen. sg. <i>noči</i>

Slovenian: gospôd = master Serbocr.: rōcōdīn = the Lord
" mesō " mēco

(For the shift of this accent in Slovenian after prepositions, etc., see p. 327.)

THE SLOVENIAN DIALECTS

As will be seen from the Introduction, the Slovenian literary language is based mainly on the dialect of Dolēnjsko (Lower Carniola, Unterkrain in German), with a borrowing of the pure vowels of the dialect of Gorēnjsko (Upper Carniola), its northern neighbour. Ljubljāna is situated just within the borders of Gorēnjsko.

The most important feature of these central (and some western) dialects is the so-called Modern Vowel Reduction, which spread there in the seventeenth century. Unstressed and short vowels began to weaken and even disappear in pronunciation, and dark / (ʔ) came to be pronounced as *u*. This we can hear in the dialect of Ljubljāna to the present day: mēš for miš (= mouse), nāc for nič (= nothing), pālca for pālca (= stick), dāu for dāi (= he gave). One of the features peculiar to the Dolēnjsko dialect is the infinitive without the final -i. The dialects of Dolēnjsko and Nōtranjsko also pronounce accented long *e* as *ie* but *e* as *ei*, and accented long *o* as *uo*, but *o* almost as *ū*. But Gorēnjsko does not know these distinctions.

The other dialects, though interesting to the specialist in Slavonic, have not played so important a part in the formation of the Slovenian literary language, except to contribute vocabulary.

Perhaps the most interesting of the other dialects is that of Carinthia (Korōško), which has certain features such as the preservation, in certain regions, of the groups -*tl-*, -*dl-*, and the ending -*e* for adjectives in the neut. sing., e.g. dobre mleko (= good milk), which seem to point to its being a transition stage to West Slav. But in the dialect of Rōž, in Carinthia, the archaic final stresses such as are preserved in Russian жерá, семná, etc., also survive, and can be compared to the accents in Serbocr. *žakavština*, e.g. žená.

Very curious, too, is the dialect of Prekmúrje with its strangely distorted vowels, *ö* and *ü*, e.g. in šürki, vólki for širóki (= broad), vëliki (= great), túji for tíhi! (= quiet), and consonants, as in gëtra for jëtra (= liver), graj for gráh (= pea), and vúra for úra (= hour). In other respects it is a transi-

tion to Croātian.

The dialects of Slovenian are far more difficult to understand when spoken than the dialects of the plain-dwelling Slavs, such as the Russians or the Poles, or even those of the Serbs and Croāts. This is doubtless due to the geographical barriers in Slovenian territory, which have tended to keep the dialects apart and encourage differences to arise.

VOWEL GRADATION AND VOWEL LENGTHENING

In common with the other Slavonic languages, Slovenian possesses the familiar Indo-European feature of vowel gradation or Ablaut:—

Examples:—

dōh = spirit—dehníti = to breathe

bérem—bráti = I collect, read—to collect, read, Infin.

nésem—nosíti = I am carrying—to carry, Frequentative Infin.

víti —véneć or vénec = to weave—wreath

lêzem—láziti = I creep—Freq. Infin.

Lengthening of vowels is also a common feature in Slovenian:—

Examples:—

vōzim—prevāžati = I convey—to transport

mřem (from mřem)—umírati = I die—to die

dehníti—dihati (from dyxati) = to breathe, Pfv.—Impfv.

napōj—napājati = watering (of cattle)—to water

SLAVONIC CHARACTERISTICS

1. Metathesis of Indo-European syllables with *e* or *o* + liquid (*r* or *l*), as in other South Slav languages. Cf.:—

C.S. *golva Slovenian: gláva = head

Germ. Bart " bráda = beard

C.S. *mel-ti " mléti = to grind

Germ. Berg " brēg = bank, mountain slope

2. The 1st Palatalization is also common in Slovenian, *k*, *g*, *h*, changing to *č*, *ž*, *š* before *i*, *e*, and *a*. E.g.:—

rōka—ročica = hand—little hand

drūg—družina = companion—family, household

grēh—grešiti—grēšen = sin—to sin—sinful

pekó (3rd pers. plur. Pres.) = they bake,—
pěčem = I bake
uhô = ear—ušesa (Gen. sing.)

c also changes to *č* before *i* and *e*. E.g.:—

resnica = truth—uręsnřiti = to realize
pěvec = singer—pěvčev = singer's (adj.)

3. The 2nd Palatalization survives only in the Imperative of certain verbs, but has been lost in declensions through analogy with other cases in nearly all nouns with stem ending in a velar. Thus *k*, *g*, (*h*) change to *c*, *ž*, (*s*) (*h* > *s* only in dialects):—

pěči = to bake (root pek-)—pěci!
vręči = to throw (root vrg-)—vřzi!
(dial. trěbuh = belly—Nom. plur. trebúsi)
otrčk = child—Nom. plur. otróci is an exception, cf. the regular

gręšnik = sinner, Nom plur.
gręsniki.

vôlk = wolf, has Nom. plur. volcję as well as volkôvi

(The forms družega, družih from drųg = another, are false colloquial forms and should not be used.)

4. *Yotation*, or the influence of *j* on consonants. The velars *k*, *g*, *h* change to *č*, *ž*, *š*, as in other Slavonic languages. E.g.:—

plákati = weep —pláčęš (2nd pers. sg.

Pres., from *plakješ)

lagáti = to tell lies—lážęš (2nd pers. sg.

Pres.)

dôh = spirit —dúša = soul (<duhja)

přhati = to blow —přšęš (2nd pers. sg.

Pres.) or přhaš

The dentals *t* and *d* change to *č* and *ž*—the latter a *feature peculiar* to Slovenian. E.g.:—

světiti = to shine—svęča = candle

požlatřti = to gild —pozlačęn = gilded

rodřti = to bear —rôjen = born

C.S. *medja, Slovenian méja = frontier.

The sibilants *s* and *z* change to *š* and *ž*:—

tesáti = to hew —téšęš (2nd pers. sing. Pres.)

kázati = to show—kážęš (2nd pers. sing. Pres.)

břzų = quickly—břžę = more quickly

The liquids *l* and *r* and *n* take *j* (see above on *l*+*j* and *n*+*j* under "Pronunciation—The Consonants"). E.g.:—

volřti = to chose, wish—vôlja = will

hranřti = to preserve, feed—hránjen (Past Part. Pass.)

oráti = to plough—óřjem (as well as: orám)
= I plough

The labials *b*, *p*, *m*, *v*, add *lj*. E.g.:—

ljubřti = love ljúblijen = loved

kápati = drip káplja = a drop

lomřti = break lómljen = broken

pozdráviti = to greet pozdrávlijen = greeted

c changes to *č*:—

kľicati = to call—kľičem = I call

st, *sd* + *j* become *šč*, *ž* respectively—the latter another peculiarity of Slovenian, e.g.:—

krstřti = christen křščen = christened

zagozdřti = to fasten zagožęn = wedged tight with a wedge

sk + *j* also becomes *šč*, e.g.:—
iskáti = to seek íščem = I seek

5. The loss of consonants in Slovenian is illustrated in many peculiarly Slovenian examples, as well as in those common to all Slavonic languages.

Beside—

sęn = sleep from *sępnę

šęl = went " *šędlę

vřme = weather " *vřtmę

we have—

čęz = through " *čřez

storřti = to do " *stvoriti

třd = hard " *tvřd

vřęč = to one's liking, pleasing " *vřšęč

lås = a hair " *vlas

zlåsti = especially " *izvlasti

6. Epenthesis. Consonants are inserted in certain cases only:—

nj in the full forms of the 3rd pers. Personal Pronoun: njęga = him.

An initial *v* is occasionally added to words beginning with a vowel, as in East and West Slav, e.g.:—

vôgel = 1. corner, 2. coal
 vòzel = knot
 vòhati = to smell (transitive)

FEATURES CHARACTERISTIC OF SLOVENIAN

(Those marked * are peculiarly Slovenian)

- *1. C.S. *tj*, *dj* become *č*, *j* respectively:
 svěča = candle
 rójen = born
 méja = boundary
2. C.S. *kt*, *gt* + *i* or *ь* both become *č* (cf. Russian):

noč = night, Gen. sing. noči
 moč = strength

3. *t* and *d* are dropped before *l*:—

plèl = wove (as well as plétel)
 sàl = went
 pàl = fell (as well as pàdel)
 krílo = wing
 molíti = to pray

Plétel, pàdel are later forms, formed by analogy with the present plétem, pàdem; also to be met with in the Carinthian dialect (see above—"Slovenian Dialects").

4. Metathesis only—no "polnoglasie" as in Russian—see above "Slavonic Characteristics."

5. As in other South and East Slav languages, original C.S. *kv*, *gv* become *cv*, *zv*:—

cvèt = flower
 zvězda = star

6. Labials + *j* have *lj*, as in East Slav (see "Slavonic Characteristics," No. 4), e.g.:—

zémlja = earth

- *7. The nasal vowels, O.S. *а* and *я*, develop into *e* and *o* (both may be closed) respectively:—

rěd = order
 pòt = way

8. C.S. *y* (O.S. *ѣ*) develops into *i*, as in Serbo-Croatian, Macedonian and Bulgarian:—

mísel = thought
 bíti = to be

- *9. Both *ь* and *ъ* develop into *ə*, or sometimes—when long under stress—into *a*:—

vès = all
 vèn = outside

but—

vàs = village
 dân = day
 dálnem = I breathe (Infin. dehníti)

10. C.S. *ě* (O.S. *ѣ*) becomes *ə*, as in Serbo-Croatian:—

cvět

11. C.S. vocalic *l* and *r* (*l̥*, *r̥*), O.S. *лъ*, *ль*, *рь*, *рь* become *ol*, *r* (vocalic) respectively:—

vôlk = wolf
 pîst = finger

12. Regressive assimilation of consonants (i.e. the second deciding whether a group is voiced or unvoiced). This is the general rule of pronunciation, as in other Slav languages, but is not much shown in Slovenian spelling, e.g.:—

z besědo = with a word but—s prijāteljem = with a friend
grizem = I bite but grísti = to bite

but—

kdó (pron. gđó) = who?
 gládko (pron. glátko) = smoothly
 doljčba (pron. dolčzba) = appointment, decision
 glāšba (pron. glāzba) = music (cf. p. 319-20)

13. Infinitives with velar roots, e.g. C.S. *pekti, *mogti, have *č* in Slovenian (as in Russian—cf. No. 2):—

péči = to bake
 móči = to be able

14. Contraction of vowels. In Slovenian the stressed vowel predominates, e.g.:—

gospá, from gospojà = lady

also—

igráš se, from *igráješ se = you play
 nòčem " *nehòčem (but = I do not want also nêčem)
 nîmam, " *neîmam = I have not
 báti se, " *bojáti se = to fear

*15. *e* (pron. *ə*) used as "fill-vowel" between consonants:—

ógenj (Gen. sing. ognja) = fire
 sester (Gen. plur. of sestra) = of sisters
 vëter (Gen. sing. vëtra) = wind
 ísker (Gen. plur. of ískra) = of sparks
 děkel (Gen. plur. of děkla) = of girls

16. The palatalized consonants *j*, *lj*, *nj*, *c*, *č*, *ž*, *ž* must generally be followed by front vowels:—

králjem; kónjem (Instr. sg.) > < sélom, méstom
 = king; horse = site, settlement; place, town

but not in the Instr. sing. of *a*-stem nouns:—

z vódo, *s postâjo* = with water; with the station

But Slovenian, like Russian and Serbocroatian, changes original *k* to *a* after the *chuintantes*: *č*, *š*, *ž*, e.g.:—

bežáti from *běžēti = to flee

*17. Original palatalized *r* becomes *rj* (pronounced separately):—

morjē (O.S. *морѣ*) = sea

18 *v* and *l* at the end of words and syllables, and *v* and *u* before consonants initially, especially after a word ending in a vowel, are pronounced *u* (= *w*), as in Ukrainian (cf. Polish *u*, also Lusatian, Slovak and Byelorussian):—

délał pron. děla^u = worked
 rápav " rápa^u = wrinkled
 vstáti " ūstáti = to get up
 tā ūčenec " ta ūčēnec = this pupil

19. Initial *je* is preserved as a general rule, e.g.:—

jězero = lake

ěden, before nouns *ěn*, (= one) forms an exception.

20. Partial loss of 2nd Palatalization (see "Slavonic Characteristics," No. 3).

21. Free accent (see "The Accents in Slovenian," p. 326).

¹But *u* before *r*, *l*, as before vowels, is pronounced as a full vowel. See p. 322.

*22 Closed *e* and *o* (see above—"Pronunciation")—peculiar closed vowel quality unknown in other Slavonic literary languages.

23. Freer use of the Infinitive than in Serbocroatian and Bulgarian.

24. Pronunciation of *lj* and *nj* as *li* and *ni* before vowels, e.g. in the Instr. sing. of feminine *i*-stems, adjectives formed from the names of animals, and Nom. plur. in *-je* of certain masculine nouns. (See "Pronunciation"—the consonants.)

25. Assimilation of *šs* to *š*, as in Serbocroatian:—

čěški (for čěšski) = Czech

*26. Reduction of *dn* to *n*, cf. Byelorussian:—

brězno = abyss
 ěn, for ěden = one

*27. Simplification of *ts* to *s*:—

bogāstvo (for bogatstvo) = riches
 posěstvo (for posedstvo) = possession, property

28. The modern change of *kt*, *gt* to *ht* (cf. Russian pronunciation of *кто* as *xto*):—

lahtí, Dual and Plur. of láket = elbow
 nĥta, Gen. sing. of nĥt, ¹ from nog- = nail
 nihčē, from nihčtože = no one

29. Dissimilation of *k* and *g* before *k* (cf. Russian *мѣркий*, pron. *мѣркии*):—

láhka (fem. sing.) = light hence masculine láhek, cf. pol lekkí
 mēhka " " = soft " " méhek
 plēhka " " = insipid " " plēhek (also plígek)
 hkráti, for k kráti = at the same time

30. Assimilation of *nb* to *mb*:—

braníti = to defend obrāmba = defence
 premeníti = to change spremēmba = a change

*31. Change of *d* to *j* before *s* and *š*:—

grād = castle adjective: grájski
 Blēd (place-name) " blējski
 enájst = eleven } Cf. Bulgarian
 dvājset = twenty

¹Formerly *nĥet*.

hūd = angry, Comparative: hūjši
mlād = young " mlājši

32. Change of ž to r (cf. Serbocr. jěp for jeme):—

mōrem, for možem = I can
kđor, for kdož = who (Relative)

MORPHOLOGY

The morphology of Slovenian is distinctive in that, in contrast to all the other living Slavonic languages except Lusatian,¹ it has preserved the Dual number throughout its declensions and conjugations. This, of course, greatly increases the number of cases that the foreign learner has to memorize in the declensions, even though the Genitive and Locative Plural are now the same as the Genitive and Locative Plural for all nouns, adjectives and pronouns, except the 1st and 2nd person Personal Pronouns. In the verbs the 2nd and 3rd person Dual are now identical, in contrast to Old Slavonic; but a new distinction has arisen: the endings in -a (-va for 1st pers. Dual, and -ta for the 2nd and 3rd pers. Dual) are used for masculine subjects and those in -e (-ve for 1st and -te for 2nd and 3rd pers. Dual) are used for feminine and neuter. To the latter there are special corresponding feminine and neuter forms of the 1st and 2nd pers. Personal Pronoun—*mādve* = we two (fem.), as opposed to *mādva* (masc. or mixed genders); *vādve* = you two (fem. and neut.), in contrast to *vādva* (masc. or mixed genders). In the plural, too, Slovenian also has the peculiar forms *mē* for "we" (fem.) as opposed to *mī* (masc.), and correspondingly *vē* for "you" (fem.) as opposed to *vī* (masc.).

The use of the Dual number is fully alive in modern literary Slovenian—it is used quite naturally when referring to two words taking a certain ending, for example—and once the habit of thinking in it is acquired (especially easy for married people), it seems quite easy and natural; and the grammatical cases answering this need provide the corresponding forms so required. (Use of the plural instead *may* cause misunderstandings.)

The Instrumental case, like the Locative, is only used with prepositions, as in Lusatian. To express the plain instrument by which something is done, the preposition *s/z* is used. Cf. *z aviónom* = by plane (air mail), with Serbocr. *Aviónom*.

¹and Kashubian (Polish dialect).

(In the following tables the full accentuation is given wherever I have been able to find it indicated, as it is advisable for the foreign learner at least to *know* of the existence of the intonational distinctions, if not to reproduce them. I am grateful to Professor F. Ramôvš for his valuable assistance on accents.)

THE DECLENSION OF NOUNS

As in Russian and Serbocroatian, owing to the disappearance of the *ŭ*- and *ŭ*-stems, four main types of declension exist in Slovenian:—

<i>ŷ</i> -stems	all feminine,
consonant stems	neuter, except for two—with the endings, however, of neuter <i>o</i> -stems,
<i>a</i> -stems	largely feminine,
<i>o</i> -stems	masculine (ending in a consonant) and neuter (ending in - <i>o</i> or - <i>e</i>)

The three genders are thus preserved, but, as in Russian and Slovak, special forms for the Vocative (sing.) case have been lost. The Dual, as already mentioned, has the same endings for nouns in the Gen. and Loc. as the plural, but endings of its own for the Nom. and Acc. (identical to each other) and the Dat. and Instr. (also identical to each other).

In the plural all the cases of fem. and neut. nouns have different endings except the Nom. and Acc. (as in Russian and West Slav); but in masc. nouns (as in Serbocr.) the Nom. and Acc. are distinguished by preserving distinct (originally soft stem) endings.

1. *ŷ*-stems, all feminine. Those accented in most of the cases on the last syllable have different endings in the Dat., Instr. and Loc., Dual and Plural from those not so accented. Therefore cf.:—

	nit = thread kōst = bone	
	Singular	Dual Plural
Nom.	nīt kōst	nīti kōstī nīti kōstī
Gen.	nīti kōstī	nīti kōstī nīti kōstī
Dat.	nīti kōstī	nītma kōstēma nītīm kōstēm
Acc.	nīt kōst	nīti kōstī nīti kōstī
Instr.	nītjo kōstjō	nītma kōstēma nītīm kōstēm
Loc.	nīti kōstī	nīti kōstē nīti kōstē

The many nouns in -ost follows nīt, e.g. rádōst = joy.

Nouns such as *misel* (míseu) = thought, *bolâzen* = illness, which have the neutral vowel in their final syllable in the Nom. sing., have the endings *-ijo* in the Instr. sing., *-ima* in Dat. and Instr. Dual and *-imi* in Instr. plur., e.g.:—

Instr. sing.	míslíjo, bolêzníjo
Dat., Instr. Dual	míslíma, bolêzníma
Instr. plur.	míslími, bolêzními

But those ending in *-ev* (eu) only follow this rule in the Instr. sing., e.g.:—

s *cêrkvíjo* = with the church

Their Gen. sing. ends in *-ve*: *cêrkve*, a survival from the old long *û*-stems. In the Dual and Plural they follow the *a*-stems (see below).

Note also: *krî* (from **kry*, cf. Latin *cruor* = blood), which has an irregular Nom. sing.—Gen. sing. *krvî*, Dat. Loc. s. *křvi*. It is declined like *kôst*. The old masc. *û*-stems have only left their trace in certain masc. Nom. plurals *-je*:—

gospôdje = gentlemen
golôbje = pigeons
 (otherwise *o*-stems, see below).

Ljudjê (= people) has alone preserved the original masc. plur. endings:—

Nom.	<i>ljudjê</i>	Acc.	<i>ljudi</i>
Gen.	<i>ljudi</i>	Instr.	<i>ljudmí</i>
Dat.	<i>ljudem</i> (and <i>-em</i>)	Loc.	<i>ljudeh</i>

Pôt = (road) is now either masc., when it has Gen. sing. *pôta*, or fem., when it has Gen. sing. *pôti*. In the plural it is either neuter—*pôta*, or fem. *pôti*.

Accentuation

The general rule to follow is to keep the accent the same as in the Nom. sing. throughout the declension, but to note the exceptions and changes that occur. Here, of course, only the main ones are noted.

Monosyllables or nouns with final syllable accented *˘* (short falling) change this accent to one of the long ones in the oblique cases. So *nît* (above), and *râk* and *kônj* (below).

In the *î*-declension monosyllables accented *˘* in the Nom. sing. have the accent on the last syllable in the oblique cases, except in the Dat. and Loc. sing., as *kôst* (above). But this *˘* accent shifts to the first syllable after a preposition in *all* declensions, also in disyllables, e.g.:—

Gen. sing. *noči* = night, but *do nôči* = till night
 " " *jesên* = autumn, " *na jêsên* = for the autumn

2. Consonant stems, in *-n-*, *-t-* and *-s-*, all neuter. These all now have *o*-stem endings, as in Serbochr., see p. 346-48, e.g.:—

N. <i>jâgnje</i> = lamb or <i>žrebê</i> = foal	<i>brémê</i> = burden	<i>drevô</i> = tree
G. <i>jâgnjeta</i>	<i>žrebêta</i>	<i>drevêsa</i>
D. <i>jâgnjetu</i>	<i>žrebêtu</i>	<i>drevêsu</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.

The two surviving *n*-stems, feminine, are to be regarded as irregular. We give them below, in the singular, as they are important nouns. In the Dual and Plur. they are declined like *a*-stems (see *lîpa*, below).

Nom.	<i>mâti</i> = mother	<i>hči</i> = daughter
Gen.	<i>mâtere</i>	<i>hčêre</i>
Dat.	<i>mâteri</i>	<i>hčêri</i>
Acc.	<i>mâter</i>	<i>hčêr</i>
Instr.	<i>mâterjo</i>	<i>hčêrjo</i>
Loc.	<i>mâteri</i>	<i>hčêri</i>

The important noun *dân* (= day) is really an irregular *n*-stem, and is now declined as follows:—

	SING.	DUAL.	PLURAL
Nom.	<i>dân</i>	<i>dnêva</i>	<i>dnêvi</i>
Gen.	<i>dnê, dnêva</i>	<i>dnî</i>	<i>dnî</i>
Dat.	<i>dnêvu</i>	<i>dnêma, dnêvoma</i>	<i>dnêm, dnêvom</i>
Acc.	<i>dân</i>	<i>dnî, dnêva</i>	<i>dnî, dnêve</i>
Instr.	<i>dnêm, dnêvom</i>	<i>dnêma, dnêvoma</i>	<i>dnêmi, dnêvi</i>
Loc.	<i>dnê, dnêvu</i>	<i>dnêh, dnêvih</i>	<i>dnêh, dnêvih</i>

3. *a*-stems, mostly feminine. Here, as in Serbochr., the old *ja*-stems have predominated in the Gen., Dat., and Loc. sing., and in the Nom. and Acc. Dual and Plural.

	lípa = lime tree góra = mountain	
	SING.	DUAL
Nom.	lípa góra	lípi góri, gorê
Gen.	lípe gorê (góre)	líp gôr, gorá
Dat.	lípi góri	lípama gorâma
Acc.	lípo gorô (góro)	lípi góri, gorê
Instr.	lípo gorô (góro)	lípama gorâma
Loc.	lípi góri	lípah gorâh (górah)
		PLURAL
		gorê
		gôr, gorá
		gorâm (góram)
		lípe gorê
		lípami gorâmi
		lípah gorâh (górah)

Masculine nouns and names in *-a* are similarly declined, e.g. *vôdja* (= leader), *Mîha* = Mike or else they can have the terminations of masculine *o*-stems.

In the Gen. plur. *e* is the regular fill-vowel, e.g.:—

séstra = sister, Gen. plur. séster

But *i* occurs before *j* and *e*, as in

ládja = boat Gen. plur. ládi*j*
klôpca = bench Gen. plur. klôpic

and *-a* appears when the final syllable is stressed, e.g.:—

óvca = sheep Gen. plur. ovác

In this (Gen. plur.) case the ending *-á* (accented), instead of no ending, may be an alternative (re-minding one of Serbo-cr.), e.g.:—

stezá (as well as stèz) = of paths
sestrá
gorá

Notice also the Gen. plurals like—

hrůšk, from hrůška = pear
drůžb = of companies
bítb = of battles
gôdb = of bands, etc.

where a fill-vowel is not considered necessary. So also with some neuters.

(There is no 2nd palatalization in Slovenian, e.g. *rêka* = river, has Dat. Loc. sing. *rêki*.)

The noun *gospá* (= lady, Mrs.) is irregular and declines as follows:—

	SING.	DUAL	PLUR.
Nom.	gospá	gospé	gospé
Gen.	gospá	gospá	gospá
Dat.	gospé	gospéma	gospém
Acc.	gospó	gospé	gospé
Instr.	gospó	gospéma	gospémi
Loc.	gospé	gospéh	gospéh

Accentuation

The accent position of the Nom. sing. is preserved throughout the declension, except in the case of nouns with an open *e* or *o* (i.e. *e* or *o* with no accent written below) in the root (corresponding to nouns accented on the last syllable in Russian). These accent the first syllable of the ending in all cases but the Nom., Dat., Loc. sing. and the Nom., Acc. Dual.

Those accenting the last syllable, such as *stezá*

(= path), retain the accent on the last syllable throughout. In this word and in all others where the ending is stressed, in Nom., Acc. Dual. the ending is *-é* (not *-i*).

4a. *o*-stems, masculine. As in Serbo-cr., the old hard *o*-stems predominate in the singular except in the Instr., where soft stems are distinguished, but in the Dual and Plural the distinction between the old hard and soft declensions is more generally preserved. In the plural more of the old case terminations survive than in Serbo-cr., viz. in the Dat., Loc. and Instr. plural.

The soft consonants in Slovenian are the *čhu-intantes č, š, ž, -j* and its combinations, mainly *lj* and *nj*, and *e*. After these the *o* in hard terminations is changed to *e*.

As in other Slavonic languages, the Acc. sing. of masc. nouns has the same form as the Gen. sing. for animate nouns, and that of the Nom. sing. for in-animate nouns. In the Loc. sing. the ending is always *-u*, as in Serbo-cr.

ràk = crawfish, cancer *kònj* = horse
kràj = locality, edge,
otherwise declined like *kònj*

SINGULAR

Nom.	ràk ¹	kònj	kràj
Gen.	ráka	kónja	
Dat.	ráku	kónju	
Acc.	ráka	kónja	but kràj
Instr.	rákom	kónjem	
Loc.	ráku	kónju	

DUAL

Nom.	ráka	kónja
Gen.	râkov	kônj
Dat.	rákoma	kónjema
Acc.	ráka	kónja
Instr.	rákoma	kónjema
Loc.	râkih	kónjih

PLURAL

Nom.	râki	kónji	
Gen.	râkov	kônj	but krâjev
Dat.	râkom	kónjem	
Acc.	râke	kónje	
Instr.	râki	kónji	
Loc.	râkih	kónjih	

¹Proper names in *-o* follow this type of declension, e.g.: *Jânko*, Gen. s. *Jânka*, Dat. s. *Jânku*; *Márko*, Gen. s. *Márka*, etc.

Most polysyllabic nouns in *-ar*, *-ir*, *-or*, and *-ur* insert *j* before the endings, e.g.:—

céсар = emperor, Gen. sing. cesárja

Dèž (= rain) also has Gen. sing. dežja.

-ov (*-ev* for soft stems) (from the old *ŷ*-stems) is the general ending for the Gen. dual and plural. The exceptions are:—

kónj	Gen. du. and pl. kónj
lās	lās
mōž	mōž
otrók	otrók
vōz	vōz or vozōv
zōb	zōb or zobōv

which have or can have *no* termination in the Gen. plur.; but note the change of accent!

The syllable *-ov* (*-ev* after *j*) is also inserted before the terminations of the Dual and Plural of most monosyllabic nouns, as in Serbo-cr. e.g.:—

svēt = world, Gen. sing. svētā

Nom. dual	svetōva
Nom. plur.	svetōvi
Gen. plur.	svetōv
Dat. plur.	svetōvom
Acc. plur.	svetōve
Instr. plur.	svetōvi
Loc. plur.	svetōvih

The old *ŷ*-stems have also left traces in the Gen. sing. of certain nouns, e.g.:—

mēd	= honey	Gen. sing. medū or mēda
grād	= castle	" " gradū or grāda
strāh	= fear	" " strahū or strāha

and also, of course, in the general termination *-u* of the Loc. sing.

Notice also:—

óce	= father	Gen. sing. očēta ¹	Nom. plur. očētje ²
sínko	= sonny	" "	sínka
nágalj	= carnation	" "	nágeljna

¹Proper names in *-e* follow this type, e.g. Jōže = Joseph, Gen. s. Jōžeta.

²Cf. p. 340, Nom. plurals in *-je*. Further common examples: brátje = brothers, fántje = boys, góstje = guests, sosédje = neighbours, meščánje = townsmen (Nom. s. meščán).

E = e as well as ordinary e are the fill-vowels:—

vēter	= wind	Gen. sing. vētra
ógenj	= fire	" " ógnja

e from the semivowels *b* and *v* is similarly dropped in declension, unless it follows two consonants, e.g.:—

pósal	= business	Gen. sing. póslā,
dogōdek	= event	" " dogōdka
vrābec	= sparrow	" " vrābca
kāšelj	= cough	" " kāšlja
sèn	= sleep	" " snā
pès	= dog	" " psā
jēzdec	= rider,	" " jēzdeca

Accentuation

For the foreign learner it is safest to retain the accent of the Nom. sing. throughout the declension, except that all (short falling accents) must either be changed to ´, e.g.:—

rāk Gen. sing. ráka (above)

or else move to the termination, e.g.:—

dèž Gen. sing. dežjà (above)

Nouns with an open *e* or *o* in the root, indicating a shift of stress, follow the model of kónj.

Certain monosyllables may stress the ending of the Gen. sing., as:—

svēt	= svētā
grād	= gradū

These generally stress the termination in the Dual and Plural.

Polysyllables bearing ´ on any syllable retain it on that syllable throughout the declension, e.g.:—

prijātelj (= friend), prijātelja

while those that have ´ often shift it one syllable nearer the end, e.g.:—

jézik (= tongue), jezíka

We give below three further examples:—

stebâr = pillar : dūh = spirit mōž = man (irreg.)

SINGULAR

Nom.	stebâr	dūh	mōž
Gen.	stebrà	dūhà (dūha)	mōžà
Dat.	stebřù	dūhu	mōžu
Acc.	stebâr	dūh (dūha)	mōžà
Instr.	stebřòm	dūhom	mōžem
Loc.	stebřù	dūhu	mōžu

DUAL

Nom.	stebrà	dūhōva	mōžà
Gen.	stebřov	dūhōv	mōž
Dat.	stebřomà	dūhōvoma	mōžema
Acc.	stebrà	dūhōva	mōžà
Instr.	stebřomà	dūhōvoma	mōžema
Loc.	stebřeh	dūhōvih	mōžeh

PLURAL

Nom.	stebři	dūhōvi	mōžjē ¹
Gen.	stebřov	dūhōv	mōž
Dat.	stebřòm	dūhōvom	mōžem
Acc.	stebřè	dūhōve	mōžè
Instr.	stebři	dūhōvi	mōžmí ²
Loc.	stebřeh ³	dūhōvih	mōžeh ³

After prepositions the accent can sometimes shift on to the preceding syllable: e.g., primêr = example, but na primêr = for example; večêr = evening, na večêr = towards evening.

4b. *o*-stems, neuter. As in the masc. *o*-stems, the difference between the hard and soft⁴ neut. *o*-stems appears only in those cases where there is an *-o-* in the ending of the hard stems, which is replaced by an *-e-* in the soft stems,⁴ i.e. Nom., Acc., Instr. sing.; Dat., Instr., Dual; Dat. Plur.

¹Further Nominatives plural in *-jê*: zobjê = teeth, lasjê = hair, vozjê, more commonly vozōvi = carts.

²So also: *z* - volmí (= with oxen), lasmí (hairs), voznmí (carts), zobmí (teeth).

³About thirty nouns, mostly monosyllabic or with *e* in their second syllable, can have a Loc. pl. (and dual!) in *-eh*, e.g. kónec = end, Loc. du., pl. koncêh or kóncih.

⁴See p. 343, No. 4a, second paragraph, for definition.

lêto = year poljê, or pōlje = field

SINGULAR

Nom.	lêto	poljê, or pōlje	Nom.	lêti	pōlji
Gen.	lêta	poljâ	Gen.	lêt	pōlj
Dat.	lêtu	pōlju	Dat.	lêtoma	pōljema
Acc.	lêto	poljê, or pōlje	Acc.	lêti	pōlji
Instr.	lêtom	pōljem	Instr.	lêtoma	pōljema
Loc.	lêtu	pōlju	Loc.	lêtih	pōljih

DUAL

PLURAL

Nom.	lêta	pōlja
Gen.	lêt	pōlj
Dat.	lêtom	pōljem
Acc.	lêta	pōlja
Instr.	lêti	pōlji
Loc.	lêtih	pōljih

In the Gen. plur. *e* is the fill-vowel, except before *j* when it is *i*, e.g.:—

ókno	= window	Gen. plur.	óken
kōpje	= lance	"	" kōpij
kraljêstvo	= kingdom	"	" kraljêstev
dějstvo	= fact	"	" dējstev
morjê or mōrje	= sea	"	" mōrij
pismo	= letter	"	" písëm
védro	= pail	"	" vēder
sédlo	= saddle	"	" sêdel

Irregular are:—

drvà (neut. plur.)	= firewood	tlà	= floor
Nom.	drvà	Nom.	tlà
Gen.	dřv	Gen.	tál
Dat.	drvòm	Dat.	tlòm
Acc.	drvà	Acc.	tlà
Instr.	drvím	Instr.	tlí or tlëmi
Loc.	drvêh (also dřvih)	Loc.	tlêh

dnò = bottom, has Gen. Plur. dnòv or dnàn.

Okô (= eye) Gen. sing. očêsa, has the original Nom. dual očî (declined like kostî, above) used as a plural, as well as Nom. plur. očêsa and ôka for other than human eyes.

Ušêsa (= ears) from uhô, like nógê (= legs) (either accent!), rokê (= hands) and kolêna (= knees!), are usually used in the plural, not in the dual as one might expect.

Notice also: igô, Gen. sing. ižêsa = yoke; ojê, Gen. s. ojêsa = shaft, and uljê, Gen. s. uljêsa = ulcer. Nebô = sky, has *s*-stem only in the plural: nebêsa; čúdo or čúdo = marvel, wonder, has plural

either *čūda* or *čudēsa*. *Kolō* with the meaning 'wheel' has the plural *kolēsa*, but *kōla* (Nom., Acc. plur.) = carriage, cart. *Kōlo*, with initial accent, is the well-known Yugoslav round dance, as in Serbo-cr. (Cf. p. 341, No. 2.)

Accentuation

Those nouns that accent a non-final syllable usually retain the position of the accent throughout the declension, though not necessarily the intonation, e.g.:—

pismo = letter Nom. plur. pisma
sito = sieve " " sita

cf. Russian:—

письмó, писъма
сáто, сáта

Those with open *e* and *o*, with accent shifted in Nom. sing. in Slovenian from the original final position in Common Slav, usually retain, in the plural, the intonation but not the vowel quality of the Nom. sing., e.g.:—

lěto with non-shifted accent (= year)
Nom. plur. lěta

but—

ókno with shifted accent (= window)
Nom. plur. ókna or ókna

cf. Russian:—

окнó, óкна
лěто. (= summer) лєтá (= years)

Those nouns, on the other hand, that have ~ on the final syllable in the Nom., Acc. sing. in Slovenian, e.g. *poljē* or *mesō* (= meat), shift this accent to the first syllable in Dat., Loc. and Instr. sing. and throughout the dual and plural.

Those nouns that have the final short stress ~ in the Nom., have ' (on the final syllable) in the Gen., Instr., and Loc. plur., e.g.—

drvà Gen. plur. drv Gen. plur. drvmi
Loc. plur. drvěh

DECLENSION OF THE INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES

The Indefinite Adjectives have the same endings in all cases, except the Nom. sing. masc., as the Definite Adjectives. The reader is therefore referred to the section below dealing with the latter.

Slovenian (not Russian) names in -ov, -ev follow this type, e.g. *Pręžihov*, Gen. s. *Pręžihovega*;

Matàjev, etc. Cf. p. 361, Possessive Adjectives.

THE NUMERALS

Cardinal: 1 is declined and treated as an adjective when it qualifies a noun: *èn, énega*. When used alone, the Nom. sing. masc. has the special form *éden*. Similarly: *nòbèn, nobéden* (none). (The indefinite article should not be rendered by *èn*, but with *nēki* = some, when necessary.)

2 *dvā* (masc.), *dvē* (fem. and neut.) is an adjective taking, of course, the dual (as does also *obā*, *obē* = both).

3 *trijē* (masc.), *tri* (fem. and neut.) and 4 *štirje* (masc.), *štiri* (fem. and neut.) are adjectives with the noun in the plural.

5 onwards are treated as nouns, taking the Gen. plur. in the Nom. and Acc. and governing a verb in the (neuter) singular; in the other cases they are adjectival, agreeing with their noun in case.

All simple numerals may decline¹ (from 5 onwards all in the same way), including (occasionally)—

stō = hundred (declined like *pēt* - *sict*)

tisōč(m.) = a thousand, } (" " masc. -o-stem nouns)

miliijōn = a million

E.g. *ob trēh* = at 3 o'clock.

Compounds of 1-4 generally have the verb in the neuter singular owing to the usual form ending in the tens, i.e. "twenty-three" is more usually in the form "three and twenty" in the spoken language.

	NOM.		GEN.		DAT.	
	Masc.	Fem. Neut.	Masc. Neut.	Fem. Neut.	Masc. Neut.	Fem. Neut.
1	èn (éden)	éna éno	énega	éne	énemu	éni.
			etc., like <i>lěpi</i> below, p. 360.			

	NOM./ACC.		GEN./LOC.		DAT.		INSTR.	
	Masc.	Fem. Neut.	All Genders	All Genders	All Genders	All Genders	All Genders	All Genders
2	<i>dvā</i>	<i>dvē</i>	<i>dvēh</i>	<i>dvēma</i>	<i>dvēma</i>	<i>dvēma</i>	<i>dvēma</i>	<i>dvēma</i>
3	<i>trijē</i> ²	<i>tri</i>	<i>trēh</i>	<i>trēm</i>	<i>trēm</i>	<i>trēm</i>	<i>trēmi</i>	<i>trēmi</i>
4	<i>štirje</i> ²	<i>štiri</i>	<i>štirih</i>	<i>štirim</i>	<i>štirim</i>	<i>štirim</i>	<i>štirimi</i>	<i>štirimi</i>

¹The modern tendency is *not* to decline numerals (cf.

Serbo-cr.) especially when used as attributes, e.g. *ávtoBUS 7* (*sédem*) = bus No 7, after prepositions: *z devēt prijátelji* = with nine friends, and in mathematical expressions: *ošem množēno z dvē* = eight multiplied by two.

²Nominative only.

	NOM./ACC.	GEN./LOC.	DAT.	INSTR.
	<i>All Genders</i>			
5	pět	pétih ¹	pétim ¹	pétimi ¹
6	sěst—declined like pět	" "	" "	" "
7	sědem	" "	" "	" "
8	osem	" "	" "	" "
9	devět	" "	" "	" "
10	deset	etc.		
11	enájst			
12	dvánájst (either accent)			
13	trínájst	" "		
14	štírinájst	" "		
15	pětnájst	" "		
16	šestnájst	" "		
17	sědemnájst	" "		
18	osemnájst	" "		
19	devětnájst	" "		
20	dvájset (dvájsti)			
21	eden in dvájset (dvájset éden)			
22	dvā in dvájset (dvájset dvā)			
30	trideset			
40	štírideset			
50	pětdeset			
60	šestdeset			
70	sědemdeset			
80	osemdeset			
90	devětdeset			
100	stō (<i>sometimes</i> declined like pět)			
101	stō éden ²			
102	stō dvā ²			
200	dvēstō			
300	tristō			
400	štiristō			
500	pěststō			
600	šeststō			
700	sědemstō, etc.			
1,000	tisoč			
2,000	dvā tisoč			
3,000	trī tisoč			
10,000	deset tisoč			
100,000	stō tisoč			
1,000,000	milijon			

sto is here almost an enclitic, unstressed, and is not usually declined.

The *Ordinal* Numerals are declined like Definite Adjectives. Trētji = (third) and tisoči (= 1,000th) have soft stems, hence neut. Nom./Acc sing. -e. From

¹These forms are identical with the corresponding plural cases of the (adjectival) ordinal numerals below.

²In compound numerals, only the last figure may be declined.

five onwards they are formed by adding -i to the Cardinal (and dropping e where it occurs, in sēdem, osem). Compound Ordinals have only the last part in the ordinal form. Ordinals are always used for indicating dates:—

dnē trētjega aprīla (léta) tisoč devēt stō sēdem in štíridesetega = (on) 3rd April, 1947

1st prvi	-a	-o
2nd drugi	-a	-o
3rd tretji	-a	-e
4th četrti		
5th peti		
6th šesti		
7th sedmi		
8th osmi		
9th devēti		
10th desēti		
11th enájsti		
12th dvánájsti		
20th dvájseti		
21th enaindvájseti		
25th pētindvájseti		
30th trideseti		
100th stōti		
101st stō in prvi or stoprvi		
1,000th tisoči		
1,000,000th milijōnski		

There are two kinds of *Collective Numerals* (cf. Serbocr.). After dvōj, -a, -e (= 2), trōj (= 3), četvēr (= 4), these are formed by adding -ēr, -ēra, -ēro to the Cardinals:—

1. Plural Collective Numerals, varying in gender, used with nouns in the plural only, or to indicate a group:—

dvōje gráblje	= two rakes
trōja vrāta	= three doors
petēre Mōjzesove bŭkve	= the five Books of Moses
dvanaštēri apōstoli	= the twelve apostles

These are also used with abstract nouns to indicate "double," etc., otherwise expressed by adjectives in -an:—

dvōjne dŭri
but = double doors

dvōja, or dvōjna, krivica = a double wrong

2. Neuter singular Collective Numerals, indicating a group of varied people or things which follow in the sing. or Gen. plur.:—

dvôje písmo = two kinds of writing, alphabets
 četvéro živínet = four (different) head of cattle
 petéro víno = five kinds of wine
 sedméro ljudi = seven people (men, women, and children)

These are also used for a number of unspecified things:—

na četvéro razdelíti = to divide into four

Po + the Cardinal in the Nom. (or Acc.) is used for *Distributives*:—

po èn = one each

-krat = times:—

dvâkrat = twice

mnógokrat = many times

-č is added to the Ordinals to form adverbs:—

drúgič (or drúgikrat) = for the second time

THE PRONOMINAL DECLENSION

As in other Slavonic languages, the Personal Pronouns of 1st and 2nd person have a declension peculiar to themselves. The other Pronouns all have similar declensions based on two main types:—

tâ = this Gen. sing. tēga Gen. plur. tēh

representing the hard type;

òn = he Gen. sing. njéga Gen. plur. njìh

representing the soft type. (tísti = that, forms a third, mixed type.)

The two *main* types in Slovenian, in contrast to Serbo-cr., differ more in the dual and plural than in the singular, in which the soft endings have largely predominated. The other pronouns, with vès (= all) as the sole exception, even though hard, follow the soft model in the plural, like tísti.

The usual categories figure in Slovenian:—

Personal:—

jàz = I
 tî = thou
 òn = he
 mî = we

Demonstrative:—

tâ, also tâle or le-tâ (masc. and fem.) = this
 òni = that (yonder)
 tísti = that (near you)

Interrogative:—

kdó? = who? (pronounced gdo)
 káj? = what?

Indefinite:—

nékdó = someone
 někí = some

Negative:—

nihčè } = no-one
 níkdo }

Possessive (pronoun-adjectives):—

mój } = my, mine
 náš } = our (s)

Relative:—

ki = that
 kdór = (he) who
 čígar = whose (indeclinable, referring to masc. nouns only)

Definitive:—

vès = all
 sâm = -self
 ísti = the same
 slēherni = every
 mārśikdo = many a (person)
 mārśikaj = many a (thing), much

HARD		tâ = this		
SING.		<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Nom.		tâ	tô	tâ
Gen.		tēga, <i>encl.</i>	tēgâ	tē
Dat.		tēmu, <i>encl.</i>	tēmû	tēj (tì)
Acc.		tēga, tâ	tô	tô
Instr.		tēm	tēm	tô
Loc.		tēm	tēm	tēj (tî)
DUAL				
Nom.		tâ	tì, tē	tì, tē
Gen.			tēh	
Dat.			tēma	
Acc.		tâ	tì, tē	tì, tē
Instr.			tēma	
Loc.			tēh	

PLURAL

Nom.	tĩ	tā	tē
Gen.			
Dat.	tāh		
Acc.	tēm		
Instr.	tēmi	tā	tē
Loc.	tēh		

SOFT

òn = he, óna = she, ónq̄ = it
Masc. *Neut.* *Fem.*

(*encl.*) (encl.) (*encl.*)

Nom.	òn	óno or ónq̄	óna	
Gen.	njéga ga			njē je
Dat.	njému mu			njēj (njì) jì
Acc.	njéga ga			njō jō
Instr.	njīm			njō
Loc.	njēm			njēj (njì)

DUAL				
Nom.	óná (dva)	{ óni (dve) ónē (dve)	óni (dve) ónē (dve)	(<i>encl.</i>)

Gen.	njiju, njú, njih;	ju, jih	
Dat.	njīma;	jīma	
Acc.	njīju, njú, njih;	ju, jih	
Instr.	njīma		
Loc.	njiju, njīma, njih		

PLURAL				
Nom.	óní	óná	ónē	
Gen.	njìh; jìh			
Dat.	njīm; jīm			
Acc.	njìh or njē; jìh			
Instr.	njīmi			
Loc.	njìh			

1. The enclitic forms of òn are used in sentences where the pronoun in the oblique case is not stressed. (See also note on "Word Order with Enclitics" at the end of this Section.) The full forms are used after prepositions and when the pronoun is emphasized. The Nom. Pers. Pronouns are not used with verbs unless there is contrast or emphasis on them.

2. For the *masc.* Acc. sing. after prepositions the form -*nj* is suffixed to the preposition as an alternative to the full form *njéga* after the preposition, thus—

zānj = za *njéga* = for him
prādenj = (to) before him

For the *neut.* Acc. sing. after prepositions the old form *je* has survived; it is joined to the preposition by an epenthetic *n*, and thus we have—

zānje = for it, or *zānj* (as in *masc.*)

Similarly for the *fem.* Acc. sing. we have: *zānjo* = for her.

In the Acc. plur. after prepositions the older form *je* is used for all genders, e.g.:—

grēm pōnje = I am going for (to fetch) them

Nje can also be used without a preposition for an emphatic "them," e.g.:—

samq̄ njē = only them

For the Acc. dual we have -*nju*: *zānju* = for them two.

3. On, óna, ónq̄ should only be used when the 3rd Pers. Pronoun bears emphasis, or to express contrast. When a pronoun is required merely by the logical requirements of a clause, *tā* or *le-tā* (= this) should be used in the appropriate gender. In the following example, if *tā* was not used, *tudi* (= also) would qualify the wrong word, i.e. the verb instead of the pronoun referring to the noun in the previous clause, e.g.:—

... *vōsək* (= wax); *tudi tā obstojí* ... (= *it* also consists ...)

MIXED TYPE

tĩsti = that

SING.	<i>Masc.</i>		<i>Neut.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
Nom.	tĩsti		tĩsto	tĩsta
Gen.		tĩstega		tĩste
Dat.		tĩstemu		tĩstì
Acc.	tĩstega, -i		tĩsto	tĩsto
Instr.		tĩstim		tĩsto
Loc.		tĩstem		tĩstì
DUAL				
Nom.	tĩsta		tĩstì	tĩstì
Gen.		tĩstìh		
Dat.		tĩstima		
Acc.	tĩsta		tĩstì	tĩstì
Instr.		tĩstima		
Loc.		tĩstìh		
PLURAL				
Nom.	tĩstì		tĩsta	tĩste
Gen.		tĩstìh		
Dat.		tĩstìm		
Acc.	tĩste		tĩsta	tĩste
Instr.		tĩstìmi		
Loc.		tĩstìh		

njegóv¹ = his
njén¹ = her
njūn¹ = of them two, their
njihov¹ = their (of more than two)
nājin = of us two, our
vājin = of you two, your
oné (finally stressed oná onó = someone not (to be) named throughout)

The Gen. sing. masc., neut. onégá is sometimes used for the Nom., Acc. s. masc. Note the fem. Dat., Loc. s. oné, cf. gospá, p. 342.

kdô? (= who?) and káj? (= what?), and their corresponding Relatives kdôr and kâr, are irregular, and are declined as follows:—

Nom.	kdô	káj	kdôr	kâr
Gen.	kôga	čêsa	kôgar	čêsar
Dat.	kômu	čêmu	kômur	čêmur
Acc.	kôga	káj	kôgar	kâr
Instr.	kôm	čím	kômer	čímer
Loc.	kôm	čëm	kômer	čêmer

All compounds of the above, e.g. nékdô, Gen. sing. nêkoga (= someone); nîkdo, Gen. sing. nîkôgar (= no one); mârskdô, Gen. sing. mârskoga (= many a man); nêkaj, Gen. sing. nečesa (= something); vsâkdo, Gen. sing. vsâkogar (= anybody, everybody), are declined as above, having the appropriate prefix. The declension of nîč (= nothing) should also be noted:—

Nom.	nîč
Gen.	ničesar
Dat.	ničêmur
Acc.	nîč
Instr.	ničímer
Loc.	ničêmer

(Sometimes it is not declined).

Nîhčè (< nîktože), Gen. sing. nîkôgar, is an alternative Nom. to nîkdo, declined like kdôr.

Ki is the "general Relative," referring to someone known, and does not decline. If not used as a Nom. Relative it must be amplified by the Personal Pronoun in the case required by the verb of the relative clause (the *enclitic* form is required if used

¹The Possessive Adjectives of the 3rd pers. are often replaced by the corresponding Genitives of the Pers. Pronoun: njéga, njé, njû, njîh:—

njéga óče = his father

Only vês (masc.), vsà (fem.), vsè (neut.) (= all) Gen. sing. vsègà (masc. and neut.), vsè (fem.) Dat. sing. vsêmù " " vsèj(vsì) " Instr. sing. vsèm " " vsò " Loc. sing. vsèm " " vsèj(vsì) " Instr. plur. vsèmi (masc. and neut. and fem.)

follows the declension of tâ in all cases. It has the accent in all cases. In the dual it is only used with adjectives: vsà tóžna prišlâ = they (two) came all sad ...

According to the soft model of "òn" are declined:— the Possessives, with fem. Gen. sing. in -e, fem. Dat., Loc. s. in -î, and Gen., Loc. du. in -îh.

môj (masc.), môja (fem.), môje (neut.) = my	
tvôj tvôja tvôje = thine, your (fam.)	
svôj svôja svôje = own, belonging to the subject of the sentence (any person).	
náš náša naše = our (s)	
váš vâša vâše = your (s)	

The other pronouns, except for the few irregular ones given below in full, are declined like the compromise model tîsti above, which also represents the declension of all adjectives (in all degrees of comparison) in Slovenian (see below). Like tîsti are declined:—

ôni ôna ôno = that	
nêki nêki = some	
sâm sâm sám = -self	
tîsti tîsta tîsto = the same	
slêherni, slêdnji vsâk = every	
ták (-šen) (-šna -šno) = such	
tôlik (-šen) " = so great	
katéri " = which? (of several), who, which (Rel.).	
mârskatéri " = many a (nother)	
kâkršen " = of which kind (Rel.)	
čigáv? " = whose?	
kâk (-šen)? " = what kind of?	
kôlik (-šen)? " = how great?	

without a preposition), e.g.:—

Môž, ki nas je videl ... = the man who (Nom.) saw us
but—

Môž, ki smo ga videli... = the man whom (Acc.) we
saw ...

Ràd bi dó tébe ki te
ne môrem pozábiti

= I would gladly (come) to
you whom I cannot forget.

The preposition, if required, is put before the
full form of the 3rd pers. Personal Pronoun. After a
preposition *katêri* may be used as an alternative,
e.g.:—

Prijáteljji, ki smo pri
njih bili ...

=

the friends with whom we were ...

or—

Prijáteljji, pri katêrih
smo bili ...

The Personal Pronouns of the 1st and 2nd person
are declined as follows:—

SING	jáz = I		tî = thou	
	Full form	Encl.	Full form	Encl.
Nom.	jáz		tî	
Gen.	méne	me	tébe	te
Dat.	méni	mi	tébi	ti
Acc.	méne	me	tébe	te
Instr.	menój (máno)		tebój (tábo)	
Loc.	méni		tébi	
mîdva = we two				
DUAL	masc. fem. and neut.		masc. fem. and neut.	
Nom.	mîdva, mîdve		vîdva, vîdve	
	(mêdve)		(vêdve)	
Gen.	nāju	naju	vāju	vaju
Dat.	nāma	nama	vāma	vama
Acc.	nāju	naju	vāju	vaju
Instr.	nāma		vāma	
Loc.	nāju or nāma		vāju or vāma	
mî = we				
PLURAL	masc. fem.		vî = you	
Nom.	mî mē		masc. fem.	
Gen.	nàs	nas	vî vè	
Dat.	nàm	nam	vàs	vas
Acc.	nàs	nas	vàm	vam
Instr.	nāmi		vàs	vas
Loc.	nàs		vāmi	
			vàs	

sébe (= self) is declined exactly like tébe. It

has Gen. and Acc. enclitic *se*, Dat. enclitic *si* (frequently used, as in Czech).

The enclitic forms, as in the case of *ón*, are used in sentences where the Pronoun in the oblique cases is not stressed. (The Nom. Pers. Pronoun is usually omitted altogether if not stressed.) (See also note on "Word Order with Enclitics.")

Notice the use of the enclitic forms compounded with prepositions: *zāme* = for me, *nāte* = on to you, *zāse* = for oneself, *vāme* = into me (note the *-ā-*!).

THE DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES

The hard and soft stems differ from each other only in the Nom. and Acc. sing. neut.: *lépo* (= beautiful), but *rdêče* (= red). In the other cases of the masc. and neut. sing., the *e* vowel has become generalized at the expense of the *o* (in contrast to Serbo-cr.).

In the Dat. and Loc. sing. fem. the ending is *-i*, as in the *a*-stem fem. nouns—this also is a difference as compared with Serbo-cr.

As in Serbo-cr., Definite and Indefinite Adjectives exist (corresponding to an adjective qualifying a noun preceded by the definite or the indefinite article respectively in English), but these differ in form *only* in the Nom. and (inanimate) Acc. sing. masc., their endings being otherwise identical. Most adjectives distinguish the definite from the indefinite form by intonation. The accent of the definite form in all cases is usually the same as that in the Nom. sing. fem. of the indefinite form. The foreign learner should note the position and intonation of the accent in the Nom. sing. masc. and fem. indef. (as given in some dictionaries), and apply this rule, preserving the correct length and intonation (and quality too, if possible) of the vowel—i.e. of the Nom. sing. fem.—in all other cases. (See also "Accentuation" below.) As in Serbo-cr., the Indefinite Adjective is tending to be used mainly predicatively, where it is essential in the masc. sing. It is also used after *vsāk* = every.

The rule about the Acc. sing. masc. being like the Gen. sing. masc. for animate nouns and like the Nom. sing. masc. for inanimate nouns, applies in Slovenian too, when the adj. is used *with* a noun. But in the literary language, when an adj. referring to an inanimate masc. noun is used by itself in the Acc., it takes the Gen. form, e.g.:—

Vêliki zvôn smò žê prelîli, srêdnjega pà šè lê bômo.
= The big bell we have already recast, but the medium

one we still have to do.

We give below a specimen declension for clarity's sake:—

		Hard: lěp = beautiful	Soft: rděč, fem. rděča = red
		<i>Masculine</i>	<i>Neuter</i>
SING.			
Nom.	lěp, lěpi (def.)		lěpo (rděče)
Gen.	lěpega		lěpa
Dat.	lěpemu		lěpe
Acc.	lěpega, lěp(i)		lěpi (rděči)
Instr.	lěpim		lěpo (rděči)
Loc.	lěpem		lěpi
DUAL			
Nom.	lěpa		lěpi
Gen.		lěpi	
Dat.		lěpih	
Acc.	lěpa	lěpima	
Instr.		lěpi	lěpi
Loc.		lěpima	
PLURAL			
Nom.	lěpi		lěpe
Gen.		lěpih	
Dat.		lěpim	
Acc.	lěpe	lěpa	lěpe
Instr.		lěpimi	
Loc.		lěpih	

Adjectives in *-nji*, e.g.:—

srědnji = middle

and Possessive Adjectives in *-ji*, *-ski*, *-ški*, *-ški*, *-čki*, e.g.:—

krāvji = cow's
brátovski = brother's, brotherly
móški = men's, manly

and all Comparative and Superlative adjectives (see below) have no indefinite or predicative, form; also—

máli = small
ôbci = common
prāvi = right, real
záli, zála (fem.) = pretty
rājni = the late
umřli = the deceased

The predicative form of *māli* is *mājhen*.

Some adjectives are used as nouns, but decline like adjectives, e.g.:—

blížnji = one's neighbour
māla (déklica) = little girl

gospóška (oblāst) = the authorities
stājerska (dežéla) = Stājersko = Styria.

On the other hand Possessive Adjectives in *-ov* (*-ev*) and *-in*, e.g.:—

brátov = brother's
sēstrin = sister's

never have the definite (*-i*) ending in the Nom. sing. masc.

Rād (masc.), rāda (fem.) = glad(ly), is confined to the Nom. of all genders and numbers, while its Comparative *rājši* usually remains in the masc. sing. form.

A few adjectives, such as—

nāpak = wrong (way round)
pěš = on foot
rēs = true
všēč = nice, welcome
kōs = capable, equal to

and usually

těšč = empty, unfed; and žāl = offensive, angry are indeclinable.

Accentuation

Many adjectives retain throughout both the def. and indef. declension the same position (though not intonation) of the accent and the same vowel quality, e.g.:—

běl = white
mótan = troubled, dim

Adjectives with ` in Nom. sing. masc. change this to ´ in the Nom. sing. fem. and retain this throughout the declension regardless of the number of syllables of the ending, e.g.:—

bogāt = rich Nom.sing.fem. bogáta Gen.sing.masc. bogátega
stār = old " " stára " " stārega
nōv = new " " nōva " " nōvega

Some adjectives in their indefinite form *may stress* the ending (more usually only in the Nom. and Acc. sing. neut. and Nom. and Acc. du. and plur. of all genders). We give below the declension of *mład* (= young) in full to show all the possibilities (two accents on a form indicate the two alternatives).

Sing.	Masculine	Neuter	Feminine
Nom.	mlād	mládō	mlāda
Gen.	mlādega		mlāde
Dat.	mlādemu		mlādi
Acc.	mlādēga	mládō	mlādō
Instr.	mlādim		mlādō
Loc.	mlādem		mlādi
DUAL			
Nom.	mlādā	mlādi or mlādē	
Gen.	mlādih		
Dat.	mlādima		
Acc.	mlādima	mlādi or mlādē	
Instr.	mlādih		
Loc.	mlādih		
PLURAL			
Nom.	mlādi	mlādā	mlādē
Gen.	mlādih		
Dat.	mlādīm		
Acc.	mlādē	mlādā	mlādē
Instr.	mlādīm		
Loc.	mlādih		

The definite forms retain the accent of Nom.

sing. masc. on the same syllable throughout the declension, e.g.:—

láhki = light Nom.sing.fem. lánka Gen.sing.masc. lánkega
stāri = old " " stāra " " stārega

So also—

vēliki, vēlika = great

which has the indefinite forms—

vėlik, vėlika.

Those adjectives that have *o* in the termination of the Nom. sing. masc. indef. may stress the last syllable throughout (generally with `), e.g. temèn, or temān (also temān) = dark:—

	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
Nom. sing.	temān (temān)	temnō (or -ō)	temnā
Gen. sing.		temnegā	temné (or -è)
Nom. plur.	temni (or -i)	temnā	temně, etc.

The Comparison of Adjectives

The Comparative adjectives are formed with three alternative sets of endings:—

-ši, -ša, -še
-ji, -ja, -je
-ejši, -ejša, -ejše

The first set of endings is usually used with monosyllabic adjectives whose stem ends in *b*, *p* or *d*, e.g.:—

slāb	= weak, bad	Comp. slābši
lěp	= beautiful	" lěpši
mlād	= young	" mlājši
hūd, hūda	= bad, angry	" hūjši
tīd	= hard	" tījši

The second set of endings is used for most adjectives with velar or sibilant stem, *k*, *g*, *h* changing before *j* to *č*, *ž*, *š*—according to the rules of votation—and *z*, *s* to *ž*, *š* respectively (see "Sla-vonic Characteristics," No. 4,) e.g.:—

tīh	= quiet	Comp. tījšji
jāk	= strong	" jāčji
drāg	= dear	" drāžji
glūh	= deaf	" glūšji
visòk	= high	" vīšji (see below)

The third set of endings is used for many adjectives of two or more syllables, especially those ending in *-r*, *-n*, *-an*, *-ak*, *-al*, *-iv*, *-it*, e.g.:—

bíster	= bright	Comp. bistrējši
príden	= industrious	" prídnejši
drobān or dróben	= small, fine	" drobnējši
krēpāk or krépek	= strong	" krepkējši
šíbek	= slim, weak	" šibkējši
ljubezniv	= kind	" ljubeznivejši
bogāt	= rich	" bogatējši
plemenit	= noble	" plemenitejši
dēbel, débēla(fem.)	= fat	" debelējši

and also with many monosyllabic adjectives, especially those ending in *-st*, e.g.:—

nōv	= new	Comp. novējši
svět	= holy	" svetējši
mīl	= gentle, kind	" milējši
stār	= old	" starējši (stārši = parents)
čist	= clean	" čistējši

The ending *-ejši* is accented with most monosyllabic and disyllabic adjectives. But adjectives of three or more syllables preserve the original position of the accent, lengthening ` , where it occurs, to ´ , as with ljubezniv above.

Adjectives ending in *-ek* (*-ak*) or *-ok* usually lose this ending in forming a Comparative, like visòk, vīšji above, e.g.:—

láhek	= light	Comp. lãžji	
sládek	= sweet	" slãžši or sladkêjši	
širók	= broad	" širši	
tánek or tenák	= thin	" tãnjši	
krátek	= short	" krãžši or krãčji	} consonantal changes accord- ing to rules of yotation
nízek	= low	" nãžji	
težek or težák	= heavy	" tãžji	
globók	= deep	" glõblji ¹	
žek	= narrow	" õžji	

but some keep the ending -ek (see šibkêjši and krepkêjši above), e.g.:—

górek = *warm* Comp. gorkêjši

The following important adjectives have irregular Comparatives:—

vélík, velíka	= big, great	Comp. vèčji
mãjhen	= small	" mánjši
dóber, dóbra	= good	" bõljši
dõlg	= long	" dãljši
dálek	= far off	"
cenèn	= cheap	" cenêjši
(or pocèni - indeclinable)		

záli, zála (= bad, pretty) has zãlši and gõrši or gõrji. These last two forms can also be used as the Comparative of zãl (also pronounced zãu) = bad. Periphrastic Comparatives, using the word bõlj (= more) + the Positive degree, are formed mainly from—

1. Adjectives denoting colour, e.g.:—
bõlj črn = blacker
2. Pres. Participles in -ě used as adjectives, e.g.:—
bõlj cvetõč = more flourishing
3. Adjectives ending in -ski or -ji, e.g.:—
bõlj slovènski = more Slovenian
bõlj divji = more wild
4. Past Participles Passive in -(e)n, -na, -no, and -t, -ta, -to, and Past Participles Active in -l, -la, -lo, used adjectivally, e.g.:—
bõlj učen = more learned
bõlj znàn = more well-known
bõlj vrèl = hotter, keener

¹Also globokêjši and globõčji.

5. Adjectives in -av, -ast, -at and some in -en and -en, and a few others, e.g.:—

zdráv	= healthy	Comp. bõlj zdráv,	
krástav	= scabby	etc.	
gfbast	= hunch-backed	Also: sũh	= dry
trãvnat	= grassy	mõker	= wet
jeklèn	= (of) steel	tũj	= strange, foreign
jèzen	= angry	sit	= sated

The *Superlative degree* is formed by prefixing *nãž-*, which bears its own accent, to the Comparative, e.g.:—

nãžistêjši = the cleanest

The adjectives that form their Comparative with bõlj take nãjbõlj—

nãjbõlj znàn = the most well-known

Thar = kò, kòt, kàkor, or od (less commonly mimo) + Gen., e.g. Hũjša je žèja kò(t) glãd, or od glãdũ = Thirst is worse than hunger.

Rather better = nêkãj bõljši, but rather good =

precèj dõber

Less than = mánj kò(t); more than = bõlj kò(t)

The bigger, the better = čim vèčji, tèm bõljši

As beautiful as ... = takõ lep kàkor ...

As fast as possible = čim bĩž, čim hitrêje, kàr nãjhitrêje, bĩž kò bõ mógõce.

As soon as possible = kàr nãjbĩže, bĩž kò bĩž, prêj kò prêj, čimprêj

The dearest of all sons = nãjljũbsi iz—cf. Russian—(or od—cf. Serbocr., or—izmèd) vsèh sinõv, or med (or nad) vsèmi sinõvi; or

nãjljũbsi sin vsèh sinõv, repeating the noun.

Pre- prefixed to an adjective express "too," e.g.:—

pretéžek = too heavy;

it expresses "very" only in certain expressions, e.g.:—

preljũbi sìn = (my) very dear (dearest) son!

ADVERBS

These are formed regularly from adjectives by using the neut. Nom. Acc. sing. form, e.g.:—

dõber = good dõbro = well
lep = beautiful lepõ = fine

except in the case of adjectives in *-ski*, which have adverbs with the same ending, e.g.:—

brâtski = in a brotherly manner

Nouns in the Instr. sing. or dual are also used as adverbs, e.g.:—

mâhom(a) = at once, suddenly
 križem(a) = crosswise
 mestoma = in places, here and there
 deloma = partly
 večinoma = mostly
 popolnoma = completely

Comparative adverbs are formed from Comp. adjs. in *-ši* by dropping this ending and adding *-(e)je*, e.g.:—

redkêje = more rarely kasnêje or kâsnje = later
 slabêje = weaker, worse hûje = worse, more angrily
 bistrêje = more brightly, clearly prostêje = more freely

but širše = more widely, krâjše = more briefly. Colloquially other comparatives in *-še* are frequently used.

Comparative adjectives in *-ji* have corresponding adverbs in *-e* (or colloquially *-je*), e.g.:—

bliže = nearer
 draže = more dearly
 laže or lăglje = more lightly
 mēče or mehkeje = more softly
 niže = lower
 više = higher

Notice the irregular comparisons:

dáléc	= far,	Comp. dălje
dôlgo	= long,	" dălje, dălji, or dljê
mălo	= little,	" mănji = less
mňogo	= much, many	" vēc = more (of quantity, number)
veliko		
zelô	= very,	" bôlj = more (of degree)
dôbro	= well,	" bôlje
răd, răda, -o	= gladly,	" răje or răjsi (for all three genders)

and the literary
 včesto = often " včesto

The *Superlative degree* is formed by adding the prefix *năj-* to the Comparative.

A peculiarity of Slovenian is the use of the adverb *lahkô* (lit. = lightly, easily) with verbs to indicate a potential action, e.g.:—

lahkô grêš = you can go, you may go

We give below a list of some of the commonest and most typical Slovenian adverbs, which give the language part of its characteristic colour. Many end in *-j*.

PLACE			
tû, tûkaj	= here	tôd	= this way
tâm, tâmkaj	= there	vên(kaj)	= out
nekjê	= somewhere	nôter	= in
sêm	= here, hither	dălec	= far
tjă (kaj)	= thither, there	zúnaj	= outside
ôndi	= over there	kvîšku	= up
ondôd	= that way	(navz)gôr	{
zădaj	= behind	(navz)dôl	
nazăj	= back	blîzu	
zgôraj	= above		
zdôlaj	{		
spôdaj			
TIME			
sedăj, zdăj	(often pron. zdej)	prăvkar	= just (now)
	= now	včăsi(h)	= at times
tedăj	= then	spêt, zôpet	= again
takôj, kôj	{	răvnokar	= just
prêcej		mărsikdăj	= many a time
védno	{	žê, or žê	= already
vsêkdar		šê	= still
vsêlej	{	selê	= (only) just
zmêraj,		dănes	= to-day
zmêrom	{	nocôj,	{
nîkdăr,		drêvi	
nikôli	{	s(i)nôci	
zgôdaj		jûtri	= last night
hkrăti	{	včêraj	= tomorrow
obênem			= yesterday
knălu	{	lăni	= last year
skôro		nê...vêc	= no more
skôraj	{	doslêj	{
potêm,-têm		dozdăj	
pogîstomă	{	pôtlej	{
dăvi		poslêj	
lêtos	{	napôsled	{
osorêj		venomêr	
zvečêr	{	nênghoma	{
zjûtraj		zdrêzema,	
zdăvnaj	{	slêdnjic	{
nêkoč			
prêj	{		

MANNER

takô	= so, thus
nâlašc	= purposely
skrivâj	= secretly
skûpajj	= together
vred	= likewise
takîsto	= in succession
zapôred	= separately
posêbej	= in (good) time
posâmezno	= thoughtlessly,
začâsa	at random
tjavdân	

DEGREE

zelô	= very
tôliko	= so much
precêj	= rather, consid- erably
zlasti	= especially
sploh	= in general, alto- gether
celô	= even
dosti	= enough
dovôlj	= really, very, right
prav	= too much
prevêc	= hardly
kômaj	= at least
všâj	= only
samô	= on no account
lê	= much
nikâr	= actually
môgo	= probably
pravzaprav	= actually
břkone	
břzda	
břzčas	
nâjbrž	

Čedâlje + Comp. = ever, -er and -er, e.g.:—

Čedâlje bôlj = ever more, more and more.

CAUSAL

zatô	= for that reason
zatôrej	

INTERROGATIVE

kjê?	= where?
kâm?	= whither?
kdâj?	= when?
doklêj?	= till when?

kôd?	= which way?
kakô?	= how?
kôliko?	= how much, how many?
zakâj?	= why?
od kôd?	= whence?

= cheaply

= gratis, in vain

= straight, plainly

= slowly

= upside down

= on one's back

= standing

= by force

= wrong

= briefly

= really

= certainly, surely

= indeed, certainly

(with negative)

= of course

= they say, ostensi-
bly

= perhaps

= possibly, supposed-
ly

= just, precisely

= almost

= at best

= quite, entirely

= wholly

ali ...?

jêli

li? (encl. rare)

= interrogative particle introducing a ques-
tion, cf.:—

Russ., Socr., Bulg. - **ли**

Pol. - **czy**

Ukr. - **чи**

kajně(da) } = is that not so? Fr. *n'est-ce pas?*

jêli(-ta, -te) }

mâr...? = ... not ... really? Russ. **правда ...?**

Not = nê; no = nê; yes = dâ (colloquially: jâ).

'No' also = nâk(a) (rarer)

CONJUNCTIONS

These present no syntactical difficulties, but as Slovenian is far more fond of various modifying conjunctions and particles than English, they are often difficult to translate.

The commonest *coördinating* conjunctions are:—

in (enclitic) = and
ter = and (weak), cf. Russian **и**, (also final)

so that

â = and, but (contrasting)

pâ (often enclitic) = and, but, then (in questions), cf.

Russian **же**

tûdi = also

kâkor = as

kôlikor = as much, as many

oziroma = or else

samô } = only

lê }

bôdisi = either, or; even if, though

âli(... âli) = either, or; but

niti...niti = neither...nor

sâj = but, Rus. **БЕЖ**, German doch

pâc = (but) yes, French *si*; indeed

sicêr = it is true, otherwise, moreover

kâjti = for

tôrej, zatôrej = therefore

zatô = therefore

takô = thus

potemtâkem = therefore, thus

tadâj = then

tôda = yet

âmpak = but, yet

têmveč (colloq.) = but (after a negative), Germ. *sondern*,

têmûč } Serbo-cr. **БЕЖ**, Pol. *lecz*, Cz. *nýbrž*

mârveč

vândâr = nevertheless, however

bajê = they say (quoting)

IT = Out of

With Gen.:—
 brez = without
 = out of
 iz

na

- skôz(i) = through
 čez = across
 raz = off
 ob = against, near, by; during, at (of time); out of, short of
 zoper = against
 med = (to) between, among
 za = for, (to) behind, in exchange for
 pred = (to) before
 pod = (to) under
 nad = (to) above, more than, over
 po = for, to fetch

With Instr.:—

- s (before voiceless consonants) = with (also *always* of the instrument), e.g. pišem s peršom = I write with a pen, cf. Russ. пишу пером
 z (before vowels and voiced consonants) }
 (ž very rarely before nj) }
 med = between (rest), during
 za = behind (rest), after, because of; za lakoto umrjeti = to die of hunger
 pred = before (rest)
 pod = under (rest)
 nad = over (rest)

With Loc.:—

- v (pron. as v or u— see Acc. above) = in
 na = on
 o = about, concerning
 pri = at, near, with (Russ. y, Socr. koi)
 po = over, according to, by, after: po obedu = after dinner
 ob, o = by, at (of time): ob mörju = by the sea; o božicu = at Christmas

Monosyllabic prepositions are often combined with enclitic pronouns into one word (cf. p. 359). e.g.:—

pridi pôme = come and fetch me
 vsâk zâse = everyone for himself

The prefixes *pro-*, *pre-* and *va-* (O.S. *raz-*, often reduced to *s*, *a* or *v*) are not used as prepositions.

iz- is used for West and East Slav *vy-* (BY-).

THE CONJUGATION OF VERBS

The verbal conjugations in Slovenian are on the whole similar to those in Serbo-cr., but at the same time present a picture of transition, both in forms and use, to the conditions obtaining in West Slav languages.

Thus the main categories of verbs, divided according to their Present endings, agree fairly closely with those in Serbo-cr. But, as in West Slav languages, modern Slovenian knows no Aorist or Imperfect tenses, and its Future is formed with the Future of *bíti* (= to be): *bôm*, and the Past Participle Active in *-l*, as in Polish. The Supine also survives in Slovenian, as in Czech *spat* (= to sleep). The use of the Infinitive, as already mentioned (under "Features Characteristic of Slovenian" No. 23), is much wider in Slovenian than in Serbo-cr., and similar to its use in West and East Slav and West European languages. Like West Slav, too, Slovenian has a (declinable) Present Participle Active, as well as an (indeclinable) Present Gerund; but no declinable Past Participles Active (and very few Past Gerunds) are really alive any longer. The use of the Perfective Present is less restricted in Slovenian than in Serbo-cr. (see below), but it does not regularly acquire the meaning of a normal Future tense, as it has in West and East Slav.

Characteristically Slovenian is the rather frequent use of the Optative Mood which is formed by the present tense of either aspect preceded by the invariable auxiliary *nâj*. *Nâj* + the *Past Conditional* is used to render the Past Optative.

Except for Lusatian, Slovenian is the only language which uses the Dual number throughout all the forms of the verb in agreement with nouns, etc., in the Dual. This adds a burden for the foreign learner, even though the 2nd and 3rd persons dual always have the same endings; but it is not difficult to acquire the use of the dual as a speech habit, and its use makes for greater clarity. For what "we two" want or do may be very different from what "we" do in the general plural! In the 2nd and 3rd pers. dual the ending *-te* is sometimes used to, or of, two feminine or neuter persons, creatures or things as opposed to *-ta* for masculine nouns.

In Slovenian, alone of the South Slav languages, the verb *vêdêti* (= to know) still survives, as in West Slav.

The *Passive voice* is rendered by the same three periphrases as in most other Slav languages:—

the reflexive verb,¹ e.g.:—

Imenûjejo se = they are called

the impersonal use of the 3rd pers. plur. Ac-
tive with an object, e.g.:—

Hválíjo ga = he is praised

the verb "to be" + Past Participle Passive
(usually of Perfective verbs), e.g.:—

On je bil pohváľjen = he was praised

Tenses

The Present is the only surviving simple tense. The Future, the Past, for both aspects, and the Pluperfect, are compound tenses (see below). The Present Imperfective is used like the Present in other languages and offers no difficulties.

The use of the Perfective Present in Slovenian, however, should be specially noted, for while this tense does not acquire the meaning of a plain Future, as it does in West and East Slav, its use is far wider in Slovenian than in the other South Slav languages. It can be used—

(a) as an Historic Present in narration, after an introducing verb in the Past tense, as in Serbo-cr. It may then be followed by Imperfective Presents as well:—

Križman je bil pisár pri néki graščíni. Nêkdaj sta se Križman was a clerk in a castle estate. Once they two
šlâ on in njegovô gospôd izprehâjat po hôsti takô
went, he and his master, for a walk on a heath—so
daleč, da žê nísta védela, kjé sta.
far that they no longer knew where they were.

Gospôd se vîne (Přve. Pres.), Križman pa si urêže (Přve. Pres.)

The master goes back, but Križman cuts for himself.

v méji grčavko in hôdi (Impřve. Pres.) dálje
out of the hedge a knotted stick and walks further.

(b) to express a general truth without reference to any time—a gnomic use (cf. the "gnomic Aorist" in Ancient Greek). It is also used in science to state observed facts.—

Kâr ne prîde iz sîca, se ne prîme srcâ.

What does not come from the heart does not grip (move) the heart.

¹i.e. Active verb + the enclitic and separable Accusative Reflexive pronoun se.

Gosênica se zabûbi, zaspí in spomlâdi izfrfotâ metûlj.

The caterpillar changes into a chrysalis, goes to sleep, and in the spring a butterfly flutters out.

(c) in negative questions with a pronoun, usually understood, as subject, asking for a reason:—

Zakáj ne prîdeš? = Why don't (won't) you come?

These questions do not refer to any particular time or occasion; they imply: "Why don't you ever come?—You never seem to be prepared to."

(d) The Perfective Present can be used with a future meaning mainly in conditional clauses, in both parts, and in conditional, time and relative clauses:—

Če se na glâvo postâviš, ti ne dovôlim têga

= (Even) If you stand on your head, I won't allow you this.

Jâz se ne vđâm, doklêr me ne preprîčas z dokâzi.

= I won't give in until you convince me with proofs.

(e) Note the difference between:—

(i) Tô krâvo prodám = I will sell this cow,
i.e. I am ready to sell
this cow (I expect I
shall).

(ii) Tô krâvo bôm prodâl = I shall sell this cow,
i.e. I am sure I shall.

Example (i) illustrates the use of the Perfective Present to express possibility, willingness, etc. Cf. (c).¹

The Conditional mood is also expressed by a compound form consisting of the *invariable* auxiliary *bi* + Past Participle Active in -l. The personal pronoun is hence sometimes required for clarity. There is also a Past Conditional.

The other moods with forms of their own are the Imperative (formed from the Pres. stem), and the Optative. The Supine is used to express purpose after verbs of motion, as in Old Slavonic. (Note in example under (a) above: sta se šlâ *izprehâjat*).

Of the (indeclinable) Gerunds (verbal adverbs) only the Present (Active) is alive. The Past Gerund

¹The Perfective Present can also be used (f) in summaries, introductions, inscriptions, etc.; (g) in the 1st person singular with verbs of saying, denying, promising, ordering: rêčem = I say; obljudím = I promise.

in -(v)ši has remained genuinely alive for only a few Perfective verbs.

Of the Participles (declinable verbal adjectives) Slovenian has the Pres. Part. Active (usually formed from the Pres. stem), the Past Part. Active (ending in -l, -la, -lo) used to form the Future and Past tenses and also adjectivally from intransitive verbs, e.g.:—

pretéklo léto = the past year
otékale rokê = swollen hands

and the Past Part. Passive (usually formed from the Infinitive stem)—see above remarks on rendering the Passive voice.

As in the other Slav languages there are also Verbal Nouns in Slovenian ending in -nje, or -tje, formed from the Past Participle Passive.

Classification of Slovenian Verbs according to their Presents, with Subdivisions according to their Infinitives.

Most Slovenian grammars divide the verbs according to their Infinitive endings, on the model of Latin, etc., thereby obtaining six main headings and numerous sub-divisions according to the varying Presents, for the Infinitive in Slovenian is no clearer an indication of how to form the corresponding Present than it is in any other Slav language.

According to the endings of the Present, however, the same five main classes can be observed as in Serbocr., viz.:—

	(i) Present ending -e	(3rd person sing.)
(i)	"	" -ne "
(ii)	"	" -je "
(iii)	"	" -a "
(iv)	"	" -i "
(v)	"	" "

the personal endings being added to these vowels where required. The sub-divisions are according to the Infinitive ending:—

3rd pers. sing. Pres. Infinitive.

I.A.a. nése	nésti ¹	= carry. Same consonantal stem in Pres. and Infinitive.
začnè	začéti	= begin (Pfve.). Infinitive from -ati.

¹So also with velar stem:—

péce, 3rd p. pl. pécejo or pekó péči = to bake.
Imperat. péci! Cf. vřzem vréci = to throw, p. 388.

mrè or mrjè	mrèti	= die. Infinitive. -rèti from *-eriti.
b. plóve (or plúje—III)	plúti	= swim, float. Same (originally) vowel stem in Pres. and Infinitive.
B.a. bére	bráti	= collect, read. Infinitive from -ati.
II. dvigne	dvigniti	= lift (Pfve.). n-stem.

III. j-verbs.

1. Primary verbs:—

A.a. čuje	čúti	= hear. Same vowel stem in Pres. and Infinitive.
b. ¹ mëlje	młèti (<*melti)	= grind. Same consonantal stem in Pres. and Infinitive.
žanje	žéti	= reap. Cons. stem, Infinitive from -ati.

B. (Infinitives in -ati)

a. dáje (also dája) dájati	táje (also tája) tájati	rúje	r(u)váti	órje (also orā) oráti	píše
= give (Impfv.). Vowel stem, Infinitive from -ati.					
= melt.					
= tear out. -ati					
= plough. Cons. stem, Infinitive from -ati.					
= write. Cons. stem, Infinitive from -ati, with change of stem through yotation.					

2. Derived verbs (Imperfectives):—

kupûje	kupováti	= buy. -u- Pres. stem, -ova- Infinitive stem.
vojûje	vojeváti	= make war. -u- Pres. stem, -eva- Infinitive stem.
izpolnjûje	izpolnjeváti	= fulfil. -u- Pres. stem, -jeva- Infinitive stem.
plačûje	plačeváti	= pay. -u- Pres. stem, -jeva- Infinitive stem (with yotation).

The old stems in -eje- also belong to this category, e.g. umêje still survives, as well as umê, Infinitive. umèti (= understand, know how to).

IV. New class, as in Serbocr., contracted from verbs in -aje-.	dêla	dêlâti	= work.
	znâ	znâti	= know (how to); also = French connaître
V. A. hváli	hvalíti		= praise. -i- stem throughout

¹A rare class.

SLOVENIAN

B.	vídi	= see. -i- Pres. stem, -ěti Infin.
	drží	= hold. -i- Pres. stem, -ati Infin. from -brn after <i>chvintante</i>
	stojí	= stand. -i- Pres. stem, -ati Infin. (contracted).

All the four old athematic *-m* verbs have survived in Slovenian. They are given in full below, p. 387-8. The *-m* of the 1st pers. sing. Pres. has been generalized for literally all verbs, even *hóčem* (= I want), *môžem* (= I can), as in Slovak (*chcem, môžem*) — (cf. Serboocr. *xòžy, mòry*).

Tense and Mood endings and Formation.

Present: —

SING.		DUAL	
1st	2nd 3rd	1st	2nd and 3rd
koncã-	(masc. 1)	-va	-ta
nése-	(fem. and neut.)		
vídi-	occasionally		
	also	-ve	-te

1st	2nd	3rd
	stressed endings	unstressed endings
-mo	konĉaĵo (finish)	ĉeĵaĵo (work)
-te	konĉo (carry)	trĉeseĵo (shake)
	govore, or	vidiĵo (see)
	goviĉiĵo (speak)	

Imperative—added to the Present stem:—

		SING			DUAL		PLURAL	
		2nd (and rarely 3rd)			1st	2nd	1st	2nd
vb.	stems ending	lêz-	-i (climb)		-iva	-ita	-imo	-ite
	in a consonant:	nês-	-i (carry)		-îva	-îta	-îmo	-îte
		cvat	-î (flower)		-îva	-îta	-îmo	-îte
vb.	stems ending	dêla-	(work)					
	in a vowel:	koncâ-	-j (finish)	(koncâ)	-jva	-jta	-jmo	-jte
		kupû-	(buy)					

For the 3rd person of all three numbers the Optative form: naj + 3rd pers. Present, is usual, e.g. nàj nése = let him carry.

Past: —

Past Participle Active (varying in gender according to the subject) in:—

¹ Masc. endings also used for mixed genders.

sing.	-l (masc.)	-la (fem.)	-lo (neut.)	} added to the Infinitive stem (Infin. less -ti)
Dual	-la "	-li "	-li "	
Plur.	-li "	-le "	-la "	

used with—

SING.		DUAL			PLURAL		
1st	2nd	3rd	1st	2nd	3rd	1st	2nd
sem	si	je	sva	sta	sta	sno	ste
(used as enclitic auxiliaries)							
		3rd	1st	2nd	3rd	1st	2nd
		je	sva	sta	sta	sno	ste
		so					

If this auxiliary precedes the Past Participle the noun subject or Nom. Pers. Pronoun or some other stressed word must precede both, e.g.:—

iàz sem bîl	= I was (masc.)
-------------	-----------------

Jánez je bíl... = Janez was...

With v_i = you (polite) the Past Part. Act. is normally in the masc. plur.:

Vĩ ste bili = you were

Pluwerfect:—

past participle Active in -l, etc. (varying as
Pluperfect:--
 above) + past tense of *bfti* (= to be), --formed from
 perfective verbs only, e.g.:--

nâdel sem bil = I had fallen

padel sem bil = I was married
obljubil si bil = you (sg.) had promised

or (as above) —

OL (as above)
iãz sëm bîl pãdel

or else—

bíl sem pædel

Future: —

Future tense of bíti—

SING			DUAL			PLURAL		
1st	2nd	3rd	1st	2nd	3rd	1st	2nd	3rd
bōm	bōs	bō	bōva	bōsta	bōmo	bōmo	bōste	bōdō

(used as an enclitic auxiliary)

preceded by—

Past Participle Active in -l, etc. (varying as above), or *vice versa* and preceded by the subject or stressed word:--

dēlal bōm, or (jāz) bōm dēlal - I shall work

This formation of the Future applies to verbs of *both* aspects and is characteristic of Slovenian, e.g.:—

nap'isal bôm = I shall write (Pfve.)

Conditional: —

Conditional:--
 Past Participle Active in -l, etc. (as above) +
 bi (usually enclitic) for all persons. A subject--

noun or Nom. Pers. Pronoun—is required in order to show which person is meant, e.g.:—

délal bi = I, thou, or he would work

but—

jáz bi délal (only) = I would work

Past Conditional:—

Conditional of bíti: bíl (etc.) bi + Past. Part. Active in -l, etc. (varying as above), or *vice versa*:—

(ón) bíl bi délal = (he) would have worked

or—

délal bi bíl = I, thou, or he would have worked

The verb bíti = to be, has no Past Conditional.

Optative (usually only used in 1st and 3rd persons):—

náj + Pres. Pfve. or Impfve., e.g.:—

náj déla = let him work. Káj náj storím? = What should I do?

The Optative is also used for Indirect Commands: Ón je rēkel, naj mu dām knjigo = He told me to give him the book.

Past Optative (1st and 3rd persons only):—

náj + Conditional of bíti: bi bíl (etc.) + Past Part. Act. in -l, etc.:—

náj bi bíl vědel = if only he had known! (would that he had known!)

Infinitive termination:—

-ti; but -ži for velar stems of Cl. I, (colloquially the final -i can be dropped) e.g.:—

délati = to work péči = to bake

Supine termination:—

-t (for Imperfective vbs. only); velar stems of Cl. I -ž: pēč.

The object of the Supine goes in the Genitive or the Accusative.

E.g.: Grēm júhe kúhat = I am going (off) to cook (the) soup

Present Gerund (Active):—

(Some) intransitive Imperfective Present verb stems + ě, e.g.:—

grēm = I go; vb. stem gred-, gredě
molčím = I am silent; molčě

¹Equivalent to: náj + Past Conditional.

Imperfective vbs. with Infinitives in -ati drop the -ti and add -aje, e.g.:—

stopáje = stepping
kupovaje = buying

Past Gerund (Active)—rare:—

formed from the Infinitive stem of some Pfve. vbs.:—
consonantal verb stems add -ži: rékši = having said
vocalic verb stems add -vži: skrivši = having hidden

The accent always falls on the syllable before the -(v)ži.

Present Participle Active—(formed from Impfve. vbs.):—

3rd pers. plur. Pres. (shorter forms)¹ + ž:—

gredōč = going

trpěč = suffering (3rd pers. plur. Pres. trpě or trpíjo)

delajōč = working

kupujoč = buying

Can be used in Nom. sing. masc. for Pres. Gerund:—

Mímo gredōč sem pozdrávila tvójo máter

= Going by, I (fem.) greeted your mother

The accent always falls on the ending.

Past Participle Active:—

Infinitive stem (usually = Infin. less -ti*) + -l, etc. (see Past tense above)—for verbs of either aspect; ə is the fill-vowel in the masc. sing.

*Exceptions are:—

dental stems of Class I, e.g.:—

pásti (stem pad-) = to fall; P.P.A. m. pádel, f. pádla, or m. pāl, f. pála.

labial stems of Class I, e.g.:—

tépsti (stem tep-) = to hit; P.P.A. m. tépel, f. tépla.

velar stems of Class I, e.g.:—

péči (stem pek-) = to bake; P.P.A. m. pékel, f. pékla.

r-stems of Class I lose -etú, e.g.:—

umrėti = to die; P.P.A. m. umřl, f. umřla.

¹But from bósti = to prick - boděč, from grébsti = to scratch, grebōč; note also from čúti = to hear, čujěč or čujōč.

Past Participle Passive (formed mainly from transitive verbs, more often Perfectives):—

This is formed in four different ways from the Infinitive stem with the endings:—

<i>Sing. m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	<i>n. Du. m.</i>	<i>f. and n. Pl. m.</i>	<i>f. n.</i>
either (a)	-n, -na, -no	-ni	-ni	-ni, -ne, -na
or (b)	-t, -ta, -to	-ti	-ti	-ti, -te, -ta

1. All verbs with Infinitive in *-ati* or of Class VB in *-eti* add endings (a) to the Infinitive stem:—

zdelan	= finished	napisan	= written
kupován	= bought	obrân	= picked
vîden	= seen	zadržân	= detained

2. Consonant stem verbs of Class IAa and many less common verbs with Infinitives in *-iti* of Class VA have endings (a) preceded by *e*:—

pletên	= woven	zmôten	= disturbed
pečen	= baked (with 1st Palatalization!)		

3. Verbs of Class II (Infin. in *-niti*) and the commoner verbs of Class VA have the endings (a) preceded by *je*, with yotation of the preceding consonant:—

okrênjen	= turned	hvaljen	= praised
izgubljen	= lost	ponôšen	= worn out
zapuščen	= neglected	zamujen	= missed

4. Nasal and *r*-stem verbs of Classes I and III and vowel and consonant stem verbs of Class III 1 A have endings (b) added to the Infinitive stem:—

začêt	= begun	potît	= depressed	požêt	= reaped
skrît	= covered	obût	= shod	zmlêt	= ground

Verbal Noun:—

Formed by adding *-je* to the (sometimes supposed) form of the Past Part. Passive of most Imperfective and many Perfective verbs. Verbal nouns from Perfective verbs express a result.

E.g.:— sedênje = sitting But presenêčenje = surprise
pêtje singing zdrúženje = union
ležânje = lying vzêtje = capture

Examples of the Conjugation of the Regular Verbs, showing varieties of accentuation:—

1. *e*-class

lêsti = to climb trêsti = to shake plêsti = to weave začêti = to begin (Pfve.)

SUPINE	(lêst)	trést	plêst
PRESENT			
Sing. 1	lêzem	trêsem	plêtem
2	lêzeš	trêseš	plêteš
3	lêze	trêse	plête
Dual 1	lêzeva	trêseva	plêteva
2 and 3	lêzeta	trêseta	plêteta
Plur. 1	lêzemo	trêsemo	plêtemo
2	lêzete	trêsete	plêtete
3	lêzejo	trêsejo,	plêtô
		trêsô	
IMPERATIVE			
Sing. 2nd	lêzi	trêsi	plêti
Dual 1st	lêziva	trêsiva	pletiva
2nd	lêzita	trêsita	pletita
Plur. 1st	lêzimo	trêsimo	pletimo
2nd	lêzite	trêsite	pletite
PRES. PART ACTIVE			pletôc
PAST PART. ACTIVE			
	lêzel	trêsel	plêtel or plêl
	lêzla	trêsla	plêtla " plêla
	lêzlo	trêslo	plêtlo " plélo
	etc.	etc.	etc.
PAST PART. PASSIVE			
	—	raztrêsen	pletên
	—	raztrêsenâ	pletêna
	—	raztrêseno	pletêno
	—	etc.	etc.
2. <i>-ne</i> class.			
vêniti = to fade	krenîti = to turn (Pfve.)		páhnîti = to push (Pfve.)
SUPINE	—	—	—
PRESENT			
Sing. 1	vênem	krênem	páhnem
2	vêneš	krêneš	páhneš
3	vêne	krêne	páhne
Dual 1	vêneva	krêneva	páhneva
2 and 3	vêneta	krêneta	páhnetâ
Plur. 1	vênemo	krênemo	páhneino
2	vênete	krênete	páhnete
3	vênejo	krênejo	páhnejo
IMPERATIVE			
Sing. 1	vênî	krênî	pahnî
Dual 1	vêniva	krenîva	pahnîva
2	vênita	krenîta	pahnîta

začêl Pl. začêlî
začêla
začêlo

Plur. 1	vénimo	krenímo	pahnímo
2	vénite	kreníte	pahníto
PAST PART. ACTIVE			
	zvenil	krenil	pahnil
	zvenila	krenila	pahníla
	zvenilo	krenílo	pahnílo
	etc.		etc.

PAST PART. PASSIVE

okrenjen pahnjen

Verbs of the type of kreníti can also have ' on the first syllable in the Infinitive.

3. -je class

kříti = cover kováti = to forge písati = to write vérovati = to believe kupováti = to buy

SUPINE

(světovat = kupovat (kupovati)
to advise)

PRESENT

Sing. 1	křijem	kujem	pišem	verujem	kupujem
2	křiješ	kúješ	pišeš	véruješ	kupúješ
3	křije	kúje	piše	véruje	kupúje
Dual 1	křijeva	kújeva	piševa	vérujeva	kupújeva
2 and 3	křijeta	kújeta	pišeta	vérujeta	kupújeta
Plur. 1	křijemo	kujemo	pišemo	verujemo	kupujemo
2	křijete	kújete	pišete	vérujete	kupújete
3	křijejo	kújejo	pišejo	vérujejo	kupújejo

IMPERATIVE

Sing. 2	křij	kúj	piši	véruj	kupúj
Dual 1	křijva	kújva	pišiva	vérujva	kupújva
2	křijta	kújta	pišita	vérujta	kupújta
Plur. 1	křijmo	kujmo	pišimo	verujmo	kupujmo
2	křijte	kújte	pišite	vérujte	kupújte

PRES. GERUND

kupováje

PRES. PART. ACTIVE

pišč vėrujšč

PAST PART. ACTIVE

křil	kovāl	pisal	vėroval	kupovāl (kupóval)
kříla	kovāla	pisāla	vėrovala	kupovāla
křílo	kovālo	pisālo	vėrovalo	kupovālo
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.	

PAST PART. PASSIVE

skřit	kovān	pisān	zavėrovan	kupovān
skříta	kovāna	pisāna	zavėrovana	kupovāna

¹As adjective, = variegated.

PAST PART. PASSIVE (contd.)

skřito kovāno písano zavėrovano kupovāno
etc. etc. etc. etc.

Verbs with Infin. in -evāti follow kupováti,
e.g. :—

plačevāti = pay

4. -a class.

dėlati = to work, do jokāti or jókati = to weep končāti = to finish (Pfive.)

SUPINE:

dėlat jókati

PRESENT

Sing. 1	dėlam	jókam	or	jóčem	končām
2	dėlaš	jókāš		jóčes	končāš
3	dėla	jóka		jóče	končā
Dual 1	dėlava	jókava		jóčeva	končava
2 and 3	dėlata	jókata		jóčeta	končata
Plur. 1	dėlamo	jókamo		jóčemo	končamo
2	dėlate	jókate		jóčete	končate
3	dėlajo	jókajo		jóčejo	končajo

IMPERATIVE

Sing. 2	dėlaj	jókaj	or	jóči	končaj
Dual 1	dėlajva	jókajva	or	jóčiva	končajva
2	dėlajta	jókajta		jóčita	končajta
Plur. 1	dėlajmo	jókajmo		jóčimo	končajmo
2	dėlajte	jókajte		jóčite	končajte

PRES. GERUND

jokáje

PRES. PART. ACTIVE

jokajšč

PAST GERUND

pridelávši

PAST PART. ACTIVE

dėlal	jókāl	končāl
dėlala	jókāla	končāla
dėlalo	jókālo	končālo
etc.	plur. jokāli, -e, -a	etc.

PAST PART. PASSIVE

zdėlan zjókan

Like dėlati in accent also verbs of Class III,
e.g. mázati, mážem = I smear.

Like jókati in accent also verbs of Class III, e.g. písati (also písati), písem = I write (cf. p. 384).

5. *i*-class.

vídeti = to see Želēti = to wish motíti = to disturb
 sedēti = to sit

SUPINE

PRESENT

			mōtīt
Sing. 1	vīdīm	žēlīm	sedīm
2	vīdīš	žēlīš	sedīš
3	vīdī	žēlī	sedī
Dual 1	vīdīva	žēlīva	sedīva
2 and 3	vīdīta	žēlīta	sedīta
Plur. 1	vīdīmo	žēlīmo	sedīmo
2	vīdīte	žēlīte	sedīte
3	vīdījo	žēlījo (žēlījo)	sedījo, sedē

IMPERATIVE

Sing. 2	vīsī	žēlī	sédi
	(=hang)		
Dual 1	vīsīva	žēlīva	sedīva
2	vīsīta	žēlīta	sedīta
Plur. 1	vīsīmo	žēlīmo	sedīmo
2	vīsīte	žēlīte	sedīte

PRES. GERUND

žēlē

PRES. PART. ACTIVE

viđēč želēč

PAST GERUND

zažēlěvši zmōtīvši se

PAST PART. ACTIVE

vīdel	žēlel	sedel
vīdela	želēla	sedēla
vīdelo	želēlo	sedēlo
etc.	etc.	etc.

PAST PART. PASSIVE

vīden	zažēlēn	zmōten	vrtēn (=turned)
vīdena	zažēlēna	zmōtena	vrtēna
vīdeno	zažēlēno	zmōteno	vrtēno
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

Like vídeti in accent: mīsliti = to think.

Like želēti in accent: podīti—Supine podīt! = to chase out.

Verbs in *-im*, *-ati* behave like the above models, e.g. klečīm, klečāti (= to kneel) follows želēti. Only reference to a fully accented dictionary or experience can give an indication as to which accent type a given verb of any class follows.

Conjugation of the most important Irregular Verbs in Slovenian

The Athematic (-m) verbs.

dāti védeti jēsti bīti
 = to = to = to = to
 give know eat be
 (Pfv.)

SUPINE

PRESENT

		jēst			FUTURE
Sing. 1	dām	jēm	sem ¹	bōm, ²	bōdem
2	dáš	jēs	sī	bōš	bōdeš
3	dā	jē	jē	bō	bōde
Dual 1	dāva	jēva	svā, svē	bōva	bōdeva
2 and 3	dāsta	jēstā	stā, stē	bōsta	bōdeta
Plur. 1	dāmo	jēmō	smō	bōmo	bōdemo
2	dāste	jēstē	stē	bōste	bōdete
3	dadō	vedō jējo or jedō	sō	bōdō (bōjo	dial.)
	dadē	véjo			

IMPERATIVE

Sing. 2	dāj	védi (but: pověj = say)	jēj	bōdi
Dual 1	dājva	védiva (povějva, etc.)	jējva	bōdiva
2	dājta	védita	jējta	bōdita
Plur. 1	dājmo	védimo	jējmo	bōdimo
2	dājte	véдите	jējte	bōdite

PRES. GERUND

vedē jedē

PRES. PART. ACTIVE

vedōč jedōč (bōdōč, adj., =future)

PAST GERUND

podāvši zvēdevši pojēdši (bīvši, adj., =past, former)

PAST PART. ACTIVE

dāl	védel	jēdel or jēl	bil	sg. du. pl.
dála	védela	jēla	bilā	bilā bilī or -ī
dālo	védelo	jēlo	bilō (bilō)	bilī bilā
etc.	etc.	etc.		

¹Special negative form (with ní- prefixed in all persons except the 3rd p. sing.):—Sing. nīsem, nīsi, 3rd p. s. ní, Du. nīsva, nīsta, Pl. nīsmo, nīste, nīso.

²dobīti = to receive, get (pfve.), follows either bīti, bōm, or Cl. VA: Pres. (Fut.) dobōm or dobīm, Imperat. dobōdi, or dóbi, P.P.A. dōbīl, P.P.P. dōbljēn, -éna.

PAST PART. PASSIVE

dán	izvêden	pojêden
dána	izvêdena	pojêdena
dáno	izvêdeno	pojêdeno

Other Verbs

hóčem, 3rd pers. pl. hóčejo, hotéti, hótél, hotéla (= to want), has Imperat. hótí, Pres. P.A. hotêč, Pres. Ger. hotê. When negative, the Pres. tense has the form nóčem, nóčeš, etc. (or néčem, néčeš).

môrem, môreš, etc., móči, mógel, móglá (= to be able) has Pres. P.A. mogôč; also, like it: pomôrem, pomóči, Imper. pomózi! pomozíva! (= to help, Pfive.), and onemôrem, o(b)nemóči (= to grow weak). imâm, imâš, imâjo, imêti, imêl, imêla, Imper. imêj! (= to have), has negative Present nimam, etc. (znâm, znâti, = to know, is regular.)

Note also (*marks typical verb for consonant-stem sub-groups of Cl. I)

Present *Infín.* Past Part. Act. *Imperat.*

Class I râstem	râsti	râstel, -tla or râsel, = to grow
or râsem		-sla
cvêtem	cvêti	cvêl, cvêlâ ¹ cvetí! = to flower
or cvetím or	cvêti	or cvêla
	cvetêti(Cl.V)	
*plêtem	plêsti	plêtel or plêl = to weave
*sêdem	sêsti	sêdel, sêdla, = to sit down (Pfive.)
		or sêl, sêla
*skúbem	skúbsti	oskûbel = to pluck
*lêžem	lêči	lêgel, lêgla, -o lêzi! = to lie down (Pfive.)
*rêčem	rêči	rêkel, rêkla réci! = to say (Pfive.)
*vîžem	vrêči	vîgel vîzi! = to throw (Pfive.)
* (u)mrêm	(u)mrêti (u)mrl	= to die (Pfive. with u-)
or umrjem		

târem trêti tîl = to rub, grind

vrêm vrêti vrêl vrî! = to boil (intrans.)
vzâmem vzêti vzêl vzêmi! = to take (Pfive.)²

¹Also cvetêl, cvetlà or the newer forms cvêtel, cvêtla.

²So also posnâmem posnêti = to take off, record (Pfive.)

jâmem	jâti	jêl	= to start, begin (Pfive.)
kólnem	klêti	klêl	= to curse
naspêm	nasúti	nasûl	= to pour out (Pfive.)
or nasûjem			
plêvem	plêti	plêl	= to weed
žénem	gnâti	gnâ, gnâla	= to drive
tkêm	tkâti	tkâ, tkâla	= to weave
or tkâm			
žgêm	žgâti	žgâl	= to burn, distil, roast (cof-fee)
pšém	phâti	phâl	= to stamp, pound
or phâm			

Past Part. Pass. phân or pšên, pšéna

bérem brâti brâl, brâla = to collect, to read
zôvem zvâti zvâl, zvâla = to call

Class II utégmem utégniti (regular) stâl = to have time to (Pfive.)
stânem stâti stâl = to cost
{ dénem (Pfive.) dêti dêl, dêla }
{ dêjem dejâti dejâl } = to put, do, say

Class III pôšljem poslâti poslâl, -slâla pôslji! = to send (Pfive.)
postêljem postlâti postlâl, -âla postêlji! = to spread (Pfive.)
pôljem plâti plâl, plâla pôlji! = to winnow, swirl
kôljem klâti klâl, klâla kôlji! = to slaughter
žânjem žêti žêl, žêla žnji or žánji! = to harvest
dâjem { dâjati dajâl, dajâla dâjaj! } = to give (Impfive.)
sg. only)

dâjem { pêti pêl, pêla } = to sing
pójem stêti stêl, stêla = to count
stêjem umêti umêl, umêla = to know how to
or umêjem spêti spêl spêla = to hasten
or spêjem smêjem se, smêjati se, smêjâl se, smêj sel = to laugh
or smêjam se or smêjaj se

Class IV glêdam glêdati glêdal, -a glêj! = to look

môram	môrati	quite regular, used with Infinitive	= to have to (must)
Class V	spím	following	
stojim	spáti	spál,-a	= to sleep
bojim se	státi	stál	= to stand
	báti se	bój se	= to fear

Verbs of Going and Conveying¹

Grém, gréš, gré, gréva,¹ grésta,¹ grémo,¹ gréste,¹
3rd pl. gredó (or gréjo¹), also accented² (on last
syllable): grém, gréva, etc. Infin. iti, P.P.A. šél,
šlà, šlò, Imper. pójdi! = to go (Impfve.), Fut.
pójdem² or bóm šél, Pres. Ger. gredó, Pres. Part.
gredóč.

hódim	Infin.	P.P.A.	Imperat. hódí!
= to walk, go	hodíti	hódil, hodíla	hodíte!
(Freq.)			
prídem,	príti,	prišél, prišla,	Impfve. prihájati
= to come			
(Pfv.)			
odídem,	odíti,	odšél, etc.	Impfve. odhájati
= to go away			
(Pfv.)			
izídem,	izíti,	izšél,	Impfve. izhájati
= to go out			
(Pfv.)			
nájdem,	nájtí,	nášél, našla,	Impfve. nahájati
= to find	or našél, našla		
(Pfv.)	Imper. nájdí!		
doídem,	Past Part. Pass. nájden, nájdena		
= to reach	doíti, P.P.A. došél,	Impfve. dohájati	

Present *Infin.* *Past Part. Act.* *Past Part. Pass.*
To carry = nésem nésti (Impfve.) nésel,³ nésla nesèn, neséna
nôsim nosíti (Freq.) nòsil, nosíla (po)nôšen, -a
ponésem ponésti (Pfv.)

To bring (carrying) = Impfve. prinášati Pfv. prinésti
To lead = védem vésti (Impfve.) védel, védla (od)vedèn, -éna
vôdim vodíti (Freq.) vódil, vodíla vójen, -a
povédem povésti (Pfv.)

To bring (a person) = Impfve. privâjati Pfv. privésti
To convey = peljem peljâti (Impfve.) also = to drive
also peljâm

vôzim vozíti (Freq.) vózil, vozíla (po)vôžen, -a
popéljem popeljâti (Pfv.)

To bring (conveyed) = Impfve. dovâžati Pfv. pripéljati

¹Or else with é (open).

²poíde, poíti, pošél, pošlà = to come to an end, run out.

³Colloquially pronounced nêsu.

The Formation of Aspects

Aspects in Slovenian are largely used and formed in the same way as in other Slavonic languages. (For the various uses of the Perfective Present, see above pp. 374-375). They are formed:—

1. The Perfective from the (simple) Imperfective by adding a prepositional prefix, e.g.:—

písati	= to write	napísati
prosíti	= to request	poprosíti
píti	= to drink	popíti, izpíti

2. The Imperfective from the (simple or compound) Perfective by lengthening a root vowel or inserting a syllable, e.g.:—

odgovoríti	= to answer	odgovârjati
umrêti	= to die	umirati
pomôči	= to help	pomágati
kupíti	= to buy	kupováti
postáti	= to become	postâjati
dâti	= to give	dajâti
ubíti	= to kill	ubijati
prejêti	= to receive	prejêmati
pláčati (Pfv.)	><Socr. nâhârû (Impfve.)	
	= to pay	plačevâti
oplodíti	= to fertilize	oplâjati
spoznâti	= to recognize	spoznâvati
rêšiti	= to save, solve	reševâti

3. The Imperfective from the Perfective by changing the Infinitive ending, e.g.:—

pustíti	= to let, allow	púščati
dvígniti	= to lift	dvíigati
udâriti	= to strike	udârjati
lêči	= to lie down	lêgati
kreníti	= to turn, start	krêtati

4. By using different forms of the same root or two entirely different roots, e.g.:—

Pfv.	Impfve.
vzêti (Pres. vzámem)	jemâti (Pres. jémlem)
príti	prihâjati
začêti	začênjati
prinésti	prinâšati (not *prinositil!)
vrêči	metâti
rêči	govoríti, práviti
storíti	{ dêlati
naredíti	{ narêjati

One cannot tell only from the form of a verb to which aspect it belongs, except in the case of verbs with Infinitives in -ávati, -eváti and -ováti, which are Imperfective. As in other Slavonic languages, compound Perfective verbs acquire Imperfective aspects mostly by method No. 2 above, e.g.:—

vzdígniti (Pfve.)	= to pick up	vzdígováti
podpísati	" = to sign	podpisováti
potopíti	" = to drown (trans.)	potápljati

WORD ORDER WITH ENCLITICS

Slovenian, like Serbocroatian, has both freedom of word order like other Slavonic languages and certain rules with regard to the obligatory position of enclitic words in a written or spoken sentence. These rules are different in some respects from those in Serbocroatian.

The enclitics in Slovenian are:—

1. The auxiliary verbs (a) of the Past tense: *sem, si, je, sva, sta, smo, ste, so.* (No accents!).
(b) usually also of the Conditional mood: *bi.*
(c) the shorter form of the Future tense auxiliaries (which are the usual ones to use): *bô̂m, bô̂š, bô̂, bô̂va, bô̂sta, bô̂mo, bô̂ste, bô̂dô.*

2. The shorter forms of the Personal and Reflexive Pronouns: Gen./Acc. *me, te, se, ga; Gen. fem. je (= of her); Acc. fem. jo; Gen./Acc. naju, vaju, nas, vas, ju, jih; Dat. mi (= to me), ti (= to you, sg.), si, mu, ji, nama, vama, nam, vam, jima, jim.*

The rule is that the *sentence* must start with a strong, i.e. non-enclitic accented word, except when—

- (a) the interrogative particle "ali" is left out, or
- (b) answering a question or referring explicitly to something in the preceding question or sentence and therefore implying a certain amount of emphasis on the pronoun. (Both these cases are rare in practice.)

After this accented word and any words closely associated with it and together expressing one idea, the enclitics must follow in the following order:—

1. The auxiliary verb—any of the above except *je* and the Future auxiliaries.
2. The Reflexive Pronoun, either Acc. or Dat., if present.
3. The Dat. Personal Pronoun.
4. The Gen. or Acc. Personal Pronoun.
5. *je* or the Future auxiliaries, *bô̂m, bô̂š, etc.*

E.g.:—

With auxiliary verb and pronouns:—

Jàz sem ga vídel, or

Vídel sem ga = I have seen him.

but—

Jánež ga je vídel = Janez has seen him.

likewise—

Lépi Jánez ga je vídel = Handsome Janez has seen him.

Jánež bi ga vídel = Janez would see him.

Ljudjê so jo vídeli = People saw her.

Jàz sem mu ga dàl = I gave it to him.

Jánež ji ga je dàl = Janez gave it to her.

With Reflexive Pronoun, as well as auxiliary verb and other pronoun:—

Jàz sem si jih kúpil, or

Kúpil sem si jih

Ti si si ju kúpil = I have bought them for myself.
= You have bought them (two) for yourself

but—

Maríja si ga je kúpila

= Mary has bought it for herself.

Again—

Maríja bi si ga kúpila

= Mary would buy it for herself.

Ljudjê so si jih vzéli = People have taken them for themselves.

= I was bathing (myself).

Jàz sem se kópal, or

Kópal sem se

Jàz sem se mu pokázal

= I showed myself (appeared) to him.

Pokázali so se mu = They showed themselves to him.

but—

Jánež se mi je pokázal

= Janez showed himself to me.

Jánež se nam ga je iznêbil

= Janez has got rid of it for us.

(Note that Slovenian, like western Sbc., but not

eastern, preserves je with se.)

with Future auxiliary and pronoun:—

Jàz ga bõm vídel, or = I shall see him.

Vídel ga bõm

Maríja jo bõ vídela

Ti se ga bõs bál

= Mary will see her.

= You will be afraid of him.

But when the *negative* is introduced, the Past auxiliaries, which are then prefixed by *ní-* (except in the 3rd pers. sing. which *becomes ní-*)—cease to be enclitics, e.g.:—

Jàz ga níssem vídel = I have not seen him.

Jánež ga ní vídel = Janež has not seen him.

Jàz mu ga níssem dāl = I have not given it to him.

Maríja si ga ní kupíla = Mary has not bought it (for herself).

Jánež se mi ní pokázal = Janež has not shown himself to me.

Note also the usual order with negative Future and Conditional with enclitics, e.g.:—

Maríja je ne bõ vídela = Mary will not see her.

and—

Maríja je ne bi vídela = Mary would not see her.

But note:—

Sentences starting with enclitics under the conditions explained above (p. 392, last paragraph).

(a) Si ga vídel? for Āli si = Have you seen him?
ga vídel?

Si se ga žê naveličal? = Have you already got tired of it?

(b) (Āli si mój prijātelj? = Are you my friend?)

Answer: Sêm tvój

prijātelj

(Āli ga poznā?

Answer: Ga ne poznā = Does he know him?)

= He does not know him.

The other important difference, in comparison with Serbo-cr., is that in Slovenian, when a sentence has once started with a subordinate clause, that clause is treated as the initial strong word or word group for the main clause, and the main clause may then follow, even after a comma, *starting* with the enclitics (in the usual order). Compare:—

Óče slovęnskaga slõvstva = The father of Slovenian literature is Primož Trubar.

Trubar.

Děcek z objókkanimi očmí se = The boy with his tearful eyes moved me to pity.

mi je v srcě smílil = When Lavdon was besieging

kò je Lávdon oblěgal Běograd, se je Věga Belgrade, Vega first dis-

přivč odlikovál v vójski tinguished himself in the war

strāst, kí ga je iméla v = The passion which held him in its power, was

oblāsti, se mu je poznāla pri vsāki besēdi recognizable in his every word.

As in Serbo-cr., the same auxiliary is not repeated with successive verbs if they are closely connected by sense, e.g.:—

Ozfla sta se na jokajōčo = They (two) looked round at the sobbing mother and

māter in obstāla srēdi stopped in the middle of

sōbe the room.

Prišēl sem, vídel in = I came, I saw, I con-

zmāgal quered.

The longer forms of the Personal Pronouns are used for emphasis only, as in other South and West Slav languages:—

Njéga se ne bõm bál = Of him I won't be afraid!

The interrogative particle āli (like other interrogatives—adverbial or pronominal) should always start a question. After āli the enclitics follow in the usual order:—

Āli si mu ga dāl? = Have you given it to him?

Āli je Jánež bīl v = Has Janež been to

Ljubljāni? Ljubljana?

cf.:—

Kjé jih je Jánež = Where has Janež seen

vídel? them?

But the less frequent interrogative particle "li" stands second word in a question:—

Jè li rēs? = Is it true?

TEXTS

I

Sv. LUKEŽ, pogl. VIII.

5. Sejalec je šel sejat seme svoje. In ko seje, pade nekatero poleg ceste, in ga pogazijo, in ptice nebeške ga pozobljejo.

6. In drugo pade na skalo, in bržko vzraste, usahne, ker nima vlage.

7. In drugo pade sredi trnja, in trnje zraste ž njim vred in ga uduši.

8. In drugo pade na dobro zemljo, in ko zraste, prinese stoteren sad. Ko to pravi, zakliče: Kdor ima ušesa, da sliši, naj sliši!

II. F. PREŠEREN.

MEMENTO MORI

Dolgóst življenja našega je kratka.

Kaj znancev je zasula že lopáta!
Odpřta noč in dan so gróba vrata;
al' dneva ne pove nobena prat'ka.

Před smřtjo ne obvár' je koža gladka,
od nje nas ne odkup'jo kupi zlata,
ne odpodí od nas življenja tata
vesélja hrup, ne pevcev pesem sladka.

Naj zmislí, kdor slepóto ljubi svéta
in od veselja do veselja leta,
da smřtna žetva vsak dan bolj dozóri.

Znabití, da kdor zdaj vesel prepeva,
v mřtváškem prtu nam před koncem dneva
molčé trobéntal bo: "Memento mori!"

III. IVAN CANKAR.

DESETICA

Dvanajst ali trinajst let mi je bilo; hodil sem v tretji razred realke. Ob desetih, ob uri počitka so vstali vsi, da bi si šli kupit malice k vratarju ali prebogat se po dvorišču. Grabilo me je za srce, da sem sam, čisto sam. Prišel je tovariš in rekel: "Ti, zate je pismo!"

Res je bilo na deski napisano moje ime. Šel sem k vratarju. Ko sem pismo dobil, so se mi roke tresle in skril sem se k oknu, da bi ne videl tega svetega pisma nobeno nevedno oko. Odpiral sem počasi in čisto čudno, veselo in težko mi je bilo pri srcu. Tam so bile tiste velike, težke, neokretne črke: "Ljubi sin!" Zakaj mati se je bila šele od nas otrok naučila pisati, zato da bi je ne bilo sram. Ko sem razgrnil pismo, je zaklenketalo po tleh. Sklonil sem se in sem pobral: desetica je bila.

Tista tenka, ogoljena srebrna desetica, ki jih že zdavnaj ni več. Ko sem jo vzel v roko, me je obšlo kakor milost božja. Vse je vztrepetaló, vzplapolalo v meni, vzdignilo me kvišku kakor v plamenu ljubezni. Videl sem tisto ljubo, velo, trepetajočo roko, ki je držala med prsti poslednjo desetico ter jo naposled spustila v pismo. Zakaj desetica je bila poslednja, to sem vedel, kakor da je bilo na njej sami to napisano.

Skril sem se čisto v kot, da bi me nihče ne

videl. Iz srca, iz prsi, iz vsega telesa mi je planil jok, stresal me kakor v vročici. Ali ko sem se vračal po stopnicah v šolsko izbo, je bilo v meni svetlo, svetlo. Iz daljave je videla mati mojo bolest in se je smehljaje ozrla name, kakor se ozre samo ljubo sonce.

IV. ALOJZ GRADNIK.

PRIČAKOVANJE

Kakó te čakam, o kakó te čakam!
Ko pride v hišo gost moj, črni mrak,
poslušam, ali čujem tvoj korak.
in vprašam: "Sam?"—"Sam, sam," mi tiho reče.
O, da bi vedel ti, kako me peče
in grize me beseda ta vso noč.

Vso dolgo noč je póstelj moja prazna
in vso, vso noč premolím, kakor blazna
ime presladko tvoje jecljajoč.

V. OTON ŽUPANČIČ.

MENI SE HOČE...

Meni se hoče širokih ravnin
in svobodnega obzorja,
meni se hoče mogočnih višin,
vladajočih zemljé in morja.

Meni se hoče čarobnih noči
in neba, ki se koplje v zarji,
in goščav, kjer hrupa človeškega ni,
in v vrhovih vale se viharji.

In viharjem bi dal svoje črne strasti
in v morjé bi potopil bolesti,
da mi duša očiščena v soncu živi,
polna jasne, ponosne zavesti!

VI. OTON ŽUPANČIČ. (Accented by Professor FRAN RAMOVŠ.)

Z VLÂKOM

Odhód. In zažvižgal je vlâk skozi mrâk.
O devôjka ti, ob ôknu sloné,
si-li čûla ta vrisk, plakajóč skozi nôč:
o zbôgom, domovína!

In kakor ovíje se vâl okrog skâl,
ob Grâdu se líje Ljubljána,
vsâ z mēsecem posejána;
bojčé se stréhe stískajo,
po vřsti mi križi blískajo
poslédnji, zlát pozdráv
in gâsnejo v mrâku daljáv.

Pošábstno sopihajôč
kot démon vlâk grè v nôč.

Mejica téče ob tíru,
za njô v polnôčnem míru
gubíjo se pôlja, s stezâmi prepêta,
tâm brêza samotna, kraljična zaklêta,
glèj, mèsecu kâže srebñni nakít.
Z goré razgledûje se Máti Maríja,
sijâjna, pokôjna zrè svêt pod sebôj,
sijâjna, pokôjna razlîva svít...
Vasica með drêvjem... in tâm domačîja
gozdárja na sâmem... in vsè za menôj.

Pošábstno sopihajôč
kot démon vlâk grè v nôč.

Skrîj mèsce, za oblâk se skrîj,
nâj je ne vídim, kakô beží,
kakô ostâja za mâno
domovîna...

S sílo neznâno
si sêgla mi do dúše globîn:
dozdâj nísem védel, kakô sem tvôj sîn,
kakô te ljúbim globôko...

Domovîna, dâj mi rôko,
ne bèží, ostâni pri ménî,
tesnô, tesnô me oklèni,
in pêl ti bom pèsem visôko,
pêl máteri česčèni,
kot ní ti sè nihčè pêl...
Síc milijôn bom razvnêl,
uklónil jih tvôji oblâsti,
raznêtil v dúšah strasti
bom plemeníte, mláde,
da radovôljno zakláde
nâjdrâžje pred-tê položé.

Zvêzde, stopíte z zenîta
stímih višîn!

Klíče vas sîn,
ki vsè predôlgo v sícu mu spíta
tíпка bolêst in ljubêzen, sè nêma...
V vénec skleníte se, njô naj objêma,
njô, za vekôve bolečîn.

Dâj svôjo glórijo, jútranja zârja!
Klíčem tè srèdi pôlnoči,
klíčem tè z glâsom stražárja,
ki štéje ùre, ko nôč leží.
Dâj svoj škrlât,
njô ž njím ognî,

ki žalovâla v oblâki je čfni
dôlge noči brez nâd.

Ne bèží, ostâni pri ménî,
domovîna, tesnô me oklèni!

Pošábstno sopihajôč
kot démon vlâk grè v nôč.

Beží... vse beží... Le v dâjji planîne!
Tâm zémlja je náša zakipêla,
zahrepênêla, v nebô je hotêla,
v višîno pognâla se kot vâl,
a v nalêtu pod zvêzdami vâl je obstâl...
Takô stírmí zdaj srèdi višîne
okamenêli zanôs domovîne:
blesté se v dâljàvi razdítî grebèni,
nad njîmi, glèj, zvêzde, čujêčni plamèni:
ko spî náša zémlja, le ône nad njô
skrbé z menôj, beðé nad nočjó...
In glèj: planîne in zvêzde gredô z menôj,
vse drûgo gubí se za mâno v pokôj.

Z menôj, ve zvêzde, z menôj, ve planîne!
Razšíri, raztègni se, krôg domovîne,
razpni se kot môrje
v brezbrèžno obzôrje,
dôm môj!

Kâmor stôpi mi nôga—na tvôjih sem tlêh...
kâmor nése me jádro—na tvôjih valêh...
kâmor hôče srcè—pri svôjih ljudêh...

Kâm, mîsel? Stôj!

Pošábstno sopihajôč
kot démon vlâk z menôj grè v nôč,
in šè dânes v túji sílavi
nèznânca me túja zârja pozdrâvi...